

# PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY



*(Thierens Family Archives)*

## WAR DIARIES 1914 -1919

**Transcribed by Michael Thierens, 1914, 1915 and part of 1916 proofread and commented on by Donna Walker & Ross Toms. The complete War Diary was proofread by Stephen K. Newman, who also made valuable suggestions regarding lay-out and provided much additional information on individual soldiers and diligently researched and pin pointed the locations of the Regiment.**

[CEFStudies@EeMike.nl](mailto:CEFStudies@EeMike.nl)

© Michael Thierens 2008.

### Introduction

The P.P.C.L.I. was an unique regiment in that it was raised and financed by business man A. Hamilton Gault in August 1914 and saw action in France under British command from January 1915 onwards. It was the first Canadian regiment in the field, even though initially only 10 % of the men was Canadian born.

More than 5.000 men served with the regiment in France and Flanders, 1300 never returned to Canada.

In November 1915 the P.P.C.L.I., together with the Royal Canadian Regiment and the 42nd and 49th Canadian Infantry Battalions, became part of the 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade, 3rd Canadian Division.

This War Diary has been transcribed in order that military and family historians and future generations can study the history of the regiment. To preserve the historical significance of these documents, typographical errors in the original documents have been maintained.

Square brackets [ ] surround information using *italics* added by the transcriber where it was felt that clarification was required, or where names and/or service numbers were misspelled. Question marks ? were used where the characters/words could not be discerned. Where possible, the formats of the appendices have been kept as close to the original as possible.

Special thanks go to Stephen K. Newman (former P.P.C.L.I. Regimental Adjutant) for proofreading the whole War Diary and checking and adding the names of the places where the P.P.C.L.I. was based throughout the war. Also, for correcting mistakes made by the diarists in the spelling of individual names and service numbers plus for adding a lot of service numbers which weren't mentioned in the text.

Many abbreviations are used in the War Diaries. Quite a few have been typed out in full between brackets and using *italics*. Not all though. The reader can look up any abbreviation used in this transcription at the CEF Study Group [Acronyms & Abbreviations](#).

The original documents were downloaded from the web site of the [Library and Archives Canada](#).

Canada: Stephen K. Newman  
Holland: Michael Thierens

# 1914

## **Wed, Nov 4, 1914 BUSTARD CAMP, SALISBURY PLAIN, ENGLAND**

BUSTARD CAMP SALISBURY PLAIN. 4.11.14. Inspection of Battalion with rest of Canadian Contingent by H M The KING accompanied by H.M. The Queen, Lord ROBERTS, Lord KITCHENER.

## **Thu, Nov 5 to**

## **Fri Nov 13, 1914 BUSTARD CAMP, SALISBURY PLAIN, ENGLAND**

5.11.14 to 13.11.14. Bn at Field Training, musketry, digging trenches, route-marching etc.

## **Sat, Nov 14, 1914 BUSTARD CAMP, SALISBURY PLAIN, ENGLAND**

14.11.14. Orders received for Bn to move to WINCHESTER

## **Sun, Nov 15, 1914 BUSTARD CAMP, SALISBURY PLAIN, ENGLAND**

15.11.14. Advanced party under Lieutenants [*F.*] FITZGERALD and [*M.S.*] DE BAY moved to WINCHESTER.

**Mon, Nov 16, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 16.11.14. Bn moved to WINCHESTER in 3 trains and camped at MORN HILL.

**Fri, Nov 20, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 20.11.14. Bn joined 80th Bde Expeditionary Force: other Bns 2<sup>nd</sup> Bn Shropshire L.I. 3rd & 4th Bns K.R.R.C. & 4TH Bn R.B. under Brig. Gen. Hon. C.G. FORTESCUE. C.B. C.M.G. D.S.O.

**Wed, Nov 18, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 18.11.14. Orders to hold Bn in readiness to entrain at 2 hours notice.

**Sun, Nov 22, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 22.11.14. Emergency duty ready to entrain at 4 ½ hrs notice from 6 pm until 6 pm 23.11.14.

N.B. Essential that preserved rations, biscuit etc should be issued to Battalions on mobilisation & held by them ready for a move: none could be issued at WINCHESTER so it was necessary to purchase in order to have one days rations in case of a move.

**Wed, Nov 25, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

25.11.14. Battalion inspected by Major Gen D'O SNOW. Commdg 27th Divn. accompanied by Brig Gen HON. C.G. FORTESCUE Commdg 80th Brigade.  
Bn on Emergency Duty ready to move at 8½ hours notice.

**Sat, Nov 28, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

28.11.14. Bn on Emergency Duty ready to move at 8 ½ hours notice until 6 pm 29<sup>th</sup>.

**Sun, Nov 29, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

29.11.14. Bn commenced Musketry Course. Selected practices Table B.

**Tue, Dec 1, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 1.12.14. Bn on Emergency duty from 6 p.m. until 2.12.14

**Fri, Dec 4, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 4.12.14. Bn took part in Brigade Route march. Very wet.

Bn on Emergency duty till 6 p.m. 5.12.14

One or two Coys at musketry daily firing a Course with LEE ENFIELD Rifles issued to the Bn in place of the ROSS RIFLE

**Mon, Dec 7, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 7.12.14. Bn on Emergency Duty till 6 pm 8.12.14.

**Tue, Dec 8, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 8.12.14. 80<sup>th</sup> Infy Bde route march via HOSPITAL – CHURCH – TELEGRAPH HILL – LANE END DOWN – X roads ½ mi. N. of WHITE FLOOD Fm – MORESTEAD – BAREND – CAMP.

**Thu, Dec 10, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 10.11.14. Battalion was practised in loading Baggage Wagons.

**Tue, Dec 15, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 15.12.14. Divisional Route March. ITCHEN STOKE – ITCHEN ABBAS – WINCHESTER.

Owing to both men and wagons being short of establishment, there were many wide gaps.

**Wed, Dec 16, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 16.12.14. Eightieth Brigade affiliated to following units:

1<sup>st</sup> Brigade R.F.A.

1<sup>st</sup> Wessex Co. R.E.

83<sup>rd</sup> Field Ambulance.

27<sup>th</sup> Division accompanied by H.M. The King, accompanied by Lord Kitchener on FAWLEY DOWN. Weather fine.

His Majesty walked down the line and the Division subsequently defiled past him in Column of route.

**Sun, Dec 20, 1914 MORN HILL CAMP, WINCHESTER, ENGLAND**

WINCHESTER 21.12.14. '80' Brigade left Winchester for Southampton by road. The Battalion which was the third battalion on the line of march, followed the SHROPSHIRE L.I. & left the starting point at the Camp Gate at 10.19, reaching SOUTHAMPTON DOCKS at 4.40 p.m. (1 hour late, due to checking caused by indifferent transport in front of us).

Battalion embarked from Berth 46 on CARDIGANSHIRE, which already contained the 99<sup>th</sup> Battery R.F.A. (Major ANDERSON). Embarkation took about 1 ¾ hours and ship left at 7 p.m. Weather fine.

Appendix I (Marching out State)

**Mon, Dec 21, 1914 CROSSING ENGLISH CHANNEL**

S.S. CARDIGANSHIRE, 21.XII.14. en route from Southampton to HAVRE. Arrived off HAVRE 5 a.m. Came into dock 1.25 p.m. Commenced disembarkation 2 p.m.

Battalion marched off 3 p.m. to No 2 camp, where it arrived at 5.30 p.m.

Transport arrived at 8.15 p.m. Showery weather.

**Tue, Dec 22, 1914 HAVRE, FRANCE**

22.XII.14 HAVRE Battalion Route March from 10.30 a.m. to 12.45 p.m. Completed equipment from Ordnance Ration parties left camp at 4.40 p.m. Remainder of Battalion at 5.40 p.m. Reached point 3, GARE DES MARCHANDISES at 7 p.m. Men in tearing spirits. The whole Battalion had to entrain in one train of 48 trucks. Officers 1, Men 24, Horses 10, VEHICLES 13. Very tight fit, some of the men being unable to sit down. Fatigue parties worked very well. Battalion left at schedule time 11.19 p.m. Showery.  
Appendix II. Orders for railway journey.

### **Wed., Dec 23, 1914 TROOP TRAIN HAVRE TO ST OMER, FRANCE**

23.XII.14 On train en route to St. OMER. Reached ABBEVILLE 12.30 p.m. Journey would have been much easier if we had been informed where halts were to be made and for how long.

Reached St OMER 8.50 p.m. Received orders to proceed to ARQUES and to detrain there. Reached ARQUES at 9.40 p.m. Detrainment completed by 12.30 a.m. (24<sup>th</sup>)

The tracks for the vehicles were very bad & greatly retarded both the entrainment and detrainment of the Battalion.

### **Thu, Dec 24, 1914 ARQUES, FRANCE**

24.XII.14 BLARINGHEM. The Guide provided by the R.T.O. confessed after he had gone some miles that he had never been to BLARINGHEM. In consequence it took until 3 a.m. to cover the 7 miles to that village. On arrival at Brigade Headquarters was informed that we were to billet along a stretch of 2 miles, down the road we had come along. The transport pulled off into nearest field & the troops were gradually billeted the last being got in about 6 a.m. Very trying night after trying day.

Fine, cold.

### **Fri, Dec 25, 1914 BLARINGHEM, FRANCE**

25.XII.14 BLARINGHEM. Spent morning overhauling packing of transport. Unluckily Christmas comforts not available. Very fine in morning, then misty, cold, frost.

### **Tue, Dec 29, to Thu, Dec 31, 1914 BLARINGHEM, FRANCE**

29.12.14 to 31.12.14 BLARINGHEM. Bn employed with remainder of 80<sup>th</sup> Brigade in entrenching a fire position with support position 200 yds in rear extending from MT CROQUET ¾ MILE N.E. of BLARINGHEM through LA BELLE HOTESSE to STEENBECQUE. Weather wet.

Grounds waterlogged & draining of trenches very difficult.

### **Tue, Dec 29, 1914 BLARINGHEM, FRANCE**

29.12.14 Major [A.H.] Gault, Capt. [C.F.] SMITH & 2 N.C.O.s. went up to trenches of 3<sup>rd</sup> Division at KEMMEL. 24 hours in trenches to learn method of reliefs & gain experience: valuable hints and information gained.

*[Note transcriber: during November & December 1914 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel F.D. Farquhar, D.S.O.]*

## Appendix I

Copy

Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry  
Marching Out StateWinchester  
20-12-14

Officers-----	27
Other Ranks-----	956
Vehicles-----	25
Horses-----	82
Motor bicycles-----	2
Bicycles-----	10

Lt. Colonel  
Commanding P.P.C.L.I.

-----

## Appendix II

Copy

O.C. – P.P.C.L.I.

1. Please note that the Battalion  
Under your command will entrain  
As detailed in para. 4 below
  
4. Place of entrainment-Gare des Marchandises  
Time 7 p.m.  
Date – 22<sup>nd</sup> December, 1914.

Issued at Havre,  
21-12-14.

(Sd.) T.C. Browne,  
Major,

D.A.Q.M.S.-Havre Base.

-----

Copy

Princess Patricia's Canadian  
Light Infantry

<u>Place</u>	<u>Time due in</u>	<u>Time due out</u>
Havre	23-12-14	23 - 19
Rouen	3.01	4.25
Sergueux	6.48	6.53
Abbeville	12.52	

Havre  
22-12-1914

(Signed) C. E. Birmen  
Capt.  
D. A. D. R. T.

-----

# PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY



*(Thierens Family Archives)*

## **WAR DIARIES 1914 -1919**

Transcribed by Michael Thierens, 1914, 1915 and part of 1916 proofread and commented on by Donna Walker & Ross Toms. The complete War Diary was proofread by Stephen K. Newman, who also made valuable suggestions regarding lay-out and provided much additional information on individual soldiers and diligently researched and pin pointed the locations of the Regiment.

[CEFStudies@EeMike.nl](mailto:CEFStudies@EeMike.nl)

© Michael Thierens 2008.

# 1915

**Fri, Jan 1, 1915 BLARINGHEM, FRANCE**

1.1.15 BLARINGHEM Brigade inspected by Field Marshal Sir JOHN FRENCH Commander-in-Chief. Sir John said few words to the men. Very wet.

**St, Jan 2, 1915 BLARINGHEM, FRANCE**

2.1.15 C O & Adjutant went up to trenches of 3<sup>rd</sup> Division at KEMMEL for 24 hours duty in trenches. Attached to ROYAL FUSILIERS.

**Fri, Jan 1, 1915 to Sun, Jan 3, 1915 BLARINGHEM, FRANCE**

1.1.15 to 3.1.15 BLARINGHEM Bn employed on the entrenched position being constructed at BLARINGHEM.

**Mon, Jan 4, 1915**

*[Note transcriber: there is no entry for Jan 4, 1915]*

**Tue, Jan 5, 1915 BLARINGHEM, FRANCE**

5.1.15. Marched from BLARINGHEM to METEREN via HAZEBROUCH-SYLVESTRE-CAESTRE and FLETRE. Bn formed the Brigade Advanced Guard. Bn much handicapped from want of boots.

(Appendix III: Orders for March.)

**Wed, Jan 6, 1915 METEREN, FRANCE**

6.1.15. Marched from METEREN to DICKIEBUSH [*DICKEBUSCH*] via BAILLEUL, and LOCRE. Lack of boots much felt many men marching with no soles at all to their boots.

(Appendix IV: Orders for March)

**DICKIEBUSH**

2.30 pm

Arrived DICKIEBUSH and rested till 5 pm. At 4 pm Major HAMILTON [*A.H.*] GAULT returned to Bn with general instructions with regard to taking over the trenches from the 53<sup>rd</sup> French Regt. 63<sup>rd</sup> Brigade 32<sup>nd</sup> Division. Bn marched from X roads ½ mi. S.W. of DICKIEBUSH via DICKIEBUSH to road junction ¼ mi. N.W. of VIERSTRAAT.

When the Right Half Bn under Major GAULT took over the 2 sections on the right. The Left Half Bn marched to LA BRASSERIE & took over the remaining 2 sections. Time was lost owing to no guides having been provided by the French: Taking over completed at midnight without incident: Line held by the Bn extended 1150 yds as per attached sketch. Trenches were found to be in a very waterlogged condition: no brasiers & few dug outs: distance from GERMAN LINE 40 yds on our LEFT, 200 yds on our RIGHT. Work of bringing up ammunition to scale of 250 rds per rifle as well as rations continuing till 3 a.m. 7.1.15.

Appendix V SKETCH.

**Thu, Jan 7, 1915 VIERSTRAAT & LA BRASSERIE, BELGIUM**

7.1.15 DICKIEBUSH Enemy shelled trenches with shrapnel & H.E. at 9 am 1 pm & 4 pm. [Report for day attached} Casualties 3 slight.

Appendix VI: Daily Report.

**Fri, Jan 8, 1915 VIERSTRAAT & LA BRASSERIE, BELGIUM**

8.1.15. DICKIEBUSH. No 4 Coy shelled heavily during early morning. Casualties Captain D.O.C. Newton and 5 men wounded: 2 men killed. (\*)Relieved in trenches by 3<sup>rd</sup> Bn K.R.R. Nos. 3 & 2 Coys returned to billets in DICKEBUSCH. No 1 to a position in support at VIERSTRAAT, No 4 ditto at LA BRASSERIE. Reliefs completed 1.30 am 10.1.15. Very wet.  
Appendix VII: Daily report

(\*) 252 Corpl W. Fry [[N. Fry](#)]

1284 Lance/Cpl H O BELLINGER [[1264](#), *H.G. Bellinger*]

**Sa, Jan 9, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, VIERSTRAAT & LA BRASSERIE, BELGIUM**

9.1.15. Captain Newton died of wounds. Party of Officers & NCOs 81<sup>st</sup> Bde reported to inspect trenches previous to their occupying them. 2 R.E. officers accompanied them.  
2 Coys in support First Day. Nothing of note.

**Sun, Jan 10, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, VIERSTRAAT & LA BRASSERIE, BELGIUM**

10.1.15. Second day in Support. Nothing of note to report. No 1 Coy hunted a sniper from tower near VIERSTRAAT.

**Mon, Jan 11, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, VIERSTRAAT & LA BRASSERIE, BELGIUM**

11.1.15. Third day in Support. Heavy shelling by enemy: 2 or 3 shells through No 1 billet. Relieved at 10 p.m. by HQ & 2 Coys Royal Irish Regt. Marched independently to WESTOUTRE to billets. Arrived 2.30 am. 12.1.15.

**Tue, Jan 12, 1915 WESTOUTRE, BELGIUM**

12.1.15. WESTOUTRE Day of rest

**Wed, Jan 13, 1915 WESTOUTRE, BELGIUM**

13.1.15. Marched 3 p.m. to DICKIEBUSCH. Went into billets at MILLE KRUISSE. Bn in support.

**Thu, Jan 14, 1915 MILLE KRUISE, BELGIUM**

14.1.15. Marched at 5 p.m. and relieved 4<sup>th</sup> Bn K.R.R.C. in close support. No 4 Coy at CHATEAU at KRUISETRAATHOEK. H.Q. No 2 and 3 Coys at ELZONWALLE. (*ELZENWALLE*) No 1 Coy at LA BRASSERIE Relief completed about 8 p.m. Searched Chateau at ELZONWALLE for spies without result.

**Fri, Jan 15, 1915 KRUISSTRAATHOEK, LA BRASSERIE & ELZENWALLE, BELGIUM**

ELZONWALLE pretty heavily shelled during the day. 1 man hit on shin by splinter. Marched at 6 pm and relieved 4<sup>th</sup> K.R.R. in trenches at ST ELOI. Projected attack on GERMAN sap head by parties from both Battalions: postponed. Relief completed about midnight.

**Sat, Jan 16, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

16.1.15. Trenches in bad order, parapets not bullet proof and few loopholes. Relieved by ARGYLL & SUTHERLAND HIGHLANDERS. Relief completed about 10 p.m. Casualties Killed 2 [ No 658 Pte N McLEOD and No 858 Private H. McNISH] [[J. McNish](#)] Wounded 4 [Pte THORBURN serious the other 3 slight] Marched to billets at MILLE KRUISSE.  
Appendix VIII: Sketch of trenches

**Sun, Jan 17, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

17.1.15. Relieved at MILLE KRUISSE by Royal Scots; marched to billets at WESTOUTRE; settled in billets by 9 p.m.

**Mon, Jan, 18 to Sat, Jan 23, 1915 WESTOUTRE, BELGIUM**

WESTOUTRE 18.1.15 TO 23.1.15. In billets at WESTOUTRE.

**Sat, Jan 23, 1915 WESTOUTRE, BELGIUM**

23.1.15. 4.30 pm. Marched to DICKIEBUSH and billeted.

**Sun, Jan 24, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

24.1.15. Marched to VOORMEZELE (VOORMEZEELLE) and took over trenches at ST ELOI Section C 3 to C 10 from LEINSTER Regt. Heavy fire against C9 during relief. Casualties Killed Lieut. C.H. PRICE and Lce Cpl PEPLER Wounded four. Trench mortar in rear C 6 exploded causing further casualties four wounded. Three officers from 28<sup>th</sup> Division visited trench C 9 during the night. Weather fine: clear bright night; relieving difficult.

**Mon, Jan 25, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

25.1.15. Mound near C 8 occupied by Battn heavily shelled during morning; Snipers accounted for 17 Germans. Commenced dig redoubt immediately East of St ELOI. Casualties 4 wounded.

**Tue, Jan 26, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

26.1.15. Generally quiet along front. Relieved at night by Royal Irish Regt. Weather fine & cold clear night. Casualties Killed Captain F.G. FITZGERALD 730 Private A MEIKLEJOHN [[J. Meiklejohn](#)] 1173 Private A. NICHOLSON 1740 Private MURPHY 1552 Private CROOK. Wounded Lieut. STANLEY JONES and five others. Marched to DICKIE-BUSH and billeted.  
Appendix IX Report on ST ELOI Section.

**Wed, Jan 27, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**  
DICKIEBUSH 27.1.15. In billets at DICKIEBUSH.

**Thu, Jan 28, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**  
28.1.15. 5 30 pm. Marched to relieve ARGYLL & SUTHERLANDS in support. Nos 1 & 2 Coys in close support at ST ELOI. No 3 at BRASSERIE No 4 at chateau KRUIS-TRAATHOEK. HQ at ELZONWALLE.

**Fri, Jan 29, 1915 ST ELOI, KRUISSTRAATHOEK, LA BRASSERIE & ELZENWALLE, BELGIUM**  
ELZONWALLE 29.1.15. No 4 moved to join HQ at ELZONWALLE. About midnight heavy firing heard on left of ST ELOI section. HQ Nos 3 & 4 Coys & 2 Coys A & S Highlanders turned out & marched under CO. (Lt Col. FARQUHAR) to VOORMEZELE. All quiet & returned to ELZONWALLE.

**Sat, Jan 30, 1915 ST ELOI, LA BRASSERIE & ELZENWALLE, BELGIUM**  
6 p.m. 30.1.15. Marched to ST ELOI and relieved 4<sup>th</sup> Bn K.R.R. being relieved at ELZONWALLE by A & S Highlanders.

**Sun, Jan 31, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**  
31.1.15. Relieved at ST ELOI by 3<sup>rd</sup> Bn K.R.R. & by K.S.L.I. Returned to billets at DICKEBUSH. All quiet along the line.

*[Note transcriber: during January 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel F.D. Farquhar, D.S.O.]*

### **Appendix III**

OPERATION ORDER No. 1

By

Brigadier-General Hon. C.G. Fortescue C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.  
Commanding 80th Brigade Area.

4th January, 1915.

Reference HAZEBROUCK Map  
1/100000

1. The troops as mentioned below will march to-morrow to the area  
METEREN – CAESTRE – BORRE – MERRIS – where they will billet.

(a) The 27th Divisional Cyclist Company will march to METEREN  
independently and must be clear of HAZEBROUCK by 10.45 a.m.

(b) 1st Column.

Advance Guard. Commander Lt. Col. Farquhar P.P.C.L.I.  
1<sup>st</sup> Wessex Field Co. R.E.  
P.P.C.L.I.

Main body in order of march.

Brigade Headquarters.  
4th Bn. Rifle Brigade.  
3rd K.R.R.C.  
4th K.R.R.C.  
83rd Field Ambulance.  
96 Company A.S.C.

This column will march via SERCUS – HAZEBROUCK - LE BREARDE -  
CAESTRE – FLETTRE (FLETRE) – METEREN.

Starting Point road junction immediately N. of T in LE CROQUET,  
to be passed by head of main body at 9.30 a.m.

Units of this column will be billeted as follows –

Brigade Headquarters. )  
27th Divisional Cyclist Coy. )  
Wessex Field Co. R.E. ) at METEREN.  
P.P.C.L.I. )  
4th Bn Rifle Brigade. )

3rd K.R.R.C. at FLETTRE.

4th K.R.R.C. at CAESTRE.

83rd Field Amb. )  
96 Coy. A.S.C. ) at STRAZEELE.

The 83rd Field Ambulance and 96 Coy. A.S.C. will leave the column at HAZEBROUCK and  
march direct to STRAZEELE.

(c) 2nd Column.

Commander Lt. Col. Briegford, 2nd K.S.L.I.  
1st Brigade R.F.A.  
2nd K.S.L.I.

This column will march via STEENBEQUE – HAZEBROUCK – PRADELLES

to STRAZEELES.

Starting Point cross roads ¼ mile N.E. of last B in STEENBEQUE  
to be passed by head of main body at 10 a.m.

The units of this column will be billeted as follows.

2nd K.S.L.I.	at STRAZEELE.
1st Brigade R.F.A (less Amun.Column)	at PRADELLES.
1st Brigade Amun. Column.	At BORRE.

2. Baggage and blanket wagons will follow own units.  
Supply wagons immediately after refilling will follow the column and will be distributed to the billeting areas under the orders of the Brigade Supply Officer.
3. Reports to head of main body.

[Signed] *R. Stewart* Major,  
Brigade Major, 80th Inf. Brigade.

Copy No.1 Brigadier General Commanding,

2 Brigade Major.

3 Staff Captain.

4 War Diary file.

5 2nd K.S.L.I.

6 3rd K.R.R.C.

7 4th K.R.R.C.

8 4th Rifle Brigade.

9 P.P.C.L.I.

[Inserted: Issued by orderly at 6.30 pm]

10 1st Wessex Field Co. R.E.

11 83rd Field Ambulance.

12 96 Coy. A.S.C.

13 1st Brigade R.F.A.

-----  
Appendix IV

Copy No. 7.

Operation Order No 2.

By Brig-Gen'l. The Hon C.G. Fortescue CB., CMG., D S.O.

5<sup>th</sup> January 1915.

Reference HAZEBROUCK map 1/100000.

1. The troops as mentioned below will march tomorrow to a road junction  $\frac{1}{2}$  mile S E of E in DICKEBUSCH.

(a) 1<sup>st</sup> Column

Advance Guard Commander Maj. I. Harring R. Bde

2 Corp 4<sup>th</sup> Bn Rifle Brigade

Main body in order of march

Brigade Hd Qtrs

4<sup>th</sup> Bn rifle Bde less 2 Coys

P.P.C.L.I. less 1 Coy

1<sup>st</sup> WESSEX Field Coy R.E.

Rear Guard. of 1 Coy P.P.C.L.I.

Comdt. to be detailed by O.C. P.P.C.L.I.

This Column will march via BAILLEUL –LOCRE –

LA CLYTTE – Starting Point, road junction of

uncoloured road with main BAILLEUL road 7

furlongs East of METEREN – 10.30 A.M.

(Sgd) J.T. McCall Staff Capt.

for Bde Major. 80<sup>th</sup> Inf. Bde.

-----

Appendix IV.

P.P.C.L.I. Copy No 7

Operation Order No 2

by Br Genl. The Hon. C.G. Fortescue CB., CM.G., DSO

5th January 1915

Ref. HAZEBROUCK Map 1/100000.

1. The troops as mentioned below will march tomorrow to the road junction  $\frac{1}{2}$  mile S.E. of E in DICKEBUSCH.

(a) 1<sup>st</sup> Column

Advanced Guard Comdr. Maj. J. Harrington R. Bde

2 Coys 4<sup>th</sup> Bn Rifle Brigade

Main body in order of march

Brigade Hd Qrs

4<sup>th</sup> Bn R.B. less 2 Coys

P.P.C.L.I. less 1 Coy

1<sup>st</sup> WESSEX Fd. Coy. R.E.

Rear guard of 1 Coy P.P.C.L.I.



## Appendix V

SKETCH showing trenches occupied by P.P.C.L.I. from night 6<sup>th</sup>/7<sup>th</sup> Jan. '15 to night 8<sup>th</sup> 9<sup>th</sup>

[Sketch 1](#) & [Sketch 2](#).

---

## Appendix VI

Brigade Major  
80<sup>th</sup> Brigade

P 8 – Just returned from inspecting trenches – all men are over their ankles in water. Some up to their knees all cheerful AAA Draining impossible until rain stops as ground completely flooded AAA ENEMY shelled trenches with shrapnel and H.E. about 9 a.m. 1 p.m. & 4 p.m. fire heavy in places Sixty three Jack Johnsons in one section AAA CASUALTIES THREE all slight shrapnel wounds AAA Machine guns both damaged by direct hit AAA 12 men in right section not accounted for they were counted in trench and are believed to have followed French as they marched out AAA. Relief yesterday difficult as guides supposed to be provided were not forthcoming. French evacuated one trench NORTH of VOORMEZELLE –ST. ELOI road before being relieved by Rifle Brigade-I occupied it temporarily to avoid gap in line but should be grateful if detachment could be relieved there AAA Consider it advisable for R.E. officer to inspect trenches with view to draining AAA PUMPS bailers & TUBS urgently required AAA HOPE TELEPHONE will THROUGH TO MY HEADQUARTERS TONIGHT IMPORTANT TO COMPLETE IT TO TRENCHES AAA

R.A. officer could OBSERVE with advantage from my Headquarters AAA Names of casualties S.S. JACOBS No. 1058 C. BIRT No. 1361 R. MAGEE [[528 R.H. Magee](#)].

FROM O.C. P.P.C.L.I.  
PLACE BOIS CHARRE (*CARRE*)  
TIME 10. p.m.

---

See also **MESSAGES AND SIGNALS** [e001072363](#), [e001072364](#) & [e001072365](#).

---



## Appendix VIII.

[Hyperlink](#) & [hyperlink](#).Appendix - IX.

After Careful consideration Think The NIGHT Garrison ST ELOI should be not less than five hundred men disposed as follows two hundred and forty fire trenches one hundred and ten for counterattack, one hundred holding new redoubt and long fire trench running S.W. from Voormezele – St. Eloi road fifty in trenches or redoubt to be dug between roads N. of ST. Eloi AAA In addition two hundred men to be moved to Voormezele at night AAA By day the hundred and fifty men occupying new trenches and redoubts could be kept in Voormezelle which would be sufficient as garrison for that place AAA The SAP HEAD opposite No. 9 trench is supported by 3 successive lines of trenches all said to be occupied the nearest being within 20 yards of sap head AAA This makes it impossible to rush sap head without also taking trenches Solution appears to be either to take these trenches or to guide German attack into channel favouring heavy counter from us preferably from our left flank in neighbourhood C 11 AAA Will take O.C. Leinsters carefully over ground on his arrival here to-night and will advise him to bring the 200 men of Voormezele night garrison to ST ELOI during the nights of 26/27 and 27/28.

-----  
 See also **MESSAGES AND SIGNALS** [e001072375](#), [e001072376](#) & [e001072377](#).

**Mon, Feb 1, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKIEBUSH 1.2.15. Battalion in billets. In evening visited the trenches held by the French Regt. on left of 27<sup>th</sup> Divn. trenches.

**Tue, Feb 2, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

2.2.15. In billets. Again visited same trenches now occupied by YORK & LANCASTER Regt. who had taken them over from the French

**Wed, Feb 3, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

3.2.15. Marched to ST ELOI & took over trenches from York & Lancaster Regt Section D. HQ at SHELLY (*SHELLEY*) FARM.

Appendix X Sketch & report

**Thu, Feb 4, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

SHELLEY FARM 4.2.15. Line pretty quiet by day though some excitement by night.  
6.53 pm.

Report that enemy had broken through 28<sup>th</sup> Divn. line N. of CANAL Square I 34 c & all reliefs postponed.

Appendix XI. General report.

**Fri, Feb 5, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

5.2.15. Relieved by Leinster Regt. after quiet day except for fairly heavy shelling of No. 2 Coy in trenches D1 & D2 by German trench mortar. Lieut. Sullivan (*H.E. Sullivan*) wounded.

Marched to DICKIEBUSH (*DICKEBUSCH*) into huts arriving about midnight.

**Sat, Feb 6, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

HEKSKEN 6.2.15. 2.45 pm

Marched to billets at HEKSKEN. Weather fine.

**Sun, Feb 7, 1915 HEKSKEN, BELGIUM**

7.2.15. In billets. H.R.H. The Prince of Wales visited the Battalion.

**Mon, Feb 8, 1915 HEKSKEN, BELGIUM**

8.2.15. In billets. Total casualties to date. Officers. Killed 3 Wounded 2 Other Ranks Killed 20 Wounded 30 [Total Killed. 23 WOUNDED 32].

**Tue, Feb 9, 1915 HEKSKEN, BELGIUM**

HEKSKEN 9.2.15. In billets. Very fine.

**Wed, Feb 10, 1915 HEKSKEN, BELGIUM**

HEKSKEN 10.2.15. In billets. Very fine. H.R.H. Prince Arthur of Connaught visited the Battalion.

**Thu, Feb 11, 1915 HEKSKEN, BELGIUM**

11.2.15. 4 p.m.

Marched to DICKIEBUSH (*DICKEBUSCH*) and went into huts.

**Fri, Feb 12, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

12.2.15. Marched at 6.30 pm. and took over trenches 1 to 6. S1 S2 S3 from 4<sup>th</sup> K.R.R. H.Q. at BRASSERIE. Lieut MINCHIN & 20 men returned from ROUEN.

**Sat, Feb 13, 1915 LA BRASSERIE, BELGIUM**

13.2.15. In trenches all quiet.

**Sun, Feb 14, 1915 LA BRASSERIE, BELGIUM**

14.2.15. 5.45. pm.

Report that Germans had taken trenches 19.20.21 at St. ELOI. Relief postponed. Very dark night cold & wet. About 9 pm. outbreak of Enemy's fire opposite Nos 2 & 3 trenches.

**Mon, Feb 15, 1915 LA BRASSERIE, BELGIUM**

15.2.15. 4 am.

Counterattack on 19. 20. 21. successful. 3<sup>rd</sup> Bn K.R.R. took prominent part. Very wet & cold. All quiet during day except at noon when enemy shelled trench 6 killing 2 men & wounding 2.

Killed Pte. Palmer (*H. 871*) }  
 ,, Clayton (*A.G. 1800*) } M. Gun detachment

6.30 pm.

Relieved by 4<sup>th</sup> Bn. K.R.R. & by 1 Coy 3<sup>rd</sup> K.R.R. at VIERSRAAT. (*VIERSTRAAT*) Marched to billets in DICKEBUSH. (*DICKEBUSCH*)

**Tue, Feb 16, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKEBUSH 16.2.15. In billets. Very fine.

**Wed, Feb 17, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

12 noon. 17.2.15.

Report that 28<sup>th</sup> Division had lost trenches. Regiment ready to move at short notice. Very wet & cold. Marched at 5.30 pm. and relieved 4<sup>th</sup> K.R.R. trenches as on 12<sup>th</sup>.

**Thu, Feb 18, 1915 LA BRASSERIE, BELGIUM**

18.2.15. Enemy shelled BRASSERIE at 3 p.m. Killed one man and wounded three: otherwise all quiet. Cold wind.

Killed Pte. MURDOCK ([\*Murdoch J. 697\*](#))

**Fri, Feb 19, 1915 DICKEBUSH, BELGIUM**

19.2.15. Enemy shelled BRASSERIE at 3 pm. No casualties. All quiet along line. 1 man killed and 1 wounded. Cold wind. Relieved at 10 pm by 3<sup>rd</sup> K.R.R. and by 1 Coy 4<sup>th</sup> KRR at VIER-STRAAT. Bn. Returned to DICKEBUSH. Same billets as on 15<sup>th</sup>.

Killed Pte. CAMERON (A.F. 1163)

**Sat, Feb 20, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKEBUSH 20.2.15. In billets. Fine but wet afternoon.

**Sun, Feb 21, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

10 a.m. 21.2.15.

Marched to rest billets at WESTOUTRE.

**Mon, Feb 22, 1915 WESTOUTRE, BELGIUM**

WESTOUTRE 22.2.15. In billets. Captain A.ADAMSON. Lieut. (*E.O.C.*) MARTIN and draft of .111 others joined the Bn. Lieut WILMOT [[F.L. Eardley-Wilmot](#)] & 5 rejoined from Hospital.

Appendix XII: Extract from Sir J. French's dispatch & telegram from Sir J. F. to Prime Minister Canada.

**Tue, Feb 23 to Thu. 25, 1915 WESTOUTRE, BELGIUM**

WESTOUTRE 23.2.15. In billets at ~~HEKSKEN~~ WESTOUTRE

**Fri, Feb 26, 1915 WESTOUTRE, BELGIUM**

4.30 pm. 26.2.15.

Marched to billets in the huts at DICKIEBUSH.

Appendix XII.A.: Defences of VOORMEZELE

**Sat, Feb 27, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

27.2.15. Very cold boisterous weather & wind. Marched at 6.30 and relieve Argyll & Sutherland Highlanders in St ELOI Section trenches 19 to 22. S 14 & 15.

**Sun, Feb 28, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

4.30 a.m. 28.2.15.

No 4 Coy together with Snipers & bomb throwers (under (*T.M.*) Lieut PAPINEAU) attacked & captured German Sap opposite trench 21. Lieut. (*C.E.*) CRABBE led the attack. The Sap was demolished & the trench parapet knocked in. The coy withdrew at daybreak. Lieut. (*W.G.*) COLQUHOUN who had previously gone out to make reconnaissance never returned. Casualties. 1 officer missing (\*) 2 officers wounded (∅). Other ranks 5 killed 7 wounded. 2 missing. Appendix XIII: Sketch of German trenches near ST ELOI, Appendix XIV: Short account of operation. & Appendix XV: Telegrams of Congratulation

(\*) Lieut. COLQUHOUN

(∅) Major HAMILTON GAULT

Lieut. CRABBE

[Note transcriber: during February 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel F.D. Farquhar, D.S.O.]

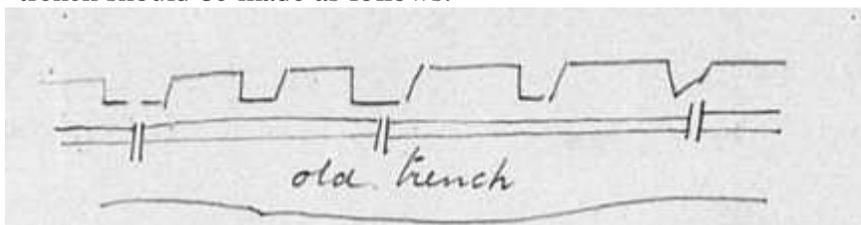
## Appendix X: NEW AREA E of St ELOI

### [Hyperlink.](#)

#### Report on New Area East of ST ELOI.

#### 4.2.15

- General. 1). The trenches were numbered as shown on the sketch before the ground had been seen. As a matter of fact the trenches were in 3 groups 1) A.. 2) B. 3) C and E. D & F. being support trenches and G Dugouts.
- Peculiarities 2)(a) The 3 fire trenches are not homogeneous but consist of a number of embrasures more or less connected by trench. In certain cases it is impossible to go from one embrasure to another without getting out of the trench  
 (b.) There are far too many dugouts, many of them against the parapet, which greatly weakens fire from the trench.  
 ( c.) The general trace makes it necessary to take strenuous precautions to prevent one trench firing into another.  
 ( d.) With the exception of A. they are easy to get into, but the communication trench should be improved..  
 ( e).The enemys line is more distant than in other Sectors ranging from 50 yds on the right to 200 yds on the left (EICKHOF FARM).
- 3). Trench A. wet. Wet. Very unsanitary: parapet either too thin or fallen away. A good deal was done to remedy the parapet and to drain the trench on the night of 3<sup>rd</sup> /4<sup>th</sup> .  
 An R.E. pump has been left there to continue the work. It is suggested that a new trench should be made as follows:



With a view to this, four saps were begun on 3<sup>rd</sup> / 4<sup>th</sup> & it is strongly urged that they be continued and that a trench 2 ft 6 deep with a sandbag & earth parapet 2' high be constructed.

An old French communication trench runs parallel to and 30 yards from the right of A.

This is believed to be used by the Germans as a listening post & should be occupied by our snipers.

Work to be done. 1) New trench 2). Communication trench 3). Draining

- 4). Trench B. Most of the Dugouts have been torn down & proper sandbag headcover & loopholes made. This should be carried on & communication improved both laterally & from front to rear.
- 5). Trench C. As in B. Some draining is also required and traverses should be constructed across dangerous gaps.
- 6.) Dug Outs Many of the trench dug outs round the Farm are wet & should be put straight. A new dug out for 20 men was made by us between SHELLEY FM & A.
- 7). Machine Guns The French emplacement in A opposite the German Gun was abandoned & new emplacements made in B & E as shown. It is not easy to find sites for more guns but with care two more might be placed in A.(new trench). One firing to right & one to left.
8. Entanglements. Patches of knife rests along front of parapet. Not very effective nor placed with any idea of guiding German attack.
10. Sanitation. A minus quantity. "A" trench has a good many French bodies lying in rear of it & some more are probably trodden down in the trench. The Frenchmen buried in the parapet are marked with crosses.

[Unsigned]

-----

Appendix XI

Report on general events night of 4.2.15.

6.53 pm. Enemy reported to have broken through 28<sup>th</sup> Division N of Canal Square I 34 c. Counter attack being arranged and all relief's suspended.

7.55 pm All quiet in our front. KOYLI fairly active on our left. Heavy firing audible on other side of Canal.

9. pm. Enemy reported to have occupied a trench immediately next to that held by our left Company [inserted: who] were in danger of being enfiladed.

11.15 pm O.C. left Coy (Major WARD) reported said trench to be still in possession of 28<sup>th</sup> Divn Bn holding it being Lieut. COLQUOHOUN and 15 men sent to report on situation. 4<sup>th</sup> Bn. K.R.R. sent to SHELLEY FARM to reinforce the Bn. All very quiet in front.

1.5 pm. Lieut. COLQUOHOUN reported that owing to some misunderstanding certain trenches had been temporarily evacuated on our left. Situation now completely restored normal and quiet. 4<sup>th</sup> Bn. K.R.R. returned to DICKIEBUSCH. Result Battalion remained any extra night in trenches as relief was postponed till

following evening.

---

Appendix XII

The following Extract from F.M. Sir John French's despatch of Feby 2<sup>nd</sup> is published for the information of the Battn :-

"I may mention in particular the fine appearance presented by the 27<sup>th</sup> and 28<sup>th</sup> Divisions, composed principally of Battalions which had come from India. Included in the former Division was the Princess Patricia's Royal Canadian Regt. They are a magnificent set of men, and have since done excellent work in the Trenches. "

The C.O. wishes to warmly congratulate the Battn. on having received such a compliment from the C in C and is convinced that all ranks will strain every nerve to maintain this high reputation.

---

Appendix XII

NOTICE

The Commander-in-Chief has received the following message from the Prime MINISTER of CANADA.

"There is but one Spirit in CANADA, that of resolute determination to force this war to a victorious issue. WE trust that the FIRST CANADIAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCE may soon join the Armies and Your Command and that it will emulate the unsurpassed valour and heroism already displayed Often in face of overwhelming odds by the British Expeditionary Forces now in France. We bid You and all the ALLIED FORCES God Speed in your great task.

Signed BORDON"

The Commander-in Chief has sent the following Reply:-

"In the name of the Army under my Command, I thank you for your most kind and encouraging message which has been Communicated to the troops. We are full of hope and Confidence.

Princess Patricia's Canadian Regiment has been engaged in the trenches and has fully justified the hopes which their magnificent appearance inspired"

Signed FRENCH"

---

APPENDIX XII A

Defences of VOORMEZEELLE – MAP.

## Appendix XIII

Aeroplane reconnaissance of German saps.

Information regarding German Saps.

- 1) Opposite trenches 13 to 15  
5 Saps. Sapheads start from 5 very conspicuous trees 2 of which are broken.  
Sapheads of the two nearest 15 are reported 25 yds & 40 yds distant from right end of 15.
- 2) Opposite trenches 17 and 18.  
Parallels from the original Sapheads & probably others started since have been reported running left to right of 17.  
Parallels in front of these two trenches are not continuous & do not yet cover the front of 17.
- 3) In front of 19-21.  
These parallels from Saps first reported about 17/18<sup>th</sup> January are now practically continuous at distances varying from 25 to 30 yds in front of right of 19, 40 to 50 yds in front of 20 to not more than 15 to 25 yds in front of 21.

26.2.15.

-----

Appendix XIV.

Attack on German Sap 28.2.15.

1. The attack was undertaken with a view to giving a setback to the enemy who, from the sap opposite trenches 20 & 21 had become very aggressive & was doing considerable damage to 21 with bombs. etc.
2. No. 4 Coy was detailed for the attack & organized as follows: 3 snipers under Cpl. ROSS. (D. 148) -Lieut (C.E.) CRABBE - 3 bomb throwers under Lieut (T.M.) PAPINEAU – remainder of snipers – 1 Platoon of No 4 Coy under Sergt PATTERSON (S.V. 1503) – 1 Platoon No. 4 in support – 1 Platoon No 4 with shovels to be ready as soon as trench was captured to demolish the parapet. – 1 Platoon in Reserve.
- 3 The force was led by Cpl ROSS from SHELLEY Fm along hedge in front of new 21 to trench 22, thence to left end of trench 21 which was selected as jumping off point. From this point to the nearest point of German Sap was about 15 yards. The attackers crossed this without difficulty and entered the Sap. Cpl. Ross was killed immediately on entering the Sap. Lieut CRABBE then led the Coy down the trench whilst Lieut PAPINEAU ran down the outside of the parapet throwing bombs into the trench. Lieut CRABBE continued down the trench until

brought up against a barrier behind which Germans had collected : at this point all rifles except one of the party with Lieut CRABBE were out of action.

In mean time Sgt. Pattersons platoon occupied the rear face of sap to guard against a counterattack. Sgt. Major Lloyd (C. 1501) & 1 platoon attacked & demolished the parapet for about 30 yds.

After some 20 minutes occupation of the trench combined with work in demolishing the parapet, orders were given for the attackers to withdraw.

The withdrawal was successfully carried out though daylight was rapidly appearing.

4. The attack was carried out with considerable dash notwithstanding the fact that the men had been for six weeks employed in trenches under not very favourable conditions.

The attack was gallantly led by Lieut CRABBE who was well supported by Corpl. NOURSE (C.B. 172) and the snipers and by Lieut PAPINEAU & the bomb throwers.

5. Major HAMILTON GAULT and Lieut (W.G.) COLQUHOUN had previously carried out a reconnaissance in the neighbourhood of the German sap, and brought back valuable information regarding the enemy's trenches. Lieut COLQUHOUN went out a second time but never returned.

6). Casualties.

Killed. 5 other ranks.

Wounded. Major Gault. Lieut CRABBE and 7 other ranks.

Missing. Lieut COLQUHOUN and two others.

Total. 5 Killed. 9 wounded & 2 missing.

-----

Appendix XV.

1580. Feb'y 28<sup>th</sup> AAA. I heartily congratulate you and your gallant men on your successful operations this morning. AAA Please Express to Lieut Crabbe and the party he led my Great Appreciation of their services x Repeated 2<sup>nd</sup> Army and 5<sup>th</sup> Corps

Commander-in-Chief.

28/2/15

Following message from fifth Corps received begins The Corps Commander has great pleasure in transmitting to You the following Message from Second Army Nine Eighteen A.m. AAA Begins The Army Commander wishes You to Express to the P.P.C.L.I. his appreciation of the grand piece of work performed by them this morning ends

BRIGADE MAJOR.

28/2/15

GENERAL PLUMER wires please give my heartiest Congratulations to the P.P.C.L.I. on their gallant [inserted: and] useful Exploit.

BRIGADE MAJOR.

28/2/15

Well done P.P.C Congratulations on Your splendid work

GEN'L SNOW. 10.30 A.M.

28/2/15

Twenty Eight Division wires hearty Congratulations.

BRIGADE MAJOR.

28/2/15

Heartiest Congratulations on Success last night.

1<sup>st</sup> CANADIAN. DIVISION. 10.15 A.m.

**Mon, Mar 1, 1915 STELOI, BELGIUM**

1.3.15. Enemy bombed trench 21 heavily during the day practically demolishing the parapet. One section of the trench having lost heavily withdrew their place being taken by No 3.

Relieved at night by 3<sup>rd</sup> K.R.R. Major WARD severely wounded.

4<sup>th</sup> K.R.R. again attacked sap & converted it to our own use. Battalion remained at VOORMEZELE [VOORMEZELE] till 4 am. 2.3.15. Casualties during period 27.2 15 to 1.3.15. Officers. 3 wounded. 1 missing. Other ranks. 17 killed. 44 wounded 2 missing. Total 67.

[Inserted: 1.3.15. Draft of 146 NCOs & men & [following]officers joined. [Capt. S.H. HILL. Capt. N.C. OGILVIE. Capt. C.A. MOORHEAD. Lieuts. C.R. BANNING, A.M. GOW. N.A.EDWARDS. J.S. HARVEY. H. LYALL [[H. Lyle](#)]

**Tue, Mar 2, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

2.3.15. In billets at DICKEBUSCH. Working parties by night from all Coys except No 2. at work on new trench 21.

**Wed, Mar 3, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKEBUSCH 3.3.15. In billets. Working parties on new 21.

**Thu, Mar 4, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKEBUSCH 4.3.15. In billets. Working parties on new 21. 3 men wounded.

**Fri, Mar 5, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKEBUSCH 5.3.15. No 3. took over trenches 23 A 23 B 23 C from Cheshire Regt 28<sup>th</sup> Divn. 2 men killed 2 wounded.

**Sat, Mar 6, 1915 ST ELOI & DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKEBUSCH 6.3.15. No 4. relieved No 3 Coy. in trenches. 23 A. B. & C. Enemys trenches heavily bombarded during the day: sap & trenches in front of 20 21. blown to pieces. Sgt. CONNOR [*H.* 695] killed and 3 men wounded.

**Sun, Mar 7, 1915 ST ELOI & DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

7.3.15. No 1 Coy relieved No 4 in trenches 23. A. B. C. All quiet.

**Mon, Mar 8, 1915 ST ELOI & DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

8.3.15. No 2 Coy. relieved No 1 in trenches. 2 saps begun towards German lines from 23 B& 23 C. No 3 Coy at work from 12 m n [*midnight*] till 4 am on new 21. Fine night but cold wind. Lieut A.M. GOW slightly wounded.

**Tue, Mar 9, 1915 ST ELOI & DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

9.3.15. No 4 Coy relieved No 2 Coy in trenches.

**Wed, Mar 10, 1915 ST ELOI & DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

10.3.15. No 3 Coy relieved No 4 Coy in trenches. No.1 paraded 8 pm and worked till 3.30 am on new trench 21.

**Thu, Mar 11, 1915 ST ELOI & DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

7 p.m. 11.3.15.

Battalion less No 3 Coy. marched to rest billets at WESTOUTRE.

LEINSTER Regt. relieved No 3. Coy. at midnight. No 3. arrived WESTOUTRE 6 am 12.3.15.

**Fri, Mar 12, 1915 WESTOUTRE, BELGIUM**

12.3.15. Bn in Army Reserve ready to turn out at half hour notice.

**Sat, Mar 13, 1915 WESTOUTRE, BELGIUM**

13.3.15. Bn out of Army Reserve ready at 1 hour notice. 7 men rejoined from Hosp. ROUEN.

**Sun, Mar 14, 1915 WESTOUTRE, BELGIUM**

4.30 pm. 14.3.15.

Bn. warned to be ready to turn out a moments notice.

5.30 pm.

Battalion ordered to fall in.

7.30 pm.

Marched to DICKIEBUSH [*DICKEBUSCH*] & thence on to ST. ELOI. Where Bn was ordered to assist in counter attack on German trenches West of the MOUND in cooperation with 4<sup>th</sup> Bn. R.B. Lieut [*D.E.*] CAMERON & 7 NCOs & men killed and Lieuts [*C.J.T.*] STEWART & [*P.E.*] LANE [1789] and 17 N.CO.s & men wounded.

Report on the action Appendix XVI.

**Mon, Mar 15, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

4 a.m. 15.3.15.

Battalion ordered to return to DICKIEBUSH. Remained in bivouac during the day & moved into huts at night. No 2. Coy remained holding the breastwork.

**Tue, Mar 16, 1915 ST ELOI & DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKIEBUSH 16.3.15. In huts. No 2 Coy. returned about midnight.

**Wed, Mar 17, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKIEBUSH 17.3.15. 3 Coys. employed at night digging on second line behind St ELOI. known as CANADIAN support trenches.

[inserted: Casualties 17<sup>th</sup> to 21<sup>st</sup>

	K.	W.
Officers	2.	2
O. ranks.	<u>9</u>	<u>22</u>
	11	24
	+ <u>35.</u> ]	

**Thu, Mar 18, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKIEBUSH 18.3.15. Bn. relieved 3<sup>rd</sup> K.R.R. in trenches. 21 22. 23. A. B & C & in left bit of breastwork.

**Fri, Mar 19, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

19.3.15. Pretty quiet throughout the day: few shells came near SHELLEY Fm. Lieut [H.W.] NIVEN wounded near canal bridge on the YPRES. ROAD. Lieut [F.L.] EARDLEY-WILMOT killed in trench 22. Lieut. CAREW MARTIN slightly wounded.

**Sat, Mar 20, 1915 ST ELOI, BELGIUM**

20.3.15. Relieved at night by 3<sup>rd</sup> Bn. K.R.R.C. Lieut Col. F.D. FARQUHAR mortally wounded & died at 2.30 a.m. Bn returned to billets in DICKIEBUSH. [DICKEBUSCH]

**Sun, Mar 21, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

DICKIEBUSH 21.3.15. Lieut Col. FARQUHAR buried in the Battalion Cemetery in VOORMEZELE. [VOORMEZELE] Revd Percival Comeau. Chaplain to 2<sup>nd</sup> K.S.L.I. officiated.

**Mon, Mar 22, 1915 DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

22.3.15. Battalion relieved 3<sup>rd</sup> Bn K.R.R. in trenches as before.

**Tue, Mar 23, 1915 ST ELOI & DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

23.3.15 Quiet except for few shells near SHELLEY [SHELLEY] Fm. & trouble from German trench mortar directed against 22.

**Wed, Mar 24, 1915 ST ELOI & DICKEBUSCH, BELGIUM**

24.3.15. Line taken over by Battalion of MIDDLESEX Regt under Col. STEPHENSON. Relief completed at midnight. Bn. marched to billets near POPERINGHE [halting at DICKIEBUSH [DICKEBUSCH] for tea: into billets about 5 am.]

**Thu, Mar 25 to Sat., Mar. 27, 1915 POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

POPERINGHE 25.3.15 to 27.3.15 In rest billets at POPERINGHE. Weather fine: cold wind & frosty nights.

**Sun, Mar 28, 1915 POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

POPERINGHE 28.3.15 Draft of 66 joined Bn. including 24 old hands. Lieutenants. R.T. CRAWFORD. [R.G. Crawford] J.W. VAN DEN BERG and W.H. BOTHWELL accompanied it.

**Tue, Mar 30, 1915 POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

30.3.15. Bn. inspected by the Corps Commdr. Sir H. PLUMER & Div. Commdr. Maj. Gen. SNOW. both of whom spoke in highest terms of the work done by the Batln.

### **Wed, Mar 31, 1915 POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

31.3.15. Brigade inspected by Army Commdr Sir H. SMITH-DORRIEN. who in course of his remarks warmly congratulated the Bn.

Casualties to date	:	K.	W.	M.	
Officer.		7	9	1	
Other ranks		<u>76</u>	<u>142</u>	<u>3</u>	<u>Total 238</u>
		83	151	4	

*[Note transcriber: after the death of Lieut.-Col. F.D. Farquhar, D.S.O., and with all the Majors out of action, the PPCLI Adjutant, Captain H.C. Buller, was promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel and took command.]*

### Appendix XVI.

Report on the action near ST ELOI on the night of March 14/15.

The Battalion was billeted in WESTOUTRE when orders were received about 5.30 pm on 14<sup>th</sup> Mar to fall in on Bn. Alarm Post. Bn marched about 7 pm. at ZEVECOTEN touch was gained with 3<sup>rd</sup> Bn. KRRC. behind which unit we marched to DICKEBUSH. [*DICKEBUSCH*] About 9.30 pm we proceeded to KRUISTRAATHOEK [*KRUISSTRAATHOEK*] X roads where a short halt was made and subsequently to VOORMEZELE [*VOORMEZEELLE*] where the Battn. was drawn up on the road running N.E. towards crossroads in I 19. d.

Owing to reports from stragglers that the Germans were advancing in large numbers towards the Eastern edge of VOORMEZELE [*VOORMEZEELLE*] from the S.E. precautions were taken against surprise by the most Easterly Coy of the Bn. (No. 4).

Soon after 2 am orders were given me personally by the G.O.C. 80<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade to cooperate with 4<sup>th</sup> Bn. R.B. in an attack on the ST ELOI ‘Mound’ which had been lost earlier in the day, the zone of operations of the Batl being to the East of the VOORMEZELE [*VOORMEZEELLE*] – OOSTAVERNE road.

The actual situation in the front line was still obscure. It was known that the Mound & certain trenches to the West of it were in German hands.

To the East, we were known to have lost Trenches 19 & 20: it was uncertain whether 21 was still held or whether the whole of the Breastwork was in our possession.

It appeared to me to be preferable to proceed towards SHELLEY’S FARM. If 21 and the left of the breastwork had fallen, they would have been attacked at once: If not they would cover the commencement of an attack along the German line against 20, 19 & the Mound successively. The alternative was to advance Southward with the right on the YPRES – ST ELOI Road: This would have meant slow progress through the Enclosures round ST ELOI & the subsequent attack would have been exposed to heavy flanking fire from 19 & 20.

The progress of the Battalion was necessarily slow. The street in VOORMEZELE [*VOOR-MEZEELLE*] was full of stragglers, touch was difficult to maintain across country without constant short halts & the alarmist reports from stragglers made it necessary to keep a screen of scouts in front none of which things made for rapid progress.

I ascertained from Major PROWSE. in ST ELOI that trench 20 had been retaken and modified plans accordingly. Instead of going to SHELLEY FARM our objective was changed to the Breastwork 200 yds West of it.

We reached this point about 20 minutes before broad daylight and an attack was organized by 1 Coy. (No 2) against Trench 19 via the back of 20. This was made in 3 parties: the first two being composed of 1 platoon & the third of 2 platoons.

This attack failed to make progress against the very heavy machine gun fire from the Mound which completely swept the ground: To reinforce with another Coy appeared to me to be useless sacrifice once the element of surprise had been eliminated. I had already sent back one Coy. and after leaving three platoons to hold the right of the Breastwork next door to the Mound, the rest of the Batln. was withdrawn to VOORMEZELE [*VOORMEZEELLE*] and reached DICKEBUSH [*DICKEBUSCH*] about 8 a.m.

Our casualties amounted to 1 officer killed & 2 wounded & 7 N.COs & men killed & 17 wounded. Total 27.

The Battalion behaved with great steadiness throughout the some trying experiences of the night and withdrew over open ground in daylight without leaving a wounded man behind. It is much to be regretted that owing to being overtaken by daylight, more could not be effected.

All ranks behaved very well but there was no individual sufficiently conspicuous to merit his name being especially put forward for consideration.

I have the honour to be

Sir

Your obedient Servant

Sd. F D. Farquhar

Lt. Col.

Comdg. P.P.C.L.I.

**Thu, Apr 1 to Sun., Apr 4, 1915 POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

POPERINGHE April 1st to April 4<sup>th</sup> In billets.

**Mon, Apr 5, 1915 POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

April 5<sup>th</sup> 8.45 am

[ Marched via VLAMERTINGHE] to YPRES and billeted.

**Wed, Apr 7, 1915 YPRES, BELGIUM**

April 7<sup>th</sup> 5.30 pm.

No's 3 & 4 Coys under Capt. [*S.H.*] HILL occupied dug outs in close support to the Brigade near the ETANG de BELLEWAARDE. Wet. Draft of 37 N.C.Os & men rejoined the Bn.

**Thu, Apr 8, 1915 YPRES & HOOGE, BELGIUM**

April 8th Officers visited trenches to be occupied by their Corps the next night. Wet.

**Fri, Apr 9, 1915 YPRES & HOOGE, BELGIUM**

April 9<sup>th</sup> 7.30 p.m.

Bn. marched from YPRES and relieved 4<sup>th</sup>. Bn. Rifle Brigade in trenches B. C & S.3 in POLY-GONE DE ZONNEBEKE

Sketch & short report. Appendix XVII.

[*note from transcriber: this appendix is missing from the original War Diary*]

**Sat, Apr 10, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

[*Note transcriber: there is no entry for Sat, Apr 10*].

**Sun, Apr 11, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

April 11<sup>th</sup> 4. pm.

Enemy shelled C trench with H.E. but did no damage.

12. m.n. [*midnight*]

Relieved by 4<sup>th</sup> Bn. Rifle Brigade: relief complete at midnight.

Casualties [3 men killed and 4 wounded] Draft of 26 N.C.Os & men rejoined Bn. Weather fine.

**Mon, Apr 12, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

April 12<sup>th</sup> Marched to huts at VLAMERTINGHE and arrived 6 am

11.30 pm

A Zeppelin came over Camp & dropped 6 bombs. No damage

**Tue, Apr 13, 1915 VLAMERTINGHE, BELGIUM**

April 13<sup>th</sup> VLAMERTINGHE Sir H. PLUMER, the Corps Commander visited the Battalion.

**Wed, Apr 14, 1915 VLAMERTINGHE, BELGIUM**

April 14<sup>th</sup> Marched to YPRES and in evening took over trenches from 4<sup>th</sup> R.B.

Nos. 3 & 4 Coy.s in trenches Nos 1 & 2 Coys in Support

**Thu, Apr 15, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

April 15<sup>th</sup> Rumours of expected attacks by Germans

(Casualties 2 wounded)

**Fri, Apr 16 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

[*Note transcriber: there is no entry for Fri, Apr 16*].

**Sat, Apr 17, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl 17<sup>th</sup> Relieved by 4<sup>th</sup> R.B. and returned to biletts in YPRES  
Casualties 4 killed 3 wounded.

**Sun, Apr 18, 1915 YPRES, BELGIUM**

Apl 18<sup>th</sup> Remained in biletts in YPRES

**Mon, Apr 19, 1915 YPRES, BELGIUM**

Apl 19<sup>th</sup> Remained in biletts in YPRES casualties 4 men wounded.

**Tue, Apr 20, 1915 YPRES, BELGIUM**

Apl 20 YPRES Heavily shelled in YPRES. Btn. turned out of Barracks in afternoon & waited round pond till time to move off in evening. Moved up to trenches in POLYGONE WOOD and took over from 4<sup>th</sup> R.B.

Nos 1 & 2 Coys in trenches 3 & 4 Coys in support Casualties 2 men wounded

*[Cas. 1<sup>st</sup> - 21<sup>st</sup> - K 7. W .1 + 21]*

**Wed, Apr 21, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl 21<sup>st</sup> POLYGONE Wd Btn. remained in trenches without relief owing to battle being fought to North in neighbourhood of St. JEAN. Btn. subjected daily to a certain amount of shelling.

[Casualties 3 men wounded & Lt. [W.H.] Bothwell wounded.

**Thu, Apr 22, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl 22<sup>nd</sup> POLYGONE Wd Remained in occupation of trenches in POLYGONE WOOD  
[ Casualties Lt. ~~Bothwell~~ 3 men wounded also 3 others slightly at duty

**Fri, Apr 23, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl 23 POLYGONE Wd Still occupy trenches [ Casualties 6 men wounded  
Barracks in YPRES shelled & we had casualties 1 man killed 1 man missing believed under debris one man wounded Sergt Cook McBrierty. [[McBrearty R. 150](#)]

**Sat, Apr 24, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl 24 POLYGONE Wd Still occupy same trenches [Casualties 10 men wounded .& 3 slightly, 1 man killed Transport & details. were moved from YPRES to BUSSEBOOM

**Sun, Apr 25, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl 25 POLYGONE Wd trenches [Casualties Lt. Bainsmith & Capt. Ogilvie wounded 6 men wounded]

**Mon, Apr 26, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl 26 POLYGONE Wd Still hold same trenches [Casualties 9 men wounded.

**Tue, Apr 27, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl 27 POLYGONE WOOD Occupy same trenches in WOOD. Casualties[1 man killed and 10 men wounded.

**Wed, Apr 28, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl POLYGONE WOOD Still POLYGONE WOOD trenches [Casualties 5 men wounded & 1 man killed

**Thu, Apr 29, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl POLYGONE WOOD Still POLYGONE WOOD trenches [Casualties 3 men killed and 2 wounded (at duty)

**Fri, Apr 30, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

Apl 30 POLYGONE WOOD [Casualties 6 men wounded. Capt Grey [[D.F.B. Gray](#)] slightly wounded.

*[Cas. 22<sup>nd</sup> – 30<sup>th</sup> K 8. W. 3 + 53. M. 1]*

*[Note transcriber: during April 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel H.C. Buller.]*

**Sat, May 1, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

MAY 1<sup>st</sup> POLYGONE WOOD 10<sup>th</sup> day in trenches at POLYGONE WOOD Casualties 7 men wounded

**Sun, May 2, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

MAY 2 POLYGONE WOOD 11<sup>th</sup> day in trenches at POLYGONE WOOD Casualties none

**Mon, May 3, 1915 POLYGON WOOD, BELGIUM**

MAY 3 POLYgone WOOD Orders received to withdraw to a subsidiary line. The Batn. to go through the line & go into rest in G.H.Q. trenches for the night

Further order received that owing to K.S.L.I. having been ordered North, Btn would occupy these trenches in Subsidiary line. Casualties during day 3 men slightly wounded.

8 P.M.

Two Support Coys under Capt [Agar]Adamson withdrew & occupy subsidiary line, running N from ETANG BELLEWAARDE to Railway

9 P.M.

Half trench parties withdrew & occupied Support trenches in subsidiary line

10.30 P.M.

Half remaining trench parties withdrew to support trenches

12 Midnight

Remaining parties (except 15 men under [P.E.] Lieut Lane [1789] who remained and acted as rear guard to cover the withdrawal) withdrew under Lt Col [H.C.] Buller & by 3 A.M. Btn. was in occupation of new line. without casualties

### **Tue, May 4, 1915 BELLEWAERDE LAKE, BELGIUM**

MAY 4<sup>th</sup> BELLEWAERDE LAKE Men worked hard all night on new trenches but by 7 A.M. the Germans were noticed advancing over crest of ridge to our Right & by 9 A.M. Enemies Artillery began shelling the trenches & this heavy shelling continued throughout the day, trenches in many places were blown in, Nos 1 & 2 Coys in the Fire line trenches lost heavily. 26 men killed 96 men wounded two of which died two days later

Btn. was relieved by K S L I at 10 p.m. and withdrew to G.H.Q. line near YPRES at junction of Railway & YPRES-MENIN ROAD [*HELL-FIRE CORNER*]

### **Wed, May 5, 1915 HELL-FIRE CORNER, YPRES, BELGIUM**

MAY 5<sup>th</sup> G.H.Q. line Enemy shelled G.H.Q. at intervals during day Lieut Col H.C. Buller and Lieut A.M. Gow wounded.

Major [A.H.] Gault & Lieut [P.V.] Cornish with draft of 47 other ranks joined the Batn. the evening of 4<sup>th</sup> Lt [R.O.] Earl & Lt [J.O.] Newton joined on 5<sup>th</sup>

### **Thu, May 6, 1915 HELL-FIRE CORNER, YPRES, BELGIUM**

MAY 6<sup>th</sup> G.H.Q. line Remained at G.H.Q. Trenches all day, were shelled in afternoon casualties 3 killed 9 wounded

8.45 P.M.

Btn. left for trenches in front of BELLEWARDE LAKE and relieved K S L I relief complete by 11-30 P.M. Nos 3 & 4 Coy firing line 3- & 4 1 & 2 support

### **Fri, May 7, 1915 BELLEWAERDE LAKE, BELGIUM**

MAY 7<sup>th</sup> BELLEWAERDE LAKE Shelling started by Germans about 9 A.M. and considerable damage done to Fire trenches. casualties 3 men killed 13 wounded [Capt [D.F.B.] Gray & Lt [P.V.] Cornish were sent back sick in Evening. Nos 1 & 2 Coy relieved 3 & 4 Coys in fire trenches.

### **Sat, May 8, 1915 BELLEWAERDE LAKE, BELGIUM**

4 A.M.

Shelling by Germans started chiefly from our right flank which enfladed our fire trenches this grew more severe by 5.30 & about this time some Germans were noticed coming down hill directly in front of us and we opened rapid fire on them

6 A.M.

All our telephone wires were cut by this time both to Brigade & also to trenches so all Signalers, Pioneers, Orderlies & Servants were ordered into Support trenches and shortly afterward all advance by Germans was checked and any not sheltered by buildings or dead crawled back over crest of ridge to trenches Germans had two possibly three Machine guns in buildings & were sweeping our parapets both in fire and support trenches. An orderly took a note to Brigade H.Q. notifying them of situation

7 A.M

Major [A.H.] Gault was severely hit [by shell in left arm & left thigh.]

Shelling by heavy Howitzers using all high Explosives & field guns started again in heavy bombardment both on Fire & Support trenches. Fire trench on right being blown in at several points. A note by orderly to Brigade notified them we were being heavily shelled & asking for reinforcements as our casualties were heavy.

9 A.M.

Cessation in shelling and Germans again attempted to advance but heavy fire from our Machine Guns & rifles checked them & forced them to retire & take cover at this time P.P.C.L.I. accounted for many of the Enemy.

Lieut [A.G.] Martin [1266] & [G.] Triggs were hit & came out left communication trench with number of wounded Capt. [S.H.] Hill & Lt [M.S.] De Bay hit also

9-30 A.M.

† Lt [H.W.] Niven went at this time & was in communication with the Officer of K.O.Y.L.I. on our left & Officer of 4<sup>th</sup> Rifle Bgd. on our right both were suffering heavy casualties from enflade fire. Bombardment started again particular attention being paid to our Machine Guns all machine guns were buried but two were dug out & mounted again over three times but a shell killed every man on its section

10-30 A.M.

Left half of our Right fire trench was completely destroyed & Lt [H.S.] Dennison ordered Lt [D.A.] Clark [1763] to take remaining men & get in our Right Communicating trench. Lt [H.S.] Dennison & Lt [P.E.] Lane [1789] still held part of our right fire trench with few men. Lt. [N.A.] Edwards was killed

Our Left fire trench (right half) suffered severely & trench was blown in and Machine Gun put out of action. Sergt Scott [L. 640] and few men withdrew to communication trench & held it until it was blown in. Lt [R.G.] Crawford who was most gallant was severely wounded. Capt [Agar] Adamson who had been handing out ammunition was hit in shoulder but continued to work with only one arm useful. R. Sergt Major Fraser [A. 3] was also handing out SAA to support trenches was killed instantly by bullet in head

12 A.M.

Snipers had been extremely brave taking messages to Brigade & reserve Batn kept in rear of BELLEWAARDE LAKE during the morning as ground they covered was continually shelled A message was sent asking Brigade for more S.A.A., as rifle fire was brisk at all times.

1-30 P.M.

One Platoon of 4 R.B's was sent us as reinforcement [& the support trench gave them a cheer as they came up.] Lt. N [H.W. Niven] placed them on our extreme right in ~~tree~~ order to watch our flank as we were unable from trench to overlook this ground. They were in line with our support trench behind trees & hedge They also sent a Machine Gun and section that did good service

2 P.M.

I went with orderly to BELLEWAARDE LAKE dugouts as ordered by Brigade to telephone G.O.C. 80<sup>th</sup> Infy. Bgd. complete details of situation returning at 2-30 P.M. Orderlies accompanying me both going and coming were hit by High Explosive shells.

3 P.M.

A platoon of K.S.L.I. under an Officer reached our Support line with 20 Boxes S.A.A. which was distributed. This party also acted as reinforcement & occupied Left end of Support Trench

4 P.M.

Made tour of Support Trenches & found we were out of touch with Regt. on our Left a gap of fifty yards was unoccupied, I placed 8 men in this gap to inform me of happenings there. shortly afterward I was informed that Monmouth Regt. on left of K.O.Y.L.I. had withdrawn to trenches 300 yards in rear and about 5-30 was informed that K.O.Y.L.I. had also withdrawn to same line of trenches

Another attempt by Germans to advance was stopped by our rifle fire although some reached our [inserted: fire] trench on right that could not be observed from our support trench but I believe at this time there were none of our men alive at this point.

11.30 P.M.

We were relieved by 3<sup>rd</sup> K.R.R.C. who gave us assistance to bury our dead that were in Support & Communicating trenches as it was impossible & imprudent to attempt to reach the fire trenches.

Our casualties were as follows Killed [inserted: 2 + 73] Lieut. [N.A.] Edwards died of wounds Lieut [R.G.] Crawford , missing [inserted: 2 + 79] Lieut [H.S.] Dennison & Lieut [P.E.] Lane [1789] . Wounded [inserted: 6 + 203] Major [A.H.] Gault, Capt. [Agar] Adamson, Capt. [S.H.] Hill, Lieut [M.S.] De Bay Lieut [A.G.] Martin [1266] , Lieut [G.] Triggs Other ranks 93 killed, 79 missing 203 wounded.

### **Sun, May 9, 1915 BELLEWAERDE LAKE, BELGIUM**

May 9<sup>th</sup> Btn. had orders to withdraw to G.H.Q. Trenches S of Railway & we started at 2.30 A.M. Lieut [H.W.] Niven, Lieut [T.M.] Papineau, Lieut [D.A.] Clark [1763] , Lieut [J.W.H.G.] Vanden Berg. [Van den Berg] On arrival at G.H.Q. line we were ordered to proceed to LILLE GATE – YPRES and occupy ground at Ramparts there. During the day we were shelled and lost 5 killed & 3 wounded.

### **Mon, May 10, 1915 YPRES, BELGIUM**

May 10<sup>th</sup> YPRES all day, in evening furnished a carrying party for SAA of 50 men & one Officer & delivered 25 boxes SAA to trenches of BELLEWAARDE LAKE. Casualties 1 killed 2 wounded furnished a digging party of 100 men under Lieut [D.A.] Clarke [1763] who constructed part of support trench S of G.H.Q. line

**Tue, May 11 & 12, 1915 YPRES, BELGIUM**

May 11<sup>th</sup> [YPRES all day &]

May 12<sup>th</sup> received orders to proceed to BUSSEBOOM and marched at 2 A.M. and camped in field near Divisional H.Q. about 7 A.M. Casualties 1 man wounded in YPRES on 11th

**Thu, May 13, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

May 13<sup>th</sup> In bivouac at BUSSEBOOM till noon when we formed composite Battn with 4<sup>th</sup> K.R.R.C. & marched to HOOGE-CHATEAU and received 4<sup>th</sup> R.B. in trenches there relief completed at 11.45 P.M.

**Fri, May 14, 1915 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

14<sup>th</sup> May In trenches at HOOGE CHATEAU All quiet.

**Sat, May 15, 1915 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

15<sup>th</sup> May Still in trenches at HOOGE CHATEAU. Major [R.T.] Pelly rejoined from sick leave & took command from Lieut & Adj. [H.W.] Niven.

**Sun, May 16, 1915 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

16<sup>th</sup> May All quiet in trenches [a few "Whiz bangs" sent over Battn Head Quarters

**Mon, May 17, 1915 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

17<sup>th</sup> May All quiet. Relieved by Queens Bays and 11<sup>th</sup> Hussars at 10. p.m. & returned to bivouac at BUSSEBOOM

**Tue, May 18, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

18<sup>th</sup> May In bivouac at BUSSEBOOM

**Wed, May 19, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

19<sup>th</sup> May 80<sup>th</sup> Brigade inspected by the C. in C., Sir John French, who spoke in highest possible terms of the P.P.C.L.I. and also referred to the loss the Regiment sustained when Colonel [F.D.] Farquhar was killed.

**Thu, May 20, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

20<sup>th</sup> May In bivouac at BUSSEBOOM.

**Fri, May 21, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

21<sup>st</sup> May Still at BUSSEBOOM. The men had hot baths at POPERINGHE.

The following new officers arrived, having been sent as a reinforcement from the 11<sup>th</sup> Canadian Bn., Shorncliffe.

2 Major [J.G.] Wayne, Major [J.H.] Lindsay, [inserted 5] Capt [F.G.] Arnold, Capt [H.E.] Pembroke, Capt [H.S.] Cooper, Capt [R.G.] Mainer, [inserted: 12] Lieut [R.R.] Reid, Lieut [Sellers [R. [Sellar](#)], Lieut [J.O.] Newton, Lieut [S.] Smith, Lieut [N.A.] Sparks, Lieut [J.C.] De Balinhard, Lieut [J.E.] McDermid, Lieut [G.A.] Ferguson, Lieut [J.H.] Strathy, Capt [J.W.] Forbes, Lieut [A.] Fraser, Lieut [J.H.] Stewart, Lieut Ralph [H.S. [Relph](#)].

Lieut Stanley Jones [[Jones](#), *Stanley Livingston*] also rejoined from England

### **Sat, May 22 & May 23, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

22<sup>nd</sup> & 23<sup>rd</sup> May In bivouac at BUSSEBOOM

### **Mon, May 24, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

24<sup>th</sup> May Very heavy bombardment heard at dawn in direction of YPRES.

5.30 a.m.

Received to turn out in half an hour

6 a.m.

Brigade marched to a point on the POPERINGHE – VLAMERTINGHE Road, the P.P.C.L.I. in rear, where we waited for 6 hours.

noon

Received orders to proceed to the LILLE GATE , YPRES going via the South of the town.

From there the 2<sup>nd</sup> K.S.L.I. & 4<sup>th</sup> K.R.R.C. moved on to the line crossing on the YPRES – MENIN road to form the firing line in a counter attack on the trenches at HOOGE CHATEAU which had been lost in a gas attack.

A Brigade of the 27<sup>th</sup> Division counter attacked on the left of the K.S.L.I. while on the right the 4<sup>th</sup> K.R.R.C. endeavoured unsuccessfully to get in touch with the cavalry in ZOUAVE WOOD

The 3<sup>rd</sup> K.R.R.C. & 4<sup>th</sup> R.B formed a supporting line while the P.P.C.L.I. moved to the G.H.Q.

8.30 p.m.

line near the MENIN Road level crossing & obtained tools & sandbags ready to assist in digging the firing line in when the attack was complete.

### **Tue, May 25, 1915 HELL-FIRE CORNER, YPRES, BELGIUM**

25<sup>th</sup> May 2.15 a.m

Day broke when the attack (which was unsuccessful) was held up about 1000 yards East of the Railway crossing.

The P.P.C.L.I. then took the tools up under a somewhat heavy shell fire & rifle fire & on completion of this duty the Battalion was ordered to occupy the trench near the LILLE GATE.

Casualties 1 Officer (Major [J.H.] Lindsay) & men wounded.

4. a.m.

Reached the LILLE GATE & remained all day, being periodically shelled.

8.15 p.m.

Proceeded to level crossing in MENIN Road where we met transport with Rations tools & sandbags.

Moved up the road 1 mile to the East & dug a new line of trenches to fill a gap between the MENIN Road & ZOUAVE Wood.

2.a.m.

Trenches completed at dawn, Battn returned to LILLE GATE.

Lent two officers, Capt. [H.E.] Pembroke & Lieut. [N.A.] Sparks to 2 K.S.L.I. who had lost all their officers except two. Casualties while digging trenches – 2 men wounded.

**Wed, May 26, 1915 LILLE GATE, YPRES, BELGIUM**

26<sup>th</sup> May 1915 Remained at LILLE GATE. Were shelled a little & had casualties :-

1 Officer (Lieut Stanley Jones) [S.L. Jones] & men wounded.

12 midnight

Received orders to return to bivouac at BUSSEBOOM.

3 a.m.

Reached BUSSEBOOM.

Received report from 2 K.S.L.I. that Lieut [N.A.] Sparks was wounded.

**Thu, May 27, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

27<sup>th</sup> May 1915 In bivouac at BUSSEBOOM

**Fri, May 28, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

28<sup>th</sup> May The Brigadier (Gen Smith) inspected the transport in the morning

5 p.m.

General Sir Allenby commanding the 5<sup>th</sup> Corps paid us a farewell visit.

**Sat, May 29, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

29<sup>th</sup> May In bivouac at BUSSEBOOM.

**Sun, May 30, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

30<sup>th</sup> May In bivouac at BUSSEBOOM.

**Mon, May 31, 1915 BUSSEBOOM, BELGIUM**

31<sup>st</sup> May 4. a.m.

Marched to DANOUTRE [DRANOUTRE] near LOCRE & went into huts.

*[Note transcriber: during April 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel H.C. Buller, until he was wounded May 5, 1915. Major A.H. Gault took over until he was severely wounded, for the second time, May 8, 1915 and Captain Agar Adamson took over command and kept on acting as such even though he was wounded in turn and lost the use of an arm. After a while he relinquished command to the Adjutant, Lieutenant H.W. Niven. Major R.T. Pelly, returning from sick leave, took over command from Lieutenant Niven May 18, 1915.]*

**Tue, June 1, 1915 DRANOUTRE, BELGIUM**

~~31<sup>st</sup> May~~ 1<sup>st</sup> June 1915 4.30 a.m.

Marched to STEENWERKE & billeted in 3 farms.

3. p.m.

Officers went by motor bus to ARMENTIERES & visited the trenches we are to occupy.

**Wed, June 2, 1915 STEENWERKE, BELGIUM**

2<sup>nd</sup> June 4.15 p.m.

Marched to ARMENTIERES

7.30 p.m.

Halted for 1 hour near Asylum.

8.30 pm.

Occupied trenches with our right resting on L'EPINETTE relieving 2<sup>nd</sup>. London Regiment.

**Thu, June 3, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

3<sup>rd</sup> June 1915 All quiet.

**Fri, June 4, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

4<sup>th</sup> June All quiet. Did a lot of work in improving trenches.

One man killed in trenches.

**Sat, June 5, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

5<sup>th</sup> June All quiet.

5. p.m.

Battn. Head Quarters heavily shelled. No casualties.

Casualties in fire trenches 1 man wounded.

12 midnight

Relieved by 4<sup>th</sup> R.B. & marched to billets in ARMENTIERES.

**Sun, June 6 to Thu., June 10, 1915 ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

6<sup>th</sup> -10<sup>th</sup> June In billets at ARMENTIERES

Sgts. Horner [A.H. 854] & Tabernacle [P.B. 1703] received their commissions

8<sup>th</sup>. one man wounded in square by shell.

**Fri, June 11, 1915 ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

11<sup>th</sup> June 9. p.m.

Proceeded to trenches and relieved two Coys. 4<sup>th</sup> R.B. in Nos. 77 & 78. All quiet, no casualties.

**Sat, June 12, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

12<sup>th</sup> June All quiet. Erected a rifle battery to sweep a road junction 1000 yards behind German lines. No casualties.

**Sun, June 13, 1915 L'EPINETTE FRANCE**

13<sup>th</sup> June All quiet. No casualties.

**Mon, Jun 14, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

14 June All quiet. No casualties.

**Tue, Jun 15, 1915 L'EPINETTE FRANCE**

15 June All quiet. No casualties.

**Wed, Jun 16, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

16 June All quiet. No casualties

**Thu, Jun 17, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

17 June 10. a.m.

Lt. J.H. Stewart killed while sniping at a loophole

No. 3 & 4 Coys. were relieved by 2<sup>nd</sup> K.S.L.I. and marched to billets in ARMENTIERES.

No. 1 & 2 Coys were relieved by 2<sup>nd</sup> K.S.L.I. in Trenches and occupied Support Trenches immediately in rear

**Fri, Jun 18, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

18<sup>th</sup> Maj. [R.T.] Pelly proceeded to England to confer with Col. [H.C.] Buller and Maj. [A.H.] Gault D.S.O. Two Coys. remained in billets and two Coys in support. No casualties.

**Sat, Jun 19, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

19<sup>th</sup> H.Q. Coy. & 3 & 4 Coys. remained in ARMENTIERES.

No 1 & 2 Coys in support trenches. No casualties.

**Sun, Jun 20, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

20<sup>th</sup> No. 3 & 4 Coys. relieved No. 1 & 2 Coys. in the support trenches

No casualties.

**Mon, Jun 21, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

June 21<sup>st</sup> 1915 ARMENTIERES. H.Q. No. 3 & 4 Coys in billets. No. 1 & 2 Coys. in support trenches. No casualties.

**Tue, Jun 22, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

22<sup>nd</sup> All quiet. Same report as 21<sup>st</sup>.

**Wed, Jun 23, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

23<sup>rd</sup> All Quiet. H.Q. No. 3 & 4 Coys. take over trench 79 from 2<sup>nd</sup> K.S.L.I. at L'EPINETTE No. 1 & 2 Coys. in support trenches. No casualties.

**Thu, Jun 24, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

24<sup>th</sup> Maj. Hayne [*J.G. Wayne*], Capt. [*F.G.*] Arnold, Capt. [*H.S.*] Cooper, Capt. [*R.G.*] Mainer, Lt. [*J.O.*] Newton, Lt. [*R.R.*] Reid, Lt. [*J.H.*] Strathy. Lt. Sellars [*R. Sellar*], Lt. [*S.*] Smith, left on afternoon train to proceed to Base.

All quiet in trenches. No casualties. Major [*R.T.*] Pelly returned to Regt.

**Fri, Jun 25, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

25<sup>th</sup> All quiet in trenches. No casualties.

**Sat, Jun 26, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

26<sup>th</sup> Lieut. [*H.S.*] Relph went to Hospital. All quiet in trenches No casualties.

**Sun, Jun 27, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

27<sup>th</sup> Nos. 1 & 2 Coys. were relieved in trenches by 3<sup>rd</sup> K.R.R.C. & with H.Q. Coy came to billets to ARMENTIERES. No. 3 & 4 Coys. remained in support Trenches. All quiet. no casualties.

**Mon, Jun 28, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

28<sup>th</sup> No. 3 & 4 Coys. in support trenches. All quiet. no casualties.  
No. 1 & 2 Coys. & H.Q. Coys. in billets in town.

**Tue, Jun 29, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

29<sup>th</sup> All quiet. same as 28<sup>th</sup>. No casualties.

**Wed, Jun 30, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

30<sup>th</sup> All quiet. Nos. 1 & 2 Coys. relieve Nos. 3 & 4 Coys. in support trenches. 1 man killed at Transport lines by shell.

*[Note transcriber: during August 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel R.T. Pelly.]*

**Thu, Jul 1, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

July 1<sup>st</sup> The Battalion went into trenches at L'EPINETTE  
 No. 4 No. 3. No. 2 Coys. went into Fire Trenches 79 & part of 78  
 No casualties.

**Fri, Jul 2, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 2<sup>nd</sup> All quiet, good weather.

**Sat, Jul 3, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 3<sup>rd</sup> All quiet, no casualties.

**Sun, Jul 4, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 4<sup>th</sup> All quiet, one man wounded

**Mon, Jul 5, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 5<sup>th</sup> H.Q. & two companies came out to billets in ARMENTIERES and two Companies remained in support All quiet no casualties.

**Tue, Jul 6, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

July 6<sup>th</sup> Shell burst in Transport billet in town killing one man and wounding three others. Two Companies in billets relieved the two Companies in support.

**Wed, Jul 7, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

July 7<sup>th</sup> All quiet, no casualties.

**Thu, Jul 8, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

July 8<sup>th</sup> All quiet no casualties.

**Fri, Jul 9, 1915 L'EPINETTE & ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

July 9<sup>th</sup> Regiment went into trenches again 78 & 79 at L'EPINETTE & one Company in support no casualties.

**Sat, Jul 10, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 10<sup>th</sup> All quiet, one man wounded.

**Sun, Jul 11, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 11<sup>th</sup> All quiet, no casualties.

**Mon, Jul 12, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 12<sup>th</sup> All quiet, no casualties.

**Tue, Jul 13, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 13<sup>th</sup> All quiet, no casualties.

**Wed, Jul 14, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 14<sup>th</sup> All quiet no casualties.

**Thu, Jul 15, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 15<sup>th</sup> All quiet no casualties.

**Fri, Jul 16, 1915 L'EPINETTE, FRANCE**

July 16<sup>th</sup> Relieved in trenches by 4<sup>th</sup> Northumberland Fusiliers and marched to bivouac at TROIS ARBES near STEENWERK

Very wet night.

**Sat, Jul 17, 1915 TROIS ARBRES , FRANCE**

July 17 Remained in camp rest.

**Sun, Jul 18, 1915 TROIS ARBRES, FRANCE**

July 18 Remained in camp rest.

**Mon, Jul 19, 1915 TROIS ARBRES, FRANCE**

July 19 Remained in camp rest.

**Tue, Jul 20, 1915 TROIS ARBRES, FRANCE**

July 20 marched to new camp at PETIT MOULIN farm

**Wed, Jul 21, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 21 were inspected by SIR ROBERT BORDEN and PRINCE ARTHUR of CONNAUGT.

**Thu, Jul 22, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 22 Remained in Camp & built shelter huts.

**Fri, Jul 23, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 23 Remained in Camp & received call from Sir Douglas Haig Commander of 1<sup>st</sup> ARMY. wet day.

**Sat, Jul 24, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 24 In camp. wet

**Sun, Jul 25, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 25<sup>th</sup> In Camp. Fine.

**Mon, Jul 26, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 26<sup>th</sup> In Camp Fine.

**Tue, Jul 27, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 27<sup>th</sup> In Camp Fine.

**Here!****Wed, Jul 28, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 28<sup>th</sup> Camped at PETIT MOULIN farm. New draft (McGill) of 244 men and 5 Officers arrived. Officers C.J.T. Stewart, Lieut. E.O.C. MARTIN, Lieut. S.F.A. MARTIN, Capt. [G.] BARCLAY, Capt. McDOUGAL. [ *E.S.* [McDOUGALL](#) ]

**Thu, Jul 29, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 29<sup>th</sup> The following Officers rejoined from Base Capt. GREY [*D.F.B. Gray*], Lieut [C.E.] CRABBE and the following Officers joined from Depot Lieut [C.A.] POPE, Lieut [W.E.C.] IRWIN, Lieut [E.J.] BEVINGTON [833].

**Fri, Jul 30, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 30<sup>th</sup> In Camp

**Sat, Jul 31, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

July 31<sup>st</sup> New draft and Officers inspected by Brig. Gen. Smith

[*Note transcriber: during August 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel R.T. Pelly.*]

P.P.C.L.I  
 War Diary  
 Month of August 1915

Entry  
 under date

Errata.

Aug. 5<sup>th</sup>.

For Grey read, Gray.

Aug. 24<sup>th</sup> .

For Major Colwell  
 read, Major A. Calvert D.S.O.

-----  
Addendum

Under date  
 Aug. 5<sup>th</sup>.

Add to last line of entry the following;  
 Lieut. Newcombe joins regiment.

R. T. Pelly Lieut. Col.  
 Comdg. P.P.C.L.I.

-----

**Sun, Aug 1, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

August 1<sup>st</sup> Lieut. Col. [R.T.] Pelly & Officers made a tour of inspection over new line of trenches to be taken over next day.

Officers of the Regiment were inspected by new G.O.C. of the 27<sup>th</sup> Division ~~Lieut~~ Maj. General MILNE

**Mon, Aug 2, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

August 2<sup>nd</sup> At 9.30 P.M. Nos. 3 and 4 Companies took over fire & support Trench # 63 from 9<sup>th</sup> ROYAL SCOTS at RUE DU BOIS

Nos. 1 and 2 Companies occupied billets on outskirts of ARMENTIERES. no casualties.

**Tue, Aug 3, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 3<sup>rd</sup> All quiet in trenches no casualties.

**Wed, Aug 4, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 4<sup>th</sup> All quiet in trenches. Lieut E.O.C. MARTIN was wounded by Machine Gun fire at Dumping Ground and one man killed on fatigue at LA CHAPELLE d'ARMENTIERES.

**Thu, Aug 5, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 5<sup>th</sup> Capt GREY [D.F.B. GRAY] made a reconnoissance in front of trenches and found all clear of enemys patrols. Lieut. [E.F.] Newcombe joins Regt.

**Fri, Aug 6, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 6<sup>th</sup> In trenches, all quiet, searchlight used by enemy frequently during the night, Orchard at H.Q. shelled but no casualties. Relieved by reserve companies.

**Sat, Aug 7, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 7<sup>th</sup> One man slightly wounded, found dead German in front lines,

**Sun, Aug 8, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES,, FRANCE**

August 8<sup>th</sup> Reserve Companies #3 & #4 under [Lieut.-]Col [R.T.] Pelly inspected by Gen. Sam Hughes who spoke about large pensions and [inserted by transcriber: end of entry]

**Mon, Aug 9, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 9<sup>th</sup> All quiet, work continuous building Shell Shelters & wire entanglements

**Tue, Aug 10, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 10<sup>th</sup> Reserve Companies relieve those in Firing Trench, All quiet.

**Wed, Aug 11, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 11<sup>th</sup> Exceptionally quiet in trenches. no casualties, many fatigue parties

**Thu, Aug 12, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 12<sup>th</sup> All quiet, Colors flying at H.Q. to celebrate first birthday of Regiment, receive many congratulations

**Fri, Aug 13, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 13<sup>th</sup> All quiet

**Sat, Aug 14, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 14<sup>th</sup> Snipers locate Germans digging sap towards our trench, All quiet, no casualties. Lieut Lowther of the Westmorland & Cumberland Yeomanry is attached to this Regiment for instruction

**Sun, Aug 15, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 15<sup>th</sup> All quiet, one man wounded, rain.

**Mon, Aug 16, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 16<sup>th</sup> All quiet, wet day

**Tue, Aug 17, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 17 All quiet, one man wounded.

**Wed, Aug 18, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 18 All quiet, one man wounded.

**Thu, Aug 19, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 19<sup>th</sup> All quiet, constructing Shell Shelters in Fire trench no casualties

**Fri, Aug 20, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 20<sup>th</sup> All quiet, no casualties, four Colonels visit our trenches .K.

**Sat, Aug 21, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 21<sup>st</sup> All quiet, no casualties.

**Sun, Aug 22, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 22<sup>nd</sup> All quiet, no casualties.

**Mon, Aug 23, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 23<sup>rd</sup> All quiet, no casualties.

**Tue, Aug 24, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 24<sup>th</sup> All quiet, no casualties. A Squadron of the Surrey Yeomanry were attached to us in the trenches for instruction. They are commanded by Major A. Colville Damp night

**Wed, Aug 25, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 25<sup>th</sup> All quiet, Parties work in front of our fire trench every day digging borrow pit and strengthening parapet

**Thu, Aug 26, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 26<sup>th</sup> All quiet, wet day.

**Fri, Aug 27, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 27<sup>th</sup> All quiet Westmorland & Cumberland Yeomanry Machine Gun section under Lieut Lowther return to their Unit.

**Sat, Aug 28, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 28<sup>th</sup> All quiet, no casualties.

**Sun, Aug 29, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 29<sup>th</sup> All quiet, no casualties. wet day.

**Mon, Aug 30, 1915 RUE DU BOIS/ARMENTIERES, FRANCE**

August 30<sup>th</sup> All quiet. We are relieved by Cambridgeshire Regiment and go to rest camp at PETIT MOULIN FARM

**Tue, Aug 31, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

August 31<sup>st</sup> In Rest Camp at PETIT MOULIN FARM

*[Note transcriber: during August 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel R.T. Pelly.]*

**Wed, Sep 1, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

September 1<sup>st</sup> Rest Camp at Petit Moulin Farm. Receive large reinforcement of 244 other ranks. 28 old men returned 216 new draft composed of University men chiefly weather damp. Battalion Strength today 994 the largest since January.

**Thu, Sep 2, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

2<sup>nd</sup> Rest Camp at Petit Moulin Farm. Inspection of new draft and posting them to their Companies

**Fri, Sep 3, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

3<sup>rd</sup> Rest Camp at Petit Moulin Farm. Furnish working parties of 400 men but heavy rain prevents work being carried out

**Sat, Sep 4, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

4<sup>th</sup> Rest Camp at Petit Moulin Farm. Wet day. Lieut [R.A.S.] Nash joins the Battalion & is posted to No 3 Coy

**Sun, Sep 5, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

5<sup>th</sup> Rest Camp at Petit Moulin Farm. Had Church parades in the morning and played a rugby match in the afternoon with the R. Bs.

**Mon, Sep 6, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

6<sup>th</sup> Rest Camp at Petit Moulin Farm. Drafts inspected this morning by Major Brig. General Milne Smith. Afterwards nos 1 & 2 companies were inspected in the attack. The regiment supplied a working party of 600 men at Rue du Bois in the evening.

**Tue, Sep 7, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

7<sup>th</sup> Rest Camp at Petit Moulin Farm. Had our sports today. Weather very fine and hot. [inserted: Lieut. [T.M.] Papineau went to England on leave]

**Wed, Sep 8, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

8<sup>th</sup> Rest Camp at Petit Moulin Farm. Had our boxing and wrestling bouts today. A/Captain [H.W.] Niven and A/Captain [R.O.] Earl went to England on leave.

**Thu, Sep 9, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

September 9<sup>th</sup> Petit Moulin Farm. Weather very hot. Still in rest camp at PETIT MOULIN FARM.

**Fri, Sep 10, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

10<sup>th</sup> Weather still very hot. [inserted: Lt. [C.B.] Cowley [517] reported back to the regiment] The regiment did very well at the brigade horse show and carried off four events and was second in three others.

**Sat, Sep 11, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

11<sup>th</sup> Weather still very hot. Still in rest camp at Petit Moulin Farm. Had our concert and prize giving for the sports this evening. Lt [C.E.] Crabbe left for England.

**Sun, Sep 12, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

12<sup>th</sup> Weather very warm. Regiment had church parade in the morning, and supplied a small working party in the afternoon.

**Mon, Sep 13, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

13<sup>th</sup> Companies went for route marches today but otherwise no activities, weather warm.

**Tue, Sep 14, 1915 PETIT MOULIN FARM, FRANCE**

14<sup>th</sup> The day was quiet and no parades were held until 6.15 in the evening when the regiment moved with the brigade on its way to a new area and were billeted at Pradelles, a village about 3 miles from Hazebrouck.

**Wed, Sep 15, 1915 PRADELLES, FRANCE**

Pradelles Sept. 15<sup>th</sup> Today was spent resting in billets and there is nothing of interest to record.

**Thu, Sep 16, 1915 PRADELLES, FRANCE**

Sept. 16<sup>th</sup> Company route marches were made by all the companies today. The weather still fine & warm.

**Fri, Sep 17, 1915 PRADELLES, FRANCE**

Sept. 17<sup>th</sup> Today the regiment paraded with the rest of the brigade to take leave of our Corps Commander, General Pulteney. The whole parade was of an exceptionally high order of merit and in saying goodbye, General Pulteney reminded the brigade that it was a regular one of the highest repute going to stiffen the front held by one of the new service armies sent across from England quite lately to take over part of the line hitherto held by our allies south of Arras in a most important part of the line. He said further that he considered us very worthy of the duty before us and hoped that the day would come when we would return to his command. In the meantime he wished us all Godspeed and the very best of good fortune. The brigade before marching off to battalion parades gave him three cheers.

**Sat, Sept 18, 1915 PRADELLES, FRANCE**

Sept. 18<sup>th</sup> Today the regiment marched into Hazebrouck and entrained at 6 o'clock in the afternoon for our new area in the neighbourhood of Amiens, which we expect to reach at an early hour tomorrow morning.

**Sun, Sep 19, 1915 TROOP TRAIN TO GILLAUCOURT, FRANCE**

Meri-court Sept. 19<sup>th</sup> Arrived at Gillaucourt about 6.30 this morning, after a very satisfactory journey as regards transport arrangements.

The unloading was completed without accident in 40 minutes from the time of arrival. The regiment then marched about 6 miles to Meri-court where we bivouacked & in a field just beyond the village. The march discipline was very good and there was no straggling.

We were joined about 6 p.m by 2 officers and 25 men of the 82<sup>nd</sup> Trench Howitzer Battery (Lt. Beard & Lt. Wilmot i/c) They are attached to the 80<sup>th</sup> Brigade and to the P.P.C.L.I. for quarters and rations.

**Mon, Sep 20, 1915 MERICOURT, FRANCE**

Froissesey 20.9.15. Arrived here at 4.15 p.m. today after a march of 2 hours from Pradelles. [Mericoourt] The Regiment is quartered in a line of huts along the right bank of the Somme, [inserted: Canal] Weather- fine and warm.

**Tue, Sep 21, 1915 FROISSEY, FRANCE**

21.9.15. The regiment remained in quarters all day. Colonel [R.T.] Pelly, Major [D.F.B.] Gray and one officer per company visited our new trenches. Weather fine and warm.

**Wed, Sep 22, 1915 FROISSEY, FRANCE**

22.9.15. Remained in quarters all day. A party of officers visited our new trenches. Weather fine & warm.

**Thu, Sep 23, 1915 FROISSEY, FRANCE**

23.9.15. Companies practiced in attack this morning. Furnished working party of 200 men to-night. Weather becoming stormy with thunder.

**Fri, Sep 24, 1915 FROISSEY, FRANCE**

24.9.15. Regiment remained in quarters all day. Companies worked out in extended order. Weather fine and warm. Working party of 200 men in evening.

**Sat, Sep 25, 1915 FROISSEY, FRANCE**

25.9.15. Moved to Cappy this afternoon. No 1 Company and half of No 2 Company (under ~~M~~ Lt. [C.A.] Pope and ~~M~~ Lt. [W.E.C.] Irwin) went into Trenches and No 4 company went into support at Eclusièrs. Weather was rainy and marching quite sticky.

**Sun, Sep 26, 1915 ECLUSIERS & CAPPY, FRANCE**

26.9.15. Nothing of interest to record today. Sent a working party of 40 men to dig new fire trenches in the evening. Weather was fair.

**Mon, Sep 27, 1915 ECLUSIERS & CAPPY, FRANCE**

27.9.15. This evening the remainder of the battalion (no 3 company and no 2 less 2 platoons) marched up to Eclusièrs to go into brigade support. One platoon from No 3 Company (LT. [E.F.] NEWCOMBE) and one from No 4 Company (LT [C.E.] COWLEY) went into supports with the 4th RIFLE BRIGADE at REDOUTE DES GOBELINES. Weather ~~very~~ cold and rainy.

**Tue, Sep 28, 1915 ECLUSIERS, FRANCE**

28.9.15. Nothing of importance today. Weather, cold and rainy.

### **Wed, Sep 29, 1915 ECLUSIERS, FRANCE**

29.9.15. Nothing of importance today. weather, cold and fine.

### **Thu, Sep 30, 1915 ECLUSIERS, FRANCE**

30.9.15. Two platoons which were in supports to the ~~Rifle Briga~~ 4th RIFLE BRIGADE were relieved today by the RIFLE BRIGADE and returned to ECLUSIERS. Weather cold & fine.

*[Note transcriber: during September 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel R.T. Pelly.]*

### **Fri, Oct 1, 1915 ECLUSIERS, FRANCE**

In trenches at FRISE 1.10.15 Today was quiet in the trenches and tonight no 3 company moved up to the fire trenches taking over the line on the left of the canal. No 2 Company moved to the trenches immediately on the right of the canal. Weather cold and fine.

### **Sat, Oct 2, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

2.10.15 Today nothing of interest was done. The men were busy improving the trenches in different ways and making new dugouts. Weather fine.

**Here!**

### **Sun, Oct 3, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

3.10.15 Today the enemy have been very active on the right of our trenches. There was quite a lot of sniping and a number of whizz bangs were fired into the trench occupied by no 4 company. LT. DE BALLINHARD [*J.C. [De Balinhard](#)*] and LT [*C.B.*] COWLEY were wounded. Otherwise no casualties. weather very fine.

### **Mon, Oct 4, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

4.10.15 A very quiet day, a detachment of the BLACK WATCH have come into the trenches for instruction by LT [*J.W.H.G.*] VAN DEN BERG. in machine gun work and a new detachment take their place tomorrow. weather, fine.

### **Tue, Oct 5, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

5.10.15 Another very quiet day. Two men slightly wounded in the CROWS NEST by a stray bullet. [inserted: NO A11096 [*Pte Turner H. 411096*]] (one from BLACK WATCH) weather, wet.

### **Wed, Oct 6, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

6.10.15 Very little activity today and the line begins to show the results of the work done on it, particularly the left half which is now in very good condition. Weather damp and unpleasant.

### **Thu, Oct 7, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

7.10.15 Today has been very quiet all along the line and there has been unusually little firing. LT [T.M.] PAPINEAU reported back for duty A patrol of 8 snipers & 2 grenadiers under Sgt CHRISTIE [J.M. 1576] went out late this afternoon from our left trench and made their way, crawling through the grass to the German side of the marsh, with a view to intercepting a German patrol believed to pass down the road from LA GRENOUILÈRE to CURLU about 7 p.m. each evening.

Our patrol got safely to the German side of the marsh and concealed themselves 20 yards from the road. Just after dusk a strong German Patrol came down the road, (consisting of 30 men under an officer) marching in fours and with a flanking party in the marsh. Sgt. CHRISTIE seeing himself hopelessly outnumbered and in danger of being cut off between the two parties resorted to bluff and ordered the Germans to "Hands Up."

The enemy not complying, our men opened rapid fire, the grenadiers at the same time throwing their bombs into the midst of the close mass of men in the road. The Germans threw themselves down and returned the fire of our men while the flanking party closed up. Our two right hand men faced around to meet them and one of our men killed a German who had come within a couple of yards of him.

The enemy after throwing 2 or 3 bombs which did no damage began to crawl away leaving several dead and some wounded men groaning in the road. Fearing a return of the enemy with reinforcements from LA GRENOUILLERE, Sgt. CHRISTIE took the opportunity of withdrawing, his whole party returning to our lines without a casualty.

Pte FLEMING [A.S. 14472] did splendid work with his bombs, remaining behind with Sgt CHRISTIE to cover the retreat of the remainder.

### **Fri, Oct 8, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

8.10.15 No activity today and everything has been very quiet. Weather warm.

### **Sat, Oct 9, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

9.10.15 Another quiet day. An attack was expected tonight and the men stood to till dawn. It did not materialize. The weather, mild.

### **Sun, Oct 10, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

10.10.15 The only unusual incident today is the appearance of a very large German flag on the ridge in front of the centre Trenches in the left half of our line. Weather, fine.

### **Mon, Oct 11, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

11.10.15 Very little activity today, Two men slightly wounded in NO 3 [inserted: & NO4 (NOS [A11036](#) [Pte McLellan W.G. 411036] [McG73](#)) [Pte Phillips E.M.]] company Trenches. Weather very mild.

**Tue, Oct 12, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

12.10.15 Everything quiet today except on the hill where the enemy destroyed The CROW'S NEST with Trench Mortars. (Casualties 1 killed (NO. [McG44](#) [*Pte Johnstone G.B.*] ) 2 wounded (NOS, [McG58](#) [*Pte Moyle W.D.*]; [McG181](#) [*Pte Ferguson V.S.*] ) weather very mild.

**Wed, Oct 13, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

13.10.15 Today nothing to record. Weather very mild.

**Thu, Oct 14, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

14.10.15 Today was featureless on the left. On the hill we were a good deal troubled by whizz bangs [inserted: and trench mortars] Casualties 1 killed (no [A10993](#) [*Pte Hodgson G.M. 410993*] ) and 1 wounded (no [825](#) [*Pte Brown G.H.*] ) weather warm & bright.

**Fri, Oct 15, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

15.10.15 Today our artillery shelled the German trenches on the hill and stopped the whizz bangs which have been frequent up till today. Weather, fine and mild.

**Sat, Oct 16, 1915 FRISE, FRANCE**

16.10.15 Marched to Morcourt tonight after a very good relief by the Cambridgeshire Regiment, completed at 7 p.m. The battalion left the ARTILLERY DUG OUTS about 9 p.m. and made its first halt just up the road from the FROISSY BRIDGE and the second halt at PROYARD.

On arrival at MORCOURT we found MAJOR [A.H.] GAULT and LTS [P.V.] CORNISH, [G.C.] McDONALD, [P] MOLSON, McKENZIE [*P. MacKenzie*], and [G.S.] CURRY, who had just arrived from the base at SHORNCLIFF [*Shornecliffe*] for duty.

The march was well carried out and only 6 men were unable to finish with the battalion on time. A man was [inserted: found] drowned in the Canal at FRISE today, [crossed out: (No )] PTE [WATTERSON](#) [*Pte Waterson J. 54*] [inserted: who had been missing for 10 days.] Weather fine & cold.

**Sun, Oct 17, 1915 MORCOURT, FRANCE**

17.10.15 In billets all day. weather fine.

**Mon, Oct 18, 1915 MORCOURT, FRANCE**

18.10.15 In billets all day. weather fine and cold.

**Tue, Oct 19, 1915 MORCOURT, FRANCE**

19.10.15 Working parties began today. Nos 1 & 2 Companies went road making at the junction of the roads between ~~Proya~~ PROYARD and MERICOURT. Nos 3 & 4 Companies had battalion parade this afternoon. Weather fine and cold.

**Wed, Oct 20, 1915 MORCOURT, FRANCE**

20.10.15 Nos 3 & 4 Companies carried on with the road building started by 1 & 2 yesterday. The battalion is standing by. weather fine and cool.

**Thu, Oct 21, 1915 MORCOURT, FRANCE**

21.10.15 In billets all day and no working parties. Weather, fine and cool.

**Fri, Oct 22, 1915 MORCOURT, FRANCE**

22.10.15 Still in billets, battalion parade this afternoon, LT. S.F.A. MARTIN [203] reported back for duty today. Weather, very fine.

**Sat, Oct 23, 1915 MORCOURT, FRANCE**

23.10.15 Had the battalion practising in attack this morning and remained in billets during the rest of the day. Weather fine and cold.

**Sun, Oct 24, 1915 MORCOURT, FRANCE**

24.10.15 Left ~~Morcourt~~ MORCOURT at 8.15 a.m. and marched to BOVES  
The march was well carried out and about 20 men could not finish on time mostly on account of a new issue of boots, Route WARFUSÉE-ABANCOURT-VILLERS BRETONNEUX  
POINT 49. – POINT 60 BOVES. (MAP AMIENS 12 1/80.000) Weather variable.

**Mon, Oct 25, 1915 BOVES, FRANCE**

25.10.15 Left BOVES this morning and marched to ~~Ferrier~~ FERRIERES, (7.45 A.M. to 12 A.M. noon) The march was made, in good order with 200 yard interval between companies and 10 yards between platoons. Route Cagny CAGNY, SALEUX, FERRIERES. Weather overcast and cold.

**Tue, Oct 26, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

26.10.15 Spent day in billets and apart from an escaped observation balloon which landed near our billets there is nothing of interest to record. weather very fine and cool.

**Wed, Oct 27, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

27.10.15 In billets all day, weather unsettled.

**Thu, Oct 28, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

28.10.15 In billets all day, weather rainy.

**Fri, Oct. 29, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

29.10.15 This morning the battalion practised an advance guard in attack. Weather very fine.

**Sat, Oct 30, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

30.10.15 Today was spent in billets with company training. Weather very fine.

**Sun, Oct 31, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

31.10.15 In billets, parade cancelled on account of weather which is rainy.

*[Note transcriber: during October 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel R.T. Pelly.]*

**Mon, Nov 1, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

FERRIERES 1.11.15 Nothing to record today. All parades cancelled weather rainy and cold.

**Tue, Nov 2, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

2.11.15 Parades cancelled on account of rain. LT ~~Papineau~~ [T.M.] PAPINEAU went to hospital sick.

**Wed, Nov 3, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

3.11.15 Company in attack this morning and afternoon was free as the sports were postponed. weather very fine.

**Thu, Nov 4, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

4.11.15 Companies carried on with private parades today, weather fine.

**Fri, Nov 5, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

5.11.15 Parades cancelled today, weather rainy.

**Sat, Nov 6, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

6.11.15 Battalion worked out in attack this morning. In the afternoon we had our battalion sports. The weather was very fine and cold.

**Sun, Nov 7, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

7.11.15 Church parades this morning, weather showery.

**Mon, Nov 8, 1915 FERRIERES, FRANCE**

FERRIERES 8.11.15 Today marks an epoch in the history of the regiment as they have left the 27th Division and gone to FLIXECOURT. The companies fell in at 8.15 a.m. and marched to the battalion parade ground where they formed up in mass to hear the parting words of the Brigadier (Brigadier General SMITH) The divisional band came to play us off and afterwards led us quite a distance as we marched away from the 27th Division of which we had so happily formed a part during the last 10 months. Among the officers and men there was a very marked feeling that this parade meant the loss of old friends with whose viewpoint and traditions they had been in absolute accord.

General Smith, in his farewell said it was a day he had never wished to see. The 80th Brigade had been unique, he said, in having five units to compose it and in having remained unchanged since its inception. Also he considered it unique in having preserved such a perfect harmony between its parts. Although he had not had pleasure of commanding it from the first he had had that honour during the most critical periods of its existence, especially those terrible days – the Second Battle of Ypres – when against tremendous odds the brigade had stood firm and Princess Patricias, Canadian Light Infantry by their dogged resistance had made a reputation that would never die in the Annals of the British Army. He had hoped that some day it would have been his lot to command the same brigade when it would encounter the enemy under more equal conditions. Then he was confident what the result would [inserted: have] been and the old brigade would have given such an account of itself that the memory of those ~~gallant~~ who had fallen so gallantly at Ypres would have been amply avenged. This hope would never now be realized and the regiment was going from him and the 80th Brigade for good. He felt it a very keen loss but he was sure whoever might be their commander, or comrades, and whatever might be the line, Princess Patricias Canadian Light Infantry would be worthy of their past record and the best traditions of the 80th Brigade, He wished them all good fortune and Godspeed whatever their lot may be.

Major Gault in reply thanked General Smith for the way he had spoken of the regiment and on its behalf expressed the appreciation felt. He reminded him of how proud we had all been to form a part of the 80th Brigade and how cordial had been our relations with all since the start. Whatever our lot might be, it would [inserted: be] our most earnest endeavour to live up to the opinions which the General had expressed and to bear with us unimpaired the traditions upon which the 80th Brigade had so nobly stood.

He wished on behalf of himself, the officers, non-commissioned officers and men to wish General Smith, the 80th Brigade and the 27th Division the most cordial wishes for all good fortune and to assure him that their memory would always be fresh in our minds. Three cheers were then given for General Smith, the band played “Auld Lang Syne” and the regiment started on its way. Along the road there were many heartfelt greetings and good luck wishes from men of the 80th Brigade.

It would be very difficult for one who has not been with the regiment for several months back to appreciate the importance of this change. Those who had the honour of sharing in the great days last spring feel a loss almost irreparable, while the sympathetic bond which united all in the 80th Brigade will probably never be replaced by our new associations ever so happy. Tonight the past lies behind in the detached light of history and before us lies a new arena in which the traditions

and all the glory that was Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry must again be established and maintained.

**Tue, Nov 9, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE**

**Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

FLIXECOURT 9.11.15 Battalion parade this afternoon and presentation of prizes. Weather showery.

**Wed, Nov 10, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE**

**Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

10.11.15 Company parades, weather rainy.

**Thu, Nov 11, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE**

**Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

11.11.15 Company parades, weather rainy.

**Fri, Nov 12, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE**

**Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

12.11.15 Parades called off on account of rain

**Sat, Nov 13, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE**

**Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

13.11.15 Parade in morning was a route march and in the afternoon battalion drill, weather, very unsettled. [inserted: Lt. Gen Milne motored to Flixecourt to bid goodbye to the Officers.]

**Sun, Nov 14, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE**

**Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

14.11.15 Church parade this morning. Weather cold & fine

**Mon, Nov 15, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE**

**Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

15.11.15 Route march this morning and this afternoon the battalion made an instructional attack, weather snowing and later fine and cold.

**Tue, Nov 16, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE**

**Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

16.11.15 Battalion Parade practising Artillery Formations & extensions previous to the attack.

**Wed, Nov 17, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE****Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

17.11.15 Snow fall of about 1" ½ during night & early morning. Battalion Parade same movements as 16-11-15.

**Thu, Nov 18, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE****Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

18.11.15 Heavy snow until 10 a.m. Battalion Parade Ceremonial Parade

**Fri, Nov 19, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE****Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

FLIXECOURT 19.11.15 Battalion Parade practise Ceremonial drill

**Sat, Nov 20, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE****Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

20.11.15 Battalion Parade Ceremonial, march past etc. before 3/Army School of Instruction.

**Sun, Nov 21, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE****Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

21.11.15 Church Parade in front of Chateau

**Mon, Nov 22, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE****Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

22.11.15 Nos 1, 2 & 3 Coys: with the Students of the 3/Army School acting as an extra platoon to each Company, practise the attack

**Tue, Nov 23, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE****Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

23.11.15 Nos 1,2 & 3 Coys lent to the 3/Army School to practise the Attack Officers & N.C.Os supplied by the Students at the School

**Wed, Nov 24, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE****Instructional Battalion, Third Army Officers' School**

24.11.15 The same as 23/11/15 Received orders at 5 p.m. for the Bn to entrain at 9 a.m. at Pont Remy for Northern Area.

**Thu, Nov 25, 1915 FLIXECOURT, FRANCE**

25.11.15 The Bn left Flixecourt at 6 a.m. marched to Pont Remy, 9 miles, arrived 9.30 a.m. entrained & departed at 12.08 a.m. arrived Caestre at 9.30 p.m. Met at the station by Lieut: Gen: Alderson C.B. and the band of the 1<sup>st</sup> Divn. C.E.F. Marched to billets at Flêtre, about 1½ miles, arriving 11.15 p.m, headed by the Dival Band. Whilst at Flixecourt a Bn mess was formed, with much success, at the Chateau by kind permission of Mon. Saint. The regiment received the greatest kindness from Col: Kentish & the officers of the 3/Army School who on our hurried departure took over all the surplus stores from the Officers Mess, Q.M. stores, & regimental Canteen.

The 3<sup>rd</sup> Army School drum & fife band played the regiment from Flixecourt to Pont Remy & Col. Kentish accompanied the regiment to the station. The School gave the Hd. Qrs. Officers breakfast at 5 a.m.

### **Fri, Nov 26, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

26.11.15 Heavy [inserted: snow] storm in the morning.

### **Sat, Nov 27, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

27.11.15 Hard frost.

### **Sun, Nov 28, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

[*Note transcriber : there is no entry for this date.*]

### **Mon, Nov 29, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

29.11.15 Battalion Parade p.m.

### **Tue, Nov 30, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

30.11.15 Battalion was inspected at 11 a.m. by Lt. Gen: Alderson. C.B.

[*Note transcriber: during November 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel R.T. Pelly.*]

### **Wed, Dec 1, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 1/12/15 Lt. Gen. Alderson C.B. assisted by Major Beattie D.S.O. judged the Transport for the best kept teams, & harness:- Class Draft horses 1<sup>st</sup> 1034 Pte A. Little. 2<sup>nd</sup> 51082 Pte. C. Bunting. [[Bunting, Fred](#)] Class Long line 1<sup>st</sup> 662 Pte. T. Allen. Class. Pack 1<sup>st</sup> 174 Pte. B.H. Todd. [[Todd, Herbert B.](#)] 2<sup>nd</sup> Pte. T. Rose  
Battalion parade in the afternoon

### **Thu, Dec 2, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 2/12/15 Battalion Route March in the morning

**Fri, Dec 3, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 3/12/15 Rain all day

**Sat, Dec 4, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 4/12/15 Rain all day. Lt [P.B.] Tabernacle [1703] was wounded by bomb while attending course & sent to Base

**Sun, Dec 5, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 5/12/15 Rain all day. Draft of 138 men arrived from base and were posted to Companies making our parade state 31 Officers 1008 other ranks.

**Mon, Dec 6, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

[Note transcriber : there is no entry for this date.]

**Tue, Dec 7, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 7/12/15 Lt Col [H.C.] Buller D.S.O. arrived from England and assumed Command of the Regiment relieving Major Pelly who had commanded since May 18<sup>th</sup>

**Wed, Dec 8, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 8/12/15 Rained all day

**Thu, Dec 9, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 9/12/15 Lt Col Buller inspected the Transport in afternoon

**Fri, Dec 10, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 10/12/15 Rain all day, Battalion marched to Baths at Bailleul & returned very late.

**Sat, Dec 11, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 11/12/15 Battalion photographed by Cinema operator in morning Transport also taken

**Sun, Dec 12, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 12/12/15 Sunday, no parades, Football match in afternoon with 42<sup>nd</sup> Canadian Btn, is cancelled on account of rain

**Mon, Dec 13, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 13/12/15 In billets. wet day

**Tue, Dec 14, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 14/12/15 Company parades in morning, rain afternoon

**Wed, Dec 15, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 15/12/15 Wet day, no parades

**Thu, Dec 16, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 16/12/15 Battalion parade in the morning under Major [R.T.] Pelly who said good by to the Regiment that he had commanded since May 18<sup>th</sup>. Major Pelly proceeded to England tonight to take command of the 8<sup>th</sup> Royal Irish Fusiliers.

The Transport was inspected by General Mercer in the morning and he praised the men on their showing and said it was the best Transport he had seen since coming to this country.

**Fri, Dec 17, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 17/12/15 Battalion Route March in the morning, afternoon wet

**Sat, Dec 18, 1915 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 18/12/15 Company parades in morning. Football match in afternoon.

**Sun, Dec 19, 1915 LA CLYTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 19.12.15 Battalion marched from billets and took over tents from Royal Canadian Regiment near LA CLYTE [LA CLYTTE] about 10 miles from FLETRE. Camp very wet and muddy. Furnished 35 N.C.Os & men as guard to KEMMEL defences, Lt [C.A.] Pope in charge. Day fine and clear. No 2 Company occupy two farms at HELLEBLAST. [HALLEBAST].

**Mon, Dec 20, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 20.12.15 Furnished 30 N.C.Os & men as permanent road control at HYDE PARK CORNER, WESTOUTRE, LOCRE wet day

**Tue, Dec 21, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 21.12.15 Furnished working parties in morning, cancelled at night on account of rain.

Battalion furnishes 450 men per day as working parties

**Wed, Dec 22, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 22.12.15 Very wet, working parties go out

**Thu, Dec 23, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 23.12.15 Working parties as usual, wet in the morning, finer at night

**Fri, Dec 24, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 24.12.15 Working parties out morning and evening. very wet. Change No. 3 & 4 Coys to huts 500 yards west of Head Quarters. Rum issue at night.

**Sat, Dec 25, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 25.12.15 Working parties cancelled for Christmas day, 75 men went to BAILLEUL for Communion Service in morning

**Sun, Dec 26, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 26.12.15 Working parties morning and evening, weather better high wind

**Mon, Dec 27, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 27.12.15 Usual working parties, wet at midday fine in evening

**Tue, Dec 28, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 28.12.15 Working parties as usual, weather better, no rain

**Wed, Dec 29, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 29.12.15 Working parties as usual, afternoon LA CLYTE was shelled and three men were wounded  
weather fine

**Thu, Dec 30, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

LA CLYTE 30.12.15 Working parties in morning, afternoon working parties cancelled owing to move next day

**Fri, Dec 31, 1915 LA CLYTTE, FRANCE**

FLETRE 31.12.15 Battalion moved to old billets at FLETRE being relieved at LA CLYTE [LA CLYTTE] by Lord Strathcona Horse, Permanent Road Controls & Kemmel Hill Defences relieved by same Regiment

*[Note transcriber: until December 15, 1915 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel R.T. Pelly. He was struck off strength to command the 8th Battalion Royal Irish (Imperial) and was succeeded by Lieutenant-Colonel H.C. Buller.]*

# PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY



*(Thierens Family Archives)*

## **WAR DIARIES 1914 -1919**

**Transcribed by Michael Thierens, 1914, 1915 and part of 1916 proofread and commented on by Donna Walker & Ross Toms. The complete War Diary was proofread by Stephen K. Newman, who also made valuable suggestions regarding lay-out and provided much additional information on individual soldiers and diligently researched and pin pointed the locations of the Regiment.**

[CEFStudies@EeMike.nl](mailto:CEFStudies@EeMike.nl)

© Michael Thierens 2008.

# 1916

### **Sat, Jan 1, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 1/1/16 The Battalion now forms part of the 7<sup>th</sup> Canadian Infantry Brigade commanded by Brigadier General A.C. MACDONELL D.S.O. The following Units form the 7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B. ROYAL CANADIAN REGIMENT., 42<sup>nd</sup> BATTALION, 49<sup>th</sup> BATTALION., & P.P.C.L.I.

The 7<sup>th</sup> Canadian Infantry Brigade forms part of the 3<sup>rd</sup> CANADIAN DIVISION Commanded by MAJOR GENERAL M.S. MERCER D.S.O. C.B. Heavy wind & some rain.

**Sun, Jan 2, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 2/1/16 Weather damp. Company parades

**Mon, Jan 3, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 3/1/16 Battalion route march in the morning, day fine.

**Tue, Jan 4., 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 4/1/16 Company Commanders under Major A.H. GAULT D.S.O. visit KEMMEL DEFENCES day fine

**Wed, Jan 5, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 5/1/16 Band of Royal Artillery give concert in the afternoon

**Thu, Jan 6, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 6/1/16 Battalion Route march in afternoon to BAILLEUL under Major [Agar] ADAMSON and attend entertainment given for them weather fine

**Fri, Jan 7, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

[Note transcriber : there is no entry for this date.]

**Sat, Jan 8, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 8/1/16 Fine. Final of inter company Football competition No 3 v No 4 Coy, No 3 Coy won 3-2 after playing two extra times of 10 minutes each way. Maj. Gen Mercer was present watching the game.

**Sun, Jan 9, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

FLÈTRE 9/1/16 Bn marched to Wood Farm Dranoutre into ~~Div~~ Bde Reserve. Started 6 a.m. route via Meteren and Bailleul. Relieved the 4<sup>th</sup> Bn. Arrived 10.15 a.m.

**Mon, Jan 10, 1916 DRANOUTRE, BELGIUM**

DRANOUTRE 10/1/16 Bn. supplied considerable digging parties for front line & supports. Several HdQr officers visited the trenches.

**Tue, Jan 11, 1916 DRANOUTRE, BELGIUM**

DRANOUTRE 11/1/16 Digging parties, O.C. Coys visited the trenches. Rain p.m.

**Wed, Jan 12, 1916 DRANOUTRE, BELGIUM**

DRANOUTRE 12/1/16 Bn. fell in at 5 p.m. Marched to Trenches No 1 in D3 & D4, No 2 in 14, 14 B, 15, 15 S, & E; No. 3 in R.E. farm, No 4 in Tea Farm. Relief complete by 8.15 p.m.

**Thu, Jan 13, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

TRENCHES 13/1/16 Trenches very fair considerable water in D 3 & D 4. Slight shelling behind S 15. Pte. Sawyer [J. 876] H.Q. Coy Signal Linesman wounded slight shrapnel.

**Fri, Jan 14, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

TRENCHES 14/1/16 Very quiet large fatigue parties from 3 & 4 Coys working on front line & supports. Sgt: Landels [B.H. 475913] & fatigue party from 4 Coy: started work on drain from D 3.

**Sat, Jan 15, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 15/1/16 Bn. H.Q. shelled about 1.00 p.m. with by 4.1" Howz close but no damage, 15 S again shelled no damage. Asked for retaliation as front line was shelled rather heavily, retaliation consisted of 8" Howz & 2 Batteries of 18 pounders results excellent. No casualties. Our trench mortar fire 9 – 9 lb shells into the enemy front line, & we put over 60 Rifle Grenades & 1000 Rds from M.G's . no retaliation.

**Sun, Jan 16, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, FRANCE**

IN THE TRENCHES 16/1/16 Lieut. Newcombe. E.F. wounded in neck by rifle grenade 11 a.m., taken straight out to Bailleul. R.E. Farm & fields round it heavily shelled by 5.9" Howz. 35 shells round the farm & 7 into support breastworks no damage done at all. Sgt. Landels [B.H. 475913] completed the drain & D3 & D4 are quite dry, drain tiled. Relieved at 7.25 p.m. by 42<sup>nd</sup> Bn marched into DRANOUTRE into Divl Reserve.

**Mon, Jan 17, 1916 DRANOUTRE, BELGIUM**

DRANOUTRE 17/1/16 Resting, wet p.m. 10 officers attended lecture at Bailleul on the Battle of Loos. The following Extract from the London Gazette of Jan. /14/16 D.S.O. Lt: Col: R.T. Pelly; D.C.M. 1247 L/Sgt: E. Bowler, 1346 Pte. G. Bronquest, 1576 L/Cpl: J.M. Christie, 74 Sgt: F.W. Larkin, 650 C.Q.M.S. G.L. McDonell [McDonnell], 1158 Sgt: H. MacKenzie [McKenzie], 51883 L/Cpl: A.G. Pearson, [Pearson, [51383](#)] was published in Bn. Orders 17/1/16.

**Tue, Jan 18, 1916 DRANOUTRE, BELGIUM**

18/1/16 Rain.

**Wed, Jan 19, 1916 DRANOUTRE, BELGIUM**

19/1/16 Fine, Concert in Y.M.C.A. Tent.

**Thu, Jan 20, 1916 DRANOUTRE, BELGIUM**

20/1/16 Relieved 42<sup>nd</sup> Bn in Trenches. Left DRANOUTRE at 4.30 p.m. Relief complete 7.30 p.m. 3 & 4 Coys in Front line, 1 Coy at R.E. Farm and 2 Coy at Tea Farm

**Fri, Jan 21, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

TRENCHES 21/1/16 Some shelling and rifle grenade firing. McG142 Pte Ramsden. F.C. wounded by Rifle Grenade

A bomb accidentally ~~occurred~~ exploded in the bomb-waistcoat of [inserted: 51289] Pte Kelly, J.K., killing the bearer and severely wounding 23561 Pte O'Keefe A. and 22572 [22752] Pte Hanlon W[H], & slightly wounding 1716 L/Sgt: Popey, W.J., and 22897 Pte: McCormack A.C. who remained at duty; all these men belonged to the Grenade Section

**Sat, Jan 22, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 22/1/16 Very quiet & very little shelling.

**Sun, Jan 23, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 23/1/16 Very quiet very foggy early am & from 4 p.m. Gas Alert called for S.S.E. wind. 23561 Pte. O'Keefe. A. died of wounds in Bailleul Hospital

**Mon, Jan 24, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 24/1/16 Quiet very little artillery fire. Relieved by 42<sup>nd</sup> Bn relief complete at 7.35 p.m. H.Q, 1 & 2 Coys to Wood Farm, 3 to Pettawawa, and 4 to Screen Farm in Brigade Reserve.

**Tue, Jan 25 to Fri, Jan 28, 1916 DRANOUTRE, FRANCE**

25/1/16 to 28/1/16 Weather fine & very mild. Bn found 400 men per 24 hours for working parties in Front line & supports, No Casualties.

**Sat, Jan 29, 1916 DRANOUTRE, FRANCE**

29/1/16 Relieved by the 1<sup>st</sup> Bn C.E.F. and marched to billets near Flêtre H.Q at R.31.d. 4.2. started at 11.30 a.m. route via Dranoutre, Croix de Poperinghe, St Jans Capel and Schaexken and Le Quatre Fils d'Aymon, arrived 3.30 p.m. very good billets.

**Sun, Jan 30 & Mon, Jan, 31, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

30/1/16 Fine & warm. Coy training bombing etc.

31/1/16

*[Note transcriber: during January 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel H.C. Buller.]*

**Tue, Feb 1, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

Fletre 1/2/16 Fine warm. Maj. Genl. Mercer. C.B. inspected the transport at 2 p.m. and at the close congratulated the C.O and T.O. on their splendid condition.

**Wed, Feb 2, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

2/2/16 Fine warm Coy: training

**Thu, Feb 3, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

3/2/16 Bn: Sports in field at Bn: Hd: Qrs & H.R.H. Prince Arthur of Connaught attended for a short time.

**Fri, Feb 4, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

4/2/16 7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B. route march from R.19.a.5.2. (Mont des Cats) to Godewaersvelde, to Bertenaire Kemmelhof, Caestre to Thieushouk back to billets.

**Sat, Feb 5, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

5/2/16 7 C.I.B. Sports at MONT des CATS Major Genl. Mercer: C.B. and Br Genl McDonald [*MacDonell*] attended. Transport won FIRST Prize for 4 Horse Teams in Limber Waggons, 2<sup>nd</sup> Prize Long Rain driving, V.C. Race 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup>, Hurry up competition 2<sup>nd</sup>.

**Sun, Feb 6, 1916 FLÈTRE, FRANCE**

6/2/16 Marched to LOCRE to go into Bde Reserve departed 8.45 a.m. Route via Les 4 Fils d'Aymon, Schaexken, La Leviette, Mont Noir to LOCRE arrived 11.30 a.m. Billets poor.

**Mon, Feb 7, 1916 LOCRE, FRANCE**

7/2/16 Marched into Trenches in front of KEMMEL. Relieved the 31<sup>st</sup> Bn C.E.F. Relief complete 7.30 p.m. Bn Hd Qrs Doctor's House in Kemmel Village. No 1 & 2 Coys in Front line No 2 in S.P.11 and S.P.10 one Platoon each of 3 & 4 in Port Arthur Farm. 3 Platoons of 3 Coy in Chateau. Edgar is still there & his mate with him.

**Tue, Feb 8 to Thu, Feb 10, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

Trenches at Kemmel 8/2/16 to 10/2/16 Very quiet indeed no shelling, very little rifle fire & nothing of note. Trenches very good & very comfortable. Only one casualty & that on a working party behind the line at night

**Fri, Feb 11, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

11/2/16 Relieved by the 49<sup>th</sup> Bn: Relief complete by 7.30 p.m.

**Sat, Feb 12, 1916 KEMMEL, BELGIUM**

12/2/16 Very fine. Heavy Bombardment up North. Much Aeroplane Activity.

**Sun, Feb 13, 1916 KEMMEL, BELGIUM**

13/2/16 Battalion in Bde Reserve in Kemmel Shelters. Furnished Working Parties Etc.

**Mon, Feb 14, 1916 KEMMEL, BELGIUM**

14/2/16 As Feb 13th. Very windy.

**Tue, Feb 15, 1916 KEMMEL, BELGIUM**

15/2/16 Wet and windy. Relieved the 49<sup>th</sup> Bn in Kimmel Trenches; relief complete by 7-5 P.M. Considerable heavy gun fire.

**Wed, Feb 16, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

16/2/16 Windy, some rain, otherwise uneventful. Supplying 145 men per day to 6<sup>th</sup> Field Co Can Engineers for work parties, besides our own work in front line.

**Thu, Feb. 17, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

17/2/16 All quiet, finer. Lieut [J.WH.G.] Van den Berg sniped between H.1.A. whilst reconnoitering Machine Gun emplacements. Both 3 and 4 Coys busy strengthening their wire.

**Fri, Feb 18, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

18/2/16 Wet. Artillery quiet. Considerable sniping from Peckham and other points along the line. Put out a considerable amount of wire in front of front line trenches. One man wounded on covering party.

**Sat, Feb 19, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

19/2/16 Sniping very active. One Corporal killed and man slightly wounded by snipers located at Peckham. Our men cannot reach the enemy at this point; and their Fort, which is very strong, needs smashing up with big guns. Hear that the man wounded last night has died of wounds.

**Sun, Feb 20, 1916 LOCRE, BELGIUM**

20/2/16 Battalion in Divisional Reserve at Locre. Fine. Cold. The whole Battalion was inoculated for Para-Typhoid and therefore out of action for 48 hours.

**Mon, Feb 21, 1916 LOCRE, BELGIUM**

21/2/16 Fine, cold. N.E. wind. A number of officers attended lectures in Bailleul. Subject "Battle of Loos." Many officers and men suffering from effects of yesterdays inoculation

**Tue, Feb 22, 1916 LOCRE, BELGIUM**

22/2/16 Coys. Bathing. Snow and frost. Gas alert for N.E. wind.

**Wed, Feb 23, 1916 LOCRE, BELGIUM**

23/2/16 Snow and hard frost. Relieved 49<sup>th</sup> Bn in Kimmel Trenches. Relief complete at 7-55 P.M. Transport had great difficulty owing to slippery state of the roads, and had to go round by Dranoutre and Lindenhoek.

**Thu, Feb 24, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

24/2/16 Hard frost and more snow. All quiet.

**Fri, Feb 25, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

25/2/16 Still freezing – otherwise normal. [C.E.] Capt Cooper-Cole (C.A.M.C.) Medical Officer P.P.C.L.I. badly hit by rifle bullet. (Location Via Guellia)

**Sat, Feb 26, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

26/2/16 Very quiet, a little warmer. There must have been a relief in the enemy lines since our last tour as they are so peaceful.

**Sun, Feb 27, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

27/2/16 Arranged strafe of Rifle Grenades, Trench Mortars and Artillery. Fired 24 Rifle Grenades at 3.45 P.M. without response. At 4 P.M. the Trench Mortars in G.1. and G.4 opened up - - so did Minnie. The Guns sent over 6 rounds for every Minnie received. The enemy Battery started firing with 77 mm. but most of them landed in the open fields. The Boche had two Minnies, a heavy and a medium. One heavy smashed in a bay of G.1. and a few 77 mm. also landed in the salient. Net results:- The Boche wasted 80 or 100 rounds of 77 mm. H.E. and a dozen or so Minnies. Our casualties nil:- Our loss, a small ~~ammount of~~ amount of ammunition, a few sandbags and a little labour.

The 53 Battery Trench Mortar under Lieut Thurston did much good work, and was ably assisted by the 85<sup>th</sup> Batt R.F.A. also the A/131, 4.5 inch Howitzer Battery, who knocked the enemy's parapet about considerably. A big gun behind Kimmel also joined in the fun and fired off Waeschuite [*Wyttschaete*] whether from sport or unintentionally is not known.

**Mon, Feb 28, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

28/2/1916 Relieved by 49<sup>th</sup> Bn; relief complete by 7 P.M. Marched to Kimmel Shelters.

**Tue, Feb 29, 1916 KEMMEL, BELGIUM**

29/2/16 Quiet, work parties.

[*Note transcriber: during February 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel H.C. Buller.*]

**Wed, Mar 1, 1916 KEMMEL, BELGIUM**

1-3-16 Bn bathing at Locre. Work parties cancelled because of strafe up North.

**Thu, Mar 2, 1916 KEMMEL, BELGIUM**

2-3-16 Heavy bombardment up North. Work parties P.M. only.

**Fri, Mar 3, 1916 KEMMEL, BELGIUM**

3-3-16 Relieved 49<sup>th</sup> Bn in Kimmel Trenches, relief complete at 7.15 P.M. No 3 Coy, on the right. No 4 Coy on the left. No 2 in Chateau and S.P.10. One Platoon of B. Coy 52nd Bn with each Coy for instruction. 29th Bn on the right. R.C R on our left. Heavy Rain.

**Sat, Mar 4, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

4-3-16 Everything normal. Weather bad and heavy snow. B. Coy 52<sup>nd</sup> Bn relieved D. Coy. No 2 Coy took over F4 and F5, and half Regent St Dugouts from 29<sup>th</sup> Bn. Heavy snow and thaw, trenches very wet and a lot of work to do on them.

**Sun, Mar 5, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

5-3-16 More snow, fine at times. Owing to a Rifle Grenade hitting a Boche brazier Minnie became active and knocked down some parapet. We replied with 60 lb Trench Mortar, also 85th Battery and 4.5 Howitzer and got in the last word.

**Mon, Mar 6, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

6-3-16 All normal, snowing, Pte Parrott [*R.E.* 411109] buried in Kimmel Chateau Cemetery.

**Tue, Mar 7, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

7-3-16 All quiet, more snow.

**Wed, Mar 8, 1916 KEMMEL DEFENCES, BELGIUM**

8-3-16 Fine. Relieved by 28<sup>th</sup> Bn: Relief rather late owing to the other Bn having had to march in from rest billets; complete by 8-15 P.M. Marched into Divl, Reserve at Locre. Billets very dirty.

**Thu, Mar 9, 1916 LOCRE, BELGIUM**

9-3-16 Fine. Baths.

**Fri, Mar 10, 1916 LOCRE, BELGIUM**

10-3-16 Marched to Roukloshille by Mont Noir and Schaexken, left Locre at 1-45 P.M. arrived billets 4-00 P.M.

**Sat, Mar 11, 1916 LE ROUKLOSHILLE, BELGIUM**

11-3-16 Coy Parades.

**Sun, Mar 12, 1916 LE ROUKLOSHILLE, BELGIUM**

12-3-16 Service by Capt Ball chaplain to 49<sup>th</sup> Bn at 12 noon followed by Holy Communion.

**Mon, Mar 13, 1916 LE ROUKLOSHILLE, BELGIUM**

13-3-16 Coy Parades. Inter-platoon football.

**Tue, Mar 14, 1916 LE ROUKLOSHILLE, BELGIUM**

14-3-16 Coy Parades. Inter-platoon football.

**Wed, Mar 15, 1916 LE ROUKLOSHILLE, BELGIUM**

15-3-16 Bn route march nearly to Strazeele, then to Caestre back by Thieushook & Mont de Chats. Rugby Football final: No 4 v No 3 Coy. No 4 Coy won by 11 points to nil.

**Thu., Mar 16, 1916 LE ROUKLOSHILLE, BELGIUM**

16-3-16 Fine. Coy training. Football

**Fri., Mar 17, 1916 LE ROUKLOSHILLE, BELGIUM**

17-3-16 Fine. Coy training. Football. C.O. and Adjt went to Ypres to inspect trenches in Sanctuary Wood to be taken over by Bde.

**Sat., Mar 18, 1916 LE ROUKLOSHILLE, BELGIUM**

18-3-16 Inspection by Lt Gen Alderson in Football field at 2 P.M. Bn very steady.

**Sun., Mar 19, 1916 LE ROUKLOSHILLE, BELGIUM**

19-3-16 Very fine. Church Parade. Service by Capt Ball [*Padre-49<sup>th</sup> Bn*] at Noon.

**Mon., Mar 20, 1916 LE ROUKLOSHILLE, BELGIUM**

20-3-16 Marched to camp at Ouderdom left Roukloshille at 9-30 a.m. Arrived Camp D at 12.40 p.m. Warm and muggy.

**Tue, Mar 21, 1916 OUDERDOM, BELGIUM**

21-3-16 Relieved 3<sup>rd</sup> Bn Rifle Brigade in Railway Dugouts and Maple Copse by Zillebeke Lake.

**Wed, Mar 22, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

22-3-16 Wet and foggy, Quiet, 2 O.R. wounded.

**Thu, Mar 23, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

23-3-16 Very quiet. 1 O.R. wounded.

**Fri, Mar 24, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

24-3-16 Snow and cold. Some Artillery shelling round Transport Farm. [*Railway Dugouts*]

**Sat, Mar 25, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

25-3-16 Quite a lot of artillery activity on both sides. Relieved the 49<sup>th</sup> Bn in A11 & A12. B1 B2 & B3.

**Sun, Mar 26, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

26-3-16 Weather changeable: Sanctuary Wood heavily shelled, - Shrapnel and H.E., between 2 and 4 o'clock, otherwise quiet throughout the day.

**Mon, Mar 27, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

27-3-16 Heavy shelling heard in direction of St Eloi for about 3 hours. 4 to 7 a.m. Heavy shelling again heard in same direction towards noon, otherwise quiet on this front.

**Tue, Mar 28, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

28-3-16 Fine and clear: Transport Officer hit while passing through Ypres, on night of 27<sup>th</sup>. Another quiet day on this front. From observation post discovered by the sniping officer, numbers of Germans could be seen passing and repassing a certain point throughout the day; this point to be S.E. of Sterling Castle. Relieved on night of 28/29th by the 43rd Bn. - 9<sup>th</sup> Brigade. Relief occupied the whole night. Bn arriving Camp B at 8 a.m. 29th. Night very dark with a driving snow storm in the early morning. Found Camp to have been left in a disgraceful condition.

**Wed, Mar 29, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

29-3-16 Bn rested and cleaned up.

**Thu, Mar 30, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

30-3-16 Fatigues detailed to clean up Camp and programme of work drawn up.

**Fri, Mar 31, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

31-3-16 Drill in morning – Sports in afternoon. Maj [Agar] Adamson and Capt [H.W.] Niven returned from leave.

*[Note transcriber: during March 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel H.C. Buller.]*

**Sat, Apr 1, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

1-4-16 Battalion marched to Poperinghe for Baths, by companies.  
Drills and lectures.

**Sat, Apr 1 to Tue, Apr 4, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

1/4/16 to 4/4/16 In rest camp fine Coy: Parades etc.

**Wed, Apr 5, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

5/4/16 Moved over to C camp in H area

**Thu, Apr 6 to Wed, Apr 12, 1916 CAMP C, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

6/4/16 to 12/4/16 In Brigade reserve wet & cold most of the time found work parties of 150 men each night. Camp was shelled on evening of 7/4/16 one hut hit no damage done

**Wed, Apr 12, 1916 CAMP C, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

12/4/16 Relieved the 49<sup>th</sup> Bn in the Hooge trenches relief complete 1-15 am

**Thu, Apr 13, 1916 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

13/4/16 Snipers very active wet.

**Fri, Apr 14, 1916 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

14/4/16 Snipers active again and some shelling several casualties

**Sat, Apr 15, 1916 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

15/4/16 A little shelling wet.

**Sun, Apr 16, 1916 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

16/4/16 Some artillery and bombing.

**Mon, Apr 17, 1916 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

17/4/16 Aeroplane reconnaissance by enemy aeroplane very low fine

**Tue, Apr 18, 1916 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

18/4/16 Bn Hd Qrs at Half Way House shelled with 4.2" R.S.M [*Godfrey S. 1589*] killed by direct hit on dugout. Fine

**Wed, Apr 19, 1916 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

19/4/16 Enemy snipers not so active. Some shelling of Half way house and R no damage, heavy retaliation by our artillery and heavies Heavy ennemy bombardment on both sides in evening & small infantry attacks. Very quiet on our front.

**Thu, Apr 20, 1916 HOOGE, BELGIUM**

20/4/16 A few shells a hit on R.S.8. 3 men wounded. Relieved by 60<sup>th</sup> Bn relief complete at 2.15 a.m. Total casualties in tour 16 killed & 45 wounded  
Trained back from the Asylum to Brandhoek and occupied camp D arriving at 7 a.m.

**Sat, Apr 22 to Sat, Apr 29, 1916 CAMP D, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

22/4/16 to 29/4/16 Rest. Coy parades, M.G. & Bomb courses 240 men out working every other night

**Sat, Apr 29, 1916, CAMP D, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

29/4/16 Bn. relieved the 5th C.M.R Bn in Railway Dugouts & Maple Copse complete 12.45 am 30/4/16. Bde Support.

**Sun, Apr 30, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

30/4/16 Very quiet fine. Gas attack at Vierstraat on night.

*[Note transcriber: during April 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel H.C. Buller.]*

**Mon, May 1, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

1/5/16 In Railway Dugouts Heavy shelling all round supports

**Tue, May 2, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

*[Note transcriber: there is no entry for May 2, 1916]*

**Wed, May 3 to Sun, May 7, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

1/3/16 to 1/7/16 Fine quiet

**Sun, May 7, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

7/5/16 Relieved 49<sup>th</sup> Bn in Sanctuary Wood Nos 1 & 2 Coys in Front line 3 & 4 in Supports HdQrs Maple Copse Good relief complete 10.15 p.m. Lieut [C.A.] Pope killed by rifle Grenade. 1 OR killed & 3 wounded

**Mon, May 8 & Tue, May 9, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

8/5/16 & 9/5/16 Quiet wet

**Wed, May 10, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

10/5/16 Left front line & supports shelled heavily from 4.30 am to 5.30 am no casualties. Retaliation effective. Fine.

**Thu, May 11, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

11/5/16 A good deal of shelling. Fine. 1 OR killed 1 O.R. wounded, 3 & 4 relieved 1 & 2 *[Companies]*

**Fri, May 12, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

12/5/16 Artillery & T.M. [*Trench Mortars*] active on 61 & 62 & supports 12 OR wounded

**Sat, May 13 & Sun, May 14, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

13/5/16 & 14/5/16 Some artillery activity, wet

**Mon, May 15, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

15/5/16 Quiet. Fine. Relieved by 43<sup>rd</sup> Bn complete 12.15 pm. Bn entrained & went to B camp. G area.

**Tue, May 16 to Tue, May 23, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

16/5/16 to 23/5/16 Resting. Very fine & hot. Sergt Carter 1<sup>st</sup> Bn Grenadier Guards carrying out instruction for Officers & NCOs & where possible with Companies.

**Tue, May 23 to Mon, May 29, 1916 CAMP F, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

23/5/16 to 29/5/16 Moved to Camp F Brigade Reserve H.Q. 2,3, 4 Coys at Camp F  
1 Coy at Belgian Chateau find work parties of 250 men each night. Each Coy does 2 days in Belgian Chateau in turn

**Tue, May 30, 1916 CAMP F, YPRES AREA, BELGIUM**

30/5/16 Very fine up to 30/5/16 then wet.

**Wed, May 31, 1916 CAMP F, YPRES AREA, BELGIUM**

31/5/16 Fine & hot. Relieved 49<sup>th</sup> Bn in Sanctuary Wood, Right Subsector of Left Sector. 1 & 2 Coys in front line 3 & 4 in Support

*[Note transcriber: during May 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel H.C. Buller.]*

**Thu, Jun 1, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

1/6/16 Considerable shelling in the morning on supports and headquarters' dug outs. Comparatively quiet in the afternoon. In the evening the enemy threw over a few trench mortars. Fine and warm

**Fri, Jun 2, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

2-6-16 At 8.30 am. the enemy began shelling our front line and supports. This gradually increased to an intense bombardment from H.E. shells and trench mortars. The bombardment lasted for five hours when it was lifted and an infantry attack followed. The enemy succeeded in capturing the front line of our right company No 1. The garrison having been almost annihilated. Our left company No 2 succeeded in holding their trench and stopped an enemy bombing attack. Our Supports held, on the right, the greater part of Warrington avenue and Lovers Lane to Border lane, and on the left, the "R" series of trenches. Our casualties were

heavy. In the evening the enemy evidently suspected a counter attack as they opened up rapid machine gun and rifle fire and an intense barrage in our rear. Water and food supply low.

**Sat, Jun 3, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

3-6-16 About midnight 2/3 [June] the enemy in the same manner showed nervousness and again at daybreak on the third when the barrage was kept up for about eighty-five minutes. The forty-ninth battalion made a counter attack from our trenches about nine am [a.m.] which was not successful being held up by machine gun and rifle fire. It resulted, however, in our improving our positions. The enemy shelled our positions considerably during the day and in the evening, as usual, showed considerable nervousness and fear of counter attacks by opening up their barrage of rifle, machine gun and shell fire.

**Sun, Jun 4, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

4-6-16 Shelling continued all day but our casualties were not severe. At daybreak the 43<sup>rd</sup> Bn came up on our right and the 60<sup>th</sup> on our left to relieve us but as it was too light the relief was postponed until evening when the 49<sup>th</sup> Bn and ourselves were relieved by the 60<sup>th</sup> and 43<sup>rd</sup> Bns. The battalion as relieved marched to the Asylum via the Lille gate and were conveyed to "C" camp by motor lorry.

**Mon., Jun 5, 1916 CAMP C, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

5-6-16 Rested at C. camp. Fine and warm

**Tue, Jun 6, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

6-6-16 Expected to march back to rest billets but had to stand by and be prepared to go back to trenches anytime. This was in consequence of an enemy attack at Hooze and north where they blew some mines. The S.O.S was taken off in the afternoon

**Wed, Jun 7, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

7-6-16 Marched back to rest billets north of Steenvoorde Via Poperinghe. after receiving only one hours notice to move, Major [D.F.B.] Gray was injured by [inserted: his horse] falling down on the pavé. Draft of 21 joined us.

**Thu, Jun 8, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

8-6-16 Rested. rain.

**Fri, Jun 9, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

9-6-16 Draft of two hundred and seventy-nine men arrived including the fifth University company.

**Sat, Jun 10, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

10-6-16 Draft of two hundred and fifty men arrived drawn mostly from fourth division and ~~fifty third battalion.~~

**Sun, Jun 11, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

11-6-16 Sunday and church parade.

**Mon, Jun 12, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

12-6-16 Guards instructors take hold and drill the battalion – rain.  
Draft of seven officers from fifty-third battalion arrived.

**Tue, Jun 13, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

13-6-16 Parades under Guard's instructors.

**Wed, Jun 14, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

14-6-16 The armies in France adopted the same time as ordered by a recent decree of the French Government. At 10 p.m the night of 14-15 the time was advanced sixty minutes, - 10 p.m. became 11 p.m. Parades under Guards' instructors and Company arrangements.

**Thu, Jun 15, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

15-6-16 A Regimental Revue was given by members of the Battalion at the Town Hall Steenvoorde. Capt. [H.E.] Pembroke the Pay Master was responsible for the arrangement of the concert which was a great success. One hundred men of Nos 1. 2. and 3 Coys were marched to the concert under [W.H.] Lieut Morris [410512].  
# 1742 A/R.S.M. M Allan and # 1150 Sgt. J. Dickie have been awarded the Military Medal.  
Capt. D.A. Clarke returned from Brigade duty and assumed command of No 2. Coy.

**Fri, Jun 16, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

16-6-16 Parades under Guards' Instructors. Special attention given to musketry. Bathing parades at Poperinghe by motor busses & lorries. Regimental "Revue" was repeated at Steenvoorde. Special parade under Lieut [W.E.] Dunton attended. Lieut J.S Allen [McG 1] rejoined The Battalion.

**Sat, Jun 17, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

17-6-16 Letter received from Lt-Col [R.T.] Pelly of 8<sup>th</sup> Bn Royal Irish Rifles and extract therefrom placed in Battalion orders. Major [Agar] Adamson D.S.O. went on special leave and Major [D.F.B.] Gray D.S.O. assumed command.

**Sun, Jun 18, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

18-6-16 Parades under Lieuts [G.M.] Smith & [M.W.] Williams [McG 145] and guards Instructors for Musketry. Sixteen officers joined from Depot England.

**Mon, Jun 19, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

19-6-16 Parades as usual. Major A.S.A.M. Adamson awarded the Distinguished Service Order, Major D F B Gray awarded the Distinguished Service Order. Lieut. G.C. Carvell awarded the Military Cross, - Auth Supplement to London Gazette 29608 3/6/16.

**Tue, Jun 20, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

20-6-16 The Battalion was visited by Lieut Colonel. Malcolm Murray Personal A.D.C. to H.R.H. The Duke of Connaught.

**Wed, Jun 21, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

21-6-16 Battalion moved by Motor bus and Motor lorry to transport Lines G.17.d.8.1. In the evening battalion marched to the Infantry barracks Ypres as Brigade reserve. Billets very comfortable. Working parties to be supplied.

**Thu, Jun 22, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

22-6-16 Quarters were very comfortable. Many sentries were posted to warn of the approach of hostile aeroplanes and to prevent men from wandering about the town. Small working party at night. One platoon garrisoned strong points East of Ypres I. H. and I K.

**Fri, Jun 23, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

23-6-16 Quiet day. Aeroplanes active. One of our planes seen shot down by machine gun fire from enemy plane. It fell West of Ypres. Working parties at night. Small party of officers visited the trenches.

**Sat, Jun 24, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

24-6-16 Quiet day – Working Parties at night – Party of officers visited the trenches.

**Sun, Jun 25, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

25-6-16 Relief arranged to take place on this day was postponed twenty-four hours on account of a small bombing attack by the 42<sup>nd</sup> Bn on the right of trenches to be taken over by us. This attack obtained its object except in one case where it was stopped by our own artillery barrage. The points attacked were found unoccupied by the enemy.

**Mon, Jun 26, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

26-6-16 Quiet day – rain – Battalion relieved the R.C. Regt [R.C.R.] in front line trenches.

**Tue, Jun 27, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

27-6-16 At daybreak front line trenches at Sanctuary wood and supports were heavily shelled. The shelling developed into an intense bombardment. Many shells fell near our front trenches and supports but we did not suffer any casualties. The bombardment was followed by an infantry attack upon the trenches held by the 3<sup>rd</sup> Can. Inf. Brigade immediately to the right of our brigade in Sanctuary Wood. This attack was repulsed. Intermittent shelling kept up during the rest of the day.

**Wed, Jun 28, 1916 SANCTUARYWOOD, BELGIUM**

28-6-16 Lively artillery duel north of the Menin Road in which we appeared to have the superiority. Small attack made by us to the north of the Menin Road at night. Heavy artillery fighting was heard from the South.

**Thu, Jun 29, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

29-6-16 Certain amount of shelling by the enemy. To the north our guns were very active and also to the South. After dusk the enemy threw over a number of trench mortars at the Culvert. Lieut [W.H.] Morris [410512] conducted a successful patrol & secured valuable information.

**Fri, Jun 30, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

30-6-16 Day was quiet except for our artillery which was active. We were relieved at dusk by the 60<sup>th</sup> Battalion and proceeded by train and Motor bus to Camp A.

*[Note transcriber: until he was killed June 2, 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant- Colonel H.C. Buller. Major Agar Adamson took over command from June 4, 1916. ]*

**Sat, Jul 1, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 1-7-16 Spent the day resting and cleaning up. The following extract from a letter to the C.O from Lady Buller, mother of the late Lt. Col. H.C. Buller D.S.O. was published for the information of all ranks—"It grieves me very much to think how the regiment has suffered and I shall be so glad if you will assure them in their great loss and thank them very much for their kind sympathy and thought of me. I shall always take the deepest interest in its welfare." Extract from the London Gazette of 2nd June 1916 – His Majesty the King has been pleased to approve of the undermentioned rewards for distinguished service in the field prior to 1st June 1916 – D.S.O. – Major Agar Stewart Allen-Masterton Adamson, Major Donald Fairlie Brauston Gray- Military Cross Lieut. George Cecil Carvell – Military Medals 1742 Sergt M Allen 1150 Acting Sergt. J. Dickie – Mentioned in despatches by General Sir Douglas Haig G.C.B Comdr in Chief of the British Forces in France for conduct prior to 1st June 1916. Major A.S.A.M. Adamson, Major D.F.B. Gray. Lieut (temp Capt) D.A. Clarke, Lieut A.G. Martin adjutant, 1489 , 1589 R.S.M Godfrey S. (killed), 1081 R Q S.M. Keble F.E, 1186 C S M Anderson J, 667 Pipe Major Colville J. 1167 Sergt Bishop A, 1541 L/Cpl. Candy G.W. 645 Pte Flintoft J. 1724 Pte Dalby W. 254 Pte Stanborough W.,

**Sun, Jul 2, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 2-7-16 Pay parade was held during the morning and during the afternoon the battalion was marched to Baths in Poperinghe.

**Mon, Jul 3, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 3-7-16 Battalion parade as per syllabus of training. Captain S.F.A. Martin [203] is posted to No 4 Coy to assume command.

**Tue, Jul 4, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 4-7-16 Syllabus of training was followed with Guards instructors in charge of drill.

**Wed, Jul 5, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 5-7-16 The first of a proposed series of lectures was given in the YMCA. to Officers & NCOs. The subject of this lecture was "Bayonet Fighting. Parades as per syllabus.

**Thu, Jul 6, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 6-7-16 Parades in morning. A Brigade sports day Gymtiana was held in the afternoon. Our Transport did very well. The sports were very successfully run off. A serious accident to Major B. McClellan of 42nd Bn in the jumps. In the evening the revue artists of the battalion repeated their entertainment at Reninghelst. The R.C.R. were invited to send a number of men. The concert was very successful.

**Fri, Jul 7, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 7-7-16 Parades as per syllabus

**Sat, Jul 8, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 8-7-16 Practice in platoon attack and defence was held in trenches near transport lines As a result of June fighting following casualties were published in orders – 81 missing 12 wounded and missing – 5 missing believed killed, unofficially reported prisoners of war 4, 4 died of wounds. , Lieut Sullivan [*H.E. SULIVAN*] is posted to No 1 Coy and assumes command Lieut [*A.G.*] Rosamond assumed command of No 3 Coy.

**Sun, Jul 9, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 9-7-16 Divine service in morning, practice at night manoeuvres and attack at night.

**Mon, Jul 10, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 10-7-16 Parades under company arrangements. Lieut [*C.R.*] Banning returned from sick leave.

**Tue, Jul 11, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

Camp A 11-7-16 Lecture to all officers in YMCA by Capt S.F.A. Martin [203]. Battalion moved by train after dusk to Asylum siding and men marched to Zillebeke Bund relieving the 49<sup>th</sup> Battalion which moved into front line right sector.

**Wed Jul 12, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

Zillebeke Bund 12-7-16 Day quiet, found dug outs and surroundings very dirty – working parties for whole battalion at night except for one platoon garrisoning a strong point.

**Thu, Jul 13, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

Zillebeke Bund 13-7-16 Bund was shelled in morning by 5.9 Howitzers. Shells fell either short or over and did not do any damage. Working parties for whole battalion at night. Officers visited trenches

**Fri, Jul 14, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

Zillebeke Bund 14-7-16 Day quiet – working parties – Officers visited trenches

**Sat, Jul 15, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

Zillebeke Bund 15-7-16 Battalion relieved the 49<sup>th</sup> Battalion in right sector front line trenches 46 – 55 relief was satisfactory except that towards the end of its completion the enemy appeared to be aware that it was taking place and threw over many rifle grenades and trench mortars. We had twelve casualties. Headquarters were at Valley Cottages

**Sun, Jul 16, 1916 MOUNT SORREL, BELGIUM**

Front Line 16-7-16 Day was fairly quiet. A few trench mortars. A great amount of work was in progress and great efforts were made to keep it up. At night the whole battalion was working together with large working parties from 49<sup>th</sup> Bn. Saps were pushed forward and front line strengthened and repaired. Lieut [W.H.] Morris [410512] and Capt [C.J.T.] Stewart secured valuable information from patrolling in "no Man's Land". An unoccupied old German trench in good repair was discovered.

**Mon, Jul 17, 1916 MOUNT SORREL, BELGIUM**

Front Line 17-7-16 The work on trenches continued. Wherever possible it was carried out during daylight. After dusk Captain Stewart took out a party to consolidate and place old German trench discovered on the previous night in good condition. A party of about nine Germans were encountered but they withdrew. At 1.30 am Considerable work was done and a garrison left under Lieut Almon.

**Tue, Jul 18, 1916 MOUNT SORREL, BELGIUM**

Front Line 18-7-16 At 1.30 am a minor operation was carried out by our bombers and two Stokes guns in conjunction with similar operations being carried out by two other Bns of our brigade on the left the 42<sup>nd</sup> and RCR's. Our bombers threw about 500 Mills bombs from the saps and the Stokes guns fired ~~220~~ 90 rounds.

The enemy retaliated. Our artillery also joined in the operation. Everything was quiet again before daybreak. Our casualties were light.

About 8.30 pm the enemy commenced to bombard our right trenches extending from HALIFAX trench to CANADA with trench mortars and rifle grenades. The bombardment was intense and lasted until 10. p.m. being probably in retaliation for our bombing operation in which we probably did considerable damage. Very considerable damage was done to our trenches and saps A, B & C were demolished. A few of the enemy were seen to leave their trenches after the bombardment stopped but were driven back.

**Wed, Jul 19, 1916 MOUNT SORREL, BELGIUM**

Front Line 19-7-16 The day was comparatively quiet. The new trench consolidated by us has been named STEWART – trench. We were relieved after dark by the 5<sup>th</sup> C.M.R. and marched to billets in YPRES – 1 & 3 companies were in Infantry Barracks, 4 Coy was in billets nearby and no 2 coy were billeted at CHATEAU BELGE [*Belgian Chateau*]. Headquarters was at RAMPARTS.

#### **Thu, Jul 20, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

Ypres 20-7-16 YPRES received the usual complement of shells. Working parties at front line at night.

#### **Fri, Jul 21, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

Working party of 100 men employed during day improving Infantry Barracks and supplying accommodation for more troops. Working parties at night. Following wire was received. “General Officer Commanding division wishes to congratulate PPCLI on their successful operations on the night of 17/18 July, the affair showed a good spirit of offensive enterprise on the part of the battalion. The brigadier has great pleasure in forwarding the above”.

#### **Sat, Jul 22, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

Ypres 22-7-16 In Routine orders by Corps Commander of this date # 708. the following list of decorations for members of this battalion were announced – Capt H W. Niven D S.O; Capt A.G. Martin Military Cross and also Lieuts G.S. Currie and Philip Mackenzie-Capt. J B McGregor of CAMC and M O of the battalion also received the Military Cross – D.C.M’s were awarded to the following 53 Sergt A. Hill, 1615 Sergt S Patterson [[Paterson, S.](#)] and 126 Corp H. Nelson. Military Medals were given to following-1345 Sergt J E. McInnes 11080 Pte W. L. Clarke [[411080 W.L. Clark or A11080](#)], McG. 230 L/Cpl J W. Jeakins, 23572 Pte T Rhodes.[\[Rhodes, E.\]](#), 1537 Pte F A Williamson. Lieut D.S. Forbes formerly of the Bn received the Military Cross. Day was quiet Working parties day and night.

#### **Sun, Jul 23, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

Ypres 23-7-16 Working parties day and night. Party of Canadian Parliamentarians visited the town

#### **Mon, Jul 24, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

Ypres 24-7-16 Working parties day and night.

#### **Tue, Jul 25, 1916 YPRES, BELGIUM**

YPRES 25-7-16 Working party during afternoon. Battalion was relieved by the 58th Bn and went by train from Asylum siding to B Camp. It had been published for information that Lieut. H.W. Macdonell [[Macdonnell](#)] was suffering from a bullet wound in the lung and a prisoner in Germany. In Class II competition for the best pair of light draught horses shown in a G.S. wagon, Pte Cadogan [[R.T. 850](#)] took first place with his team. The competition was open to all units of the Canadian Corps and was keenly contested. Second place was also taken by an entry from the 7th C.I. B being won by the R C R transport. 14 men reported casualties after action June 2/4 were unofficially reported Prisoners of war in Germany.

**Wed, Jul 26, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

CAMP B 26-7-16 The Battalion marched to billets in area South of STEENVOORDE, headquarters were situated at 27Q 1.c.2.3. Day was hot, roads were very dusty and consequently the men were very tired.

**Thu, Jul 27, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 27-7-16 Parades were held under company arrangements chiefly for inspection.

**Fri, Jul 28, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 28-7-16 Parades were held on company parade grounds and a syllabus of training started. An official letter was received stating that Lt-Col. R.T. Pelly D.S O. was under orders to report to the 7th C.I.B. to take over command of the battalion.

**Sat, Jul 29, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 29-7-16 A Brigade route march was held and was a success.

**Sun, Jul 30, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 30-7-16 A Brigade parade was held at Q9.b.1.7. for the purpose of the presentations of medal ribbons by Brigadier General Macdonell. A demonstration was given at the Divisional bomb school bring out the following points, effectiveness of barrage of Stokes guns, destruction of wire entanglements by amonal tube & the working of a bombing and blocking party.

**Mon, Jul 31, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 31-7-16 Lieutenant General Hon Sir Julian H.G. Byng K.C.B. KCMG., M V.O. Commanding the Canadian Corps inspected the battalion. The inspection was very thorough and lasted two hours and a half. The day was very warm and sultry.

*[Note transcriber: during July 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Major Agar Adamson.]*

**Tue, Aug 1, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

In the field 1/8/16 Training in STEENVOORDE area continued.

**Wed, Aug 2, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

In the field 2/9/16 Training continued according to syllabus.

**Thu, Aug 3, 1916 STEENVOORDE, FRANCE**

In the field 3/8/16 The battalion moved from training area to Camp A. On account of the very warm weather the battalion did not move off until 6.pm. Transportation for the mens' packs and steel helmets was provided for by motor lorry. Route followed was by the main road through ABEELE and POPERINGHE. Lieut. Col. R.T. PELLY D.S.O. resumed command of the Battalion having been posted from the 8th Bn. Royal Irish Rifles

**Fri, Aug 4, 1916 CAMP A, POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

In the field 4/8/16 The Battalion relieved the 49<sup>th</sup> Bn on the night of Aug. 4/5 in ZILLEBEKE BUND and strong points 1 H and 1 K. The mens' packs were stored at the transport lines. The Battalion moved off the parade ground at 9.15 pm and marched to railway siding at sheet 28 C 11. b. 1. 9. where it entrained for the ASYLUMN siding. The relief was very satisfactory and was complete shortly after midnight.

**Sat, Aug 5, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

In the field 5/8/16 Very quiet day. All the battalion out on working parties at night.

**Sun, Aug 6, 1916 ZILLEBEKE , BELGIUM**

In the field 6/8/16 Quiet. Usual working parties at night.

**Mon, Aug 7, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

In the field 7/8/16 Quiet usual working parties at night. Capt H.W. Niven DSO returns & assumes Command of No 2 Coy.

**Tue, Aug 8, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

In the field 8/8/16 Quiet during the day. At night north of the MENIN Road the enemy launched a gas attack. The gas was felt in YPRES but the battalion did not suffer. Eight horses of our Transport were slightly gassed. Advance parties were sent to the trenches to be taken over by us.

**Wed, Aug 9, 1916 ZILLEBEKE, BELGIUM**

In the field 9/8/16 On the night Aug 9/10th. the battalion relieved the Royal Canadian Regiment in the front line trenches left sector including trenches from the CULVERT on the MENIN road to the junction of WARRINGTON AVENUE and LOVER'S WALK. The former inclusive and the latter not inclusive. The relief was very satisfactory and was complete shortly after 11 pm.

**Thu, Aug 10, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

In the field 10/8/16 Some few shells were dropped near our trenches but caused no damage. Trenches were not fully connected up and at night the battalion used as many men as could be spared upon this work.

**Fri, Aug 11, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

In the field 11/8/16 Normal day with a little shelling of our trenches. Journalist visited our trenches with Staff Officer

**Sat, Aug 12, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

In the field 12/8/16 In the morning the enemy heavily bombarded with shells and trench mortars MOUNT SORREL and HILL 60 doing much damage. Our right trenches were slightly shelled at the same time. 704 L/C. ELLIOTT, A of No 2 Coy was killed by shell fire. The nights are very bright and little patrol work was undertaken.

**Sun, Aug 13, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

In the field 13/8/16 Normal day. Working every available man at night. Strong dugouts were being built at Battalion Headquarters at TUILERIE [TUILERIES]

**Mon, Aug 14, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

In the field 14/8/16 Normal day. work progressed favorably.

**Tue, Aug 15, 1916 SANCTUARY WOOD, BELGIUM**

In the field 15/8/16 Day was quiet and normal. At night the battalion was relieved by the 49<sup>th</sup> Bn. Guides met the incoming battalion at ZILLEBEKE Bund. The relief was satisfactory and the battalion on relief marched to Camp "F" (MONTREAL) by way of KRUISTRAAT.

**Wed, Aug 16, 1916 CAMP F, YPRES, BELGIUM**

In the field 16/8/16 Bath parades and in the evening part of the battalion marched to concert given in YMCA tent RENINGHELST by our own troop. The G.O.C. 3rd Can Div was present.

**Thu, Aug 17, 1916 CAMP F, YPRES, BELGIUM**

In the field 17/8/16 Battalion parade was held in the morning. Parades were held for pay. The C.O. held a lecture for all Officers and Sergeants at 5. pm. The remainder of the battalion attended the concert at RENINGHELST.

**Fri, Aug 18, 1916 CAMP F, YPRES, BELGIUM**

In the field 18/8/16 Company parades were held and in the afternoon the battalion was inspected by the MINISTER of MILITIA [*Sir Sam Hughes*]

**Sat, Aug 19, 1916 CAMP F, YPRES, BELGIUM**

In the field 19/8/16 Company parades were held in the morning. At night the battalion relieved the Royal Canadian Regiment. No 3 Coy less one platoon and No 4 Coy were at ZILLEBEKE BUND, one platoon of [inserted: also at] 1 H and 1 K. No 1 and 2 Coys and H Q were at INFANTRY BARRACKS YPRES. H Q was in RAMPARTS. The relief was satisfactory

**Sun, Aug 20, 1916 ZILLEBEKE & YPRES, BELGIUM**

In the field 20/8/16 Day was quiet and normal with working parties at night. LIEUT. [W.E.] DUNTON reported at Transport Lines and was sent to hospital as a mental case.

**Mon, Aug 21, 1916 ZILLEBEKE & YPRES , BELGIUM**

In the field 21/8/16 The Battalion was relieved at night by the 1<sup>st</sup> Bn. Hampshire Regiment 4<sup>th</sup> Division. The tram was taken at ASYLUMN siding to siding near Camp "B" where the huts were taken over. (ERIE)

**Tue, Aug 22, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

In the field 22/8/16 Bath parades were held for the Battalion at POPERINGHE

**Wed, Aug 23, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

In the field 23/8/16 Company parades were held in the morning. In the afternoon the Commanding officer inspected the companies in heavy marching order. LIEUT G.W. LITTLE left in charge of billeting party for the CASSEL training area. Lieut. Col. R.T. Pelly D.S.O. proceeded on special leave to England and Major A.A. [Agar] Adamson D.S.O. took over command.

**Thu, Aug 24, 1916 CAMP B, YPRES-POPERINGHE, BELGIUM**

In the field 24/8/16 The Battalion marched back to CASSEL training area in heavy marching order. The 7<sup>th</sup> Brigade marched back as a unit and this battalion passed ABEELE crossroads at 10.35 am. In ABEELE was the Brigade and Corps commanders who inspected the Troops.

**Fri, Aug 25, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

In the field 25/8/16 Parades were held according to syllabus of training.

**Sat, Aug 26, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

In the field 26/8/16 Parades were held according to syllabus of training.

**Sun, Aug 27, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

In the field 27/8/16 Church parade was held at the R.C.R. H. Quarters.

**Mon, Aug 28, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

In the field 28/8/16 Rain interfered with the usual parades

**Tue, Aug 29, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

In the field 29/8/16 Very wet weather

**Wed, Aug 30, 1916, TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

In the field 30/8/16 Lieut Colonel R T. Pelly D.S.O. returned from special leave – Rain all day

**Thu, Aug 31, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

In the field 31/8/16 Parades were held as per syllabus of training.

*[Note transcriber: until August 3, 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Major Agar Adamson. Lieutenant-Colonel R.T. Pelly resumed command from that date onwards.]*

**Fri, Sep 1, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 1/9/16 Training in Cassel Area

**Sat, Sep 2, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 2/9/16 Training. Lecture in Aeroplane Photographs in Steenvoorde

**Sun, Sep 3, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 3/9/16 Bde: Church Parade in lines of 49<sup>th</sup> Bn:

**Mon, Sep 4, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 4/9/16 Training

**Tue, Sep 5, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 5/9/16 Training

**Wed, Sep 6, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 6/9/16 Bn. in attack practice before Brigadier & Staff . Concert by party from R.F.C. at Hazebrouck.

**Thu, Sep 7, 1916 TERDEGHEM, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 7/9/16 Bn: marched to Esquebec via WORMHOUT entrained at 5.30 pm for CONTEVILLE

*[Note transcriber: the regiment wasn't actually in Steenvoorde at the time, but in five small farm houses in the small village of Terdegheem. The location in the War Diary given as Steenvoorde from Sep 8 through 11 , 1916 is completely off course.]*

**Fri, Sep 8, 1916 TROOP TRAIN TO CONTEVILLE, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 8/9/16 Arrived CONTEVILLE about 4 a.m. detrained and marched to CRAMONT.

**Sat, Sep 9, 1916 CRAMONT, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 9/9/16 Coy: training & cleaning up.

**Sun, Sep 10, 1916 CRAMONT, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 10/9/16 Marched at 8 a.m. for PERNOIS via DOMART & St: LEGER.

**Mon, Sep 11, 1916 PERNOIS, FRANCE**

STEENVOORDE 11/9/16 Marched at 7 am for TOUTENCOURT via NAOURS, TALMAS, & PUCHEVILLIERS

**Tue, Sep 12, 1916 TOUTENCOURT, FRANCE**

TOUTENCOURT 12/9/16 Marched from TOUTENCOURT to HARPONVILLE

**Wed, Sep 13, 1916 HARPONVILLE, FRANCE**

HARPONVILLE 13/9/16 Marched to BRICKFIELDS near ALBERT via WARLOY & bivouaced with rest of Bde.

**Thu, Sep 14, 1916 BRICKFIELDS, ALBERT, FRANCE**

ALBERT 14/9/16 In Bivouacs at Brickfields.

**Fri, Sep 15, 1916 BRICKFIELDS, ALBERT, FRANCE**

ALBERT 15/9/16 Standing toø from 6. a.m. received orders to move up to USNA HILL at 9.30 a.m. reached USNA HILL at 11 a.m. at 2 p.m. received orders to march to CHALK PITS in X 10.c. & make preparations to attack at 6. p.m. Left Chalk Pits at 4.30 p.m. & marched to vicinity of Sugar Trench which was to be the jumping off place for the attack. At 6 p.m. Batn reached vicinity of Sugar Trench which could not be located but marched in file through the Barage & immediately launched the attack & reached its first objective the Sunken road running South of COURCELETTE capturing 75 prisoners. Nos 1 & 3 Coys pushed on immediately to 2<sup>nd</sup> objective in which footholds were gained on either flank. The central portion of the FABECK GRABEN on either side of the communication we were unable to take immediately. The [inserted: front line] Coys [inserted: aided by supports] consolidated therefore 100 yards from German trench. The supports retired before daybreak to trench behind first objective. Communication with 25<sup>th</sup> Bn on right from 8 pm and with 49th on left from 9 pm. Shelling during night of 15/16 chiefly in rear of new trench.

In the advance at 6 pm on the 15<sup>th</sup> Major [S.F.A.] Martin [203] : O C No 4 Co'y was killed by shell fire; Lt Rosamund [A.G. [Rosamond](#)] was killed by machine gun fire in the advance on the second objective.

**Sat, Sep 16, 1916 COURCELETTE, FRANCE**

16/9/16 Heavy shelling all morning particularly on support line. About 4 pm took remainder of second objective by bombing attack and 62 unwounded prisoners hordes wounded.

Immediately occupied front trench. From 5 o'clock when our barrage started to aid advance of R.C.R's and 42<sup>nd</sup> Bn Germans heavily shelled Fabeck Graben our new front line. Gas alarm at 6 owing [inserted: we thought] to gas shells Details from transport lines brought up rations about 9 o'clock.

Front line co'ys and Lewis guns relieved by Support co'ys (2 & 4) about 10.30 .

### **Sun, Sep 17, 1916 COURCELETTE, FRANCE**

17/9/16 Evacuation of wounded carried on continuously during the night. At 2 am [inserted: night 16/17] orders came that we were to be relieved by 52<sup>nd</sup> Bn. The relief was carried out just before daybreak. Regiment night patrols were sent out to search for undiscovered wounded and killed. All wounded were evacuated and all dead, as far as were known, buried. Bn had tea on way out at Sausage Valley from bn cooks and marched to Tara Hill where they bivouacked till afternoon.

Late afternoon Bn moved to another part of Tara Hill.

Total casualties just under 300.

### **Mon, Sep 18, 1916 TARA HILL, FRANCE**

18/9/16 Bivouacked on Tara Hill. Heavy rains. Work parties. Draft of 89 men from the Entrenching Bn.

### **Tue, Sep 19, 1916 TARA HILL, ALBERT, FRANCE**

19/9/16 Working parties- burying cable at Courcelette and building roads at Ovillers. More rain. Moved to billets in Rue de la Trairie, Albert.

### **Wed, Sep 20, 1916 ALBERT, FRANCE**

Albert 20/9/16 Moved to new billets Rue d'Amiens. Working parties.

### **Thu, Sep 21, 1916 ALBERT, FRANCE**

Albert 21/9/16 Draft of 140 arrived. Working parties.

### **Fri. Sep 22, 1916 ALBERT, FRANCE**

Albert 22/9/16 Inspection of new draft by C.O. at 2 pm. Working parties.

### **Sat, Sep 23, 1916 ALBERT, FRANCE**

23/9/16 Marched via Bouzincourt to [inserted: billets in] Warloy. Concert for new draft at 7 pm by Bn concert party.

### **Sun, Sep 24, 1916 WARLOY, FRANCE**

24/9/16 Warloy to La Vicogne via Toutencourt, Puchevillers, Val de Maison.

### **Mon, Sep 25, 1916 LA VICOGNE, FRANCE**

25/9/16 La Vicogne to Bonneville.

**Tue, Sep 26, 1916 BONNEVILLE, FRANCE**

Bonneville 26/9/16 C. O's parade at 10 am. Pay and instructional parades.

**Wed, Sep 27, 1916 BONNEVILLE, FRANCE**

27/9/16 Bonneville to Harponville via Val de Maison and Toutencourt.

**Thu, Sep 28, 1916 HARPONVILLE, FRANCE**

28/9/16 Harponville to Brickfields near Albert via Warloy and Senlis. Bivouacked at Brickfields 12 am to 3 pm; then moved to billets in Albert (Rue des Trairies and Rue d'Amiens.)

**Fri, Sep 29, 1916 ALBERT, FRANCE**

Albert 29/9/16 Billets in Albert. Working parties – Owillers-Courcelette Rd.

**Sat, Sep 30, 1916 ALBERT, FRANCE**

30/9/16 Billets in Albert. Working parties – Owillers-Courcelette Rd.

[*Note transcriber: during September 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel R.T. Pelly.*]

APPENDIX

Copy

SECRET.

PRINCESS PATRICIAS CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY

OPERATION ORDER No.45 By Lt. Col. R.T. Pelly, DSO  
Comdg. P.P.C.L.I.

22nd Sept. 1916

In the Field.

1. MOVE. The Battalion will march to WARLOY tomorrow.
2. STARTING POINT. Rly Bridge on the BOUZINCOURT ROAD at W.27.d.7.3.
3. TIME OF START. 6.55 a.m.

4. ORDER OF MARCH: HQ., 3,4,1 and 2 Coys.
5. ROUTE: VIA BRICKFIELDS, BOUZINCOURT and SENLIS.
6. KITS & STORES. Officers kits and mess stores to be ready at 5.45 am.
7. Transport; All wgons to be loaded and sheeted down by 6.15 am.
8. COLOUR PARTY: Lieuts. McPherson and Morris will carry the Colour in reliefs. The R.S.M. will detail escort. Officers and escort will report at Bn. HQ at 6.30 am.

Sgd. A.G. MARTIN Capt. & Adjt.

-----

**Sun, Oct 1, 1916 ALBERT, FRANCE**

Albert 1/10/16 Billeted in Albert. Voluntary church parade at 11 am. Night of 10/11 working parties

1) on Pozières- Courcelette road (north of main road) and 2) unloading and piling pit props on railway north of Albert.

**Mon, Oct 2, 1916 ALBERT, FRANCE**

2/10/16 The battalion left billets in Albert and marched to Tara Hill at 11. At 4 pm the battalion marched to Kay dump; then into support lines west of Courcelette to relieve a Bn of the 8th C. Brigade (2<sup>nd</sup> C.M.R's). H.Q. at R 28 c 8.2. Two companies were in CENTRE WAY and two in PICCADILLY . Rain –

**Tue, Oct 3, 1916 WEST OF COURCELETTE, FRANCE**

3/10/16 In supports as described under 2/10/16. Intermittent heavy shelling. Very wet.

**Wed, Oct 4, 1916 WEST OF COURCELETTE, FRANCE**

4/10/16 As for 2 and 3/10/16. The battalion was relieved by the 8th Bn, South Lancashire regiment at 4 pm and marched to bivouacs on TARA HILL.

**Thu, Oct 5, 1916 TARA HILL, ALBERT, FRANCE**

5/10/16 Cleaning up on TARA HILL. At 4 pm marched to KAY dump and from there into Supports west of COURCELETTE. Bn H.Q. in SUNKEN RD at R 29 c 9,8. No 4 co'y in FABECK TRENCH; No's 2 and 3 in MACDONNELL TRENCH; No 1 in CENTRE WAY.

**Fri, Oct 6, 1916 COURCELETTE, FRANCE**

6/10/16 In supports as described under 5/10/16. Intermittent shelling.

### **Sat, Oct 7, 1916 COURCELETTE, FRANCE**

7/10/16 In supports as described under 5/10/16. Intermittent shelling.

### **Sun, Oct 8, 1916 COURCELETTE, FRANCE**

8/10/16 About 5 am the R.C.R. and the 49<sup>th</sup> Bn attacked the German position in REGINA TRENCH between the W. MIRAUMONT and TWENTYTHREE RDS. The Patricias were in support. The first news was that the attack had been successful: according to orders.: No's 2 and 4 Co'ys moved up from Fabeck Tr. to Hessian, the jumping off trench about 6.30 am .Between 7 and 7.30 am No's 1 and 3 Co'ys moved from MACDONNELL TRENCH and CENTREWAY to FABECK TRENCH. Later news came that the wire had not been destroyed and that only parts of the objective had been entered. Also news came that the 9<sup>th</sup> Bde. had failed on our right. No's 1 and 3 co'ys moved up to SUDBURY TRENCH to reinforce and to establish communication between R.C.R's and 43<sup>rd</sup> on right. About 11, R.C.R's [inserted: were] forced to abandon their hold on Regina Trench and retired to the jumping off trench. Owing to overcrowding Major Sullivan with No's 1,2 & 3 ~~and~~ Co'ys returned to FABECK TRENCH. No 4 remained with 2 Lewis guns to and the 49<sup>th</sup> Bn on the left. At 1.30 pm under orders from Colonel Griesbach, now in charge of entire brigade firing line, No 3 Co'y moved up again to SUDBURY TRENCH. At 2.20 pm one platoon of No 1 Co'y left FABECK TR. to reinforce left flank of 49<sup>th</sup> Bn and get [inserted: into] communication with British troops on left. About 3 pm 2 platoons of No 3 Co'y moved from Sudbury trench to right of R.C.R. to take up position astride KENORA TR.

To replace these, two platoons of No 2 Co'y went up to SUDBURY from FABECK TRENCH. Also at 3 pm our reserve section of bombers went forward from Bn HQ to take over bombing post in KENORA TR. from R.C.R. On the evening of the 8th the Patricias were relieved by the 4<sup>th</sup> C M R's who with the 42<sup>nd</sup> Bn took over the line. The Patricias with the exception of the reserve section of bombers who remained with the 42<sup>nd</sup> Bn retired to supports in MACDONNELL TRENCH.

### **Mon, Oct 9, 1916 ALBERT, FRANCE**

9/10/16 In support in MACDONNELL TRENCH. At 4 p.m. marched out of line to TARA HILL and bivouacked.

### **Tue, Oct 10, 1916 TARA HILL, ALBERT, FRANCE**

10/10/16 TARA HILL to WARLOY via BOUZINCOURT. The battalion was congratulated en route by the Reserve army commander Sir Henry Gough for smart, clean appearance so soon after hard time in the trenches. P.P.C.L.I. concert party at 7.

### **Wed, Oct 11, 1916 WARLOY, FRANCE**

WARLOY 11/10/16 Billets in WARLOY. Cleaning up. Pay parades. Concert party at 7 p.m. Turned into ordnance 1 Lewis gun, salvaged 8/10/16 from and two German 3" trench mortars taken on September 15 and salvaged from FABECK TRENCH on Monday 9/10/16. On one was the following information for identification: Manufacturers – Rheinische Metallwaaren & Maschinenfabrik, Düsseldorf, 1915. System Ehrhardt. The number 700 appeared [inserted: both] on the mortar and the stand. On the other mortar the number was 577; the number on the

plate or stand was 576. Also on the plate was a second number 1014. The date was 1914, Ehrhardt manufacture. There was also on the second mortar the mark .

**Thu, Oct 12, 1916 WARLOY, FRANCE**

12/10/16 WARLOY (12.25 p.m.) to La VICOGNE via HERISSART, VAL de MAISON, TALMAS.

**Fri, Oct 13, 1916 LA VICOGNE, FRANCE**

13/10/16 LA VICOGNE (7.00 am) to BERTEAUCOURT via TALMAS, NAOURS, HAVERNAS, HALLOY.

**Sat, Oct 14, 1916 BERTEAUCOURT, FRANCE**

BERTEAUCOURT 14/10/16 Billets in BERTEAUCOURT. Company Parades.

**Sun, Oct 15, 1916 BERTEAUCOURT, FRANCE**

BERTEAUCOURT 15/10/16 Billets in Berteaucourt.

**Mon, Oct 16, 1916 BERTEAUCOURT, FRANCE**

16/10/16 Berteaucourt to Gorges (H.Q.) and Vacquerie (1,2,3. 4 Co'ys) via St. Léger-les-Domart, DOMART en Ponthieu, BERNEUIL.

**Tue, Oct 17, 1916 GORGES AND VACQUERIE, FRANCE**

GORGES and VACQUERIE 17/10/16 Battalion parade at 10 a.m.

**Wed, Oct 18, 1916 GORGES AND VACQUERIE, FRANCE**

18/10/16 Billets in GORGES & VACQUERIE. Rain: Battalion parades cancelled. Company parades.

**Thu, Oct 19, 1916 GORGES AND VACQUERIE, FRANCE**

19/10/16 Billets in GORGES & VACQUERIE. Rain: Battalion parades cancelled. Company parades.

**Fri, Oct 20, 1916 GORGES AND VACQUERIE, FRANCE**

20/10/16 VACQUERIE to NÔEUX via BERNAVILLE, and WAVANS.

**Sat, Oct 21, 1916 NÔEUX, FRANCE**

21/10/16 NÔEUX to MONT-en-TERNOIS via VACQUÉRIE-LE-BOUCQ, LIGNY-Sur-CANCRE, NUNCQ and BONEVILLE.

**Sun, Oct 22, 1916 MONT-EN-TERNOIS, FRANCE**

22/10/16 The battalion marched from MONT-EN-TERNOIS via Marzeres, PENIN , SAVY & ACQ to ECOIVRES. Lt-Col. [R.T.] Pelly with Major [C.J.T.] Stewart and Major [D.F.B.] Gray, Lt [G.M.] Smith and Lt [N.D.] Dow went ahead by bus and reconnoitred the new line.

**Mon, Oct 23, 1916 ECOIVRES, FRANCE**

ECOIVRES 23/10/16 In huts in ECOIVRES. At 6.30 pm battalion marched to billets in NEUVILLE ST. VAAST.

**Tue, Oct 24, 1916 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

24/10/16 During morning batt'n relieved 2/18 Regiment, London Irish in left sub-sector of divisional line, N.E. of NEUVILLE ST. VAAST

**Wed, Oct 25 to Sat, Oct 28, 1916 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

25/10/16 through 28/10/16 Held 'P' line trenches 73-78 [inserted: Vernon [*Trench*] to Lasalle [*Trench*] ] with advanced crater positions, No 1 Co'y on the right; No 2 in the centre; No 4 on the left; No 3 in support in the QUARRY LINE. Intermittent enemy activity with heavy trench mortars and rifle grenades. Our snipers active and successful; also daily activity with rifle grenades and Stokes guns. Practically no enemy shell fire. The support coy worked regularly at revetting of communication trenches.

**Sun, Oct 29, 1916 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

29/10/16 Bn [inserted: was] relieved by 42<sup>nd</sup> Bn. Royal Highlanders during the morning and moved to NEUVILLE ST VAAST. From 5.30 pm bn moved to huts at MT. ST. ELOY by platoons.

**Mon, Oct 30, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

BOIS DES ALLEUX 30/10/16 In huts at BOIS de ALLEUX (MT. ST. ELOY): Cleaning up. Guard of honour of 35 O.R. Commanded by Major Gray D.S.O met H.R.H. the Duke of Connaught at HERMAVILLE [*Hermanville*]. The C.O. and co'y officers had the honour to meet His Royal Highness.

**Tue, Oct 31, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

31/10/16 Lt-Col [R.T.] Pelly D.S.O. left the battalion temporarily for instructional work in England. Major [Agar] Adamson D.S.O. assumed command.

[*Note transcriber: during October 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel R.T. Pelly.*]

PRINCESS PATRICIAS CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY.

OPERATION ORDERS NO.

By Lt. Col. R.T. Pelly DSO Comdg. P.P.C.L.I.

In the Field.

7th Oct. 1916

1. TASK: As set forth in the attached Brigade Operation Orders.

1st OPERATION.

2. Nos. 2 and 4 Coys.

A careful look-out must be kept in the progress of the assault and as soon as it is seen that the assaulting troops (RCR & 49th) are established in REGINA TRENCH, these Coys will move at once into the 'jumping off' trenches. If crowded they will overflow into SUDBURY and KENORA Trenches.

No.2 Coy will lead and will be on the right.

The senior Officer will be prepared to support the assaulting troops if called upon, without waiting orders from Bn. HQ.

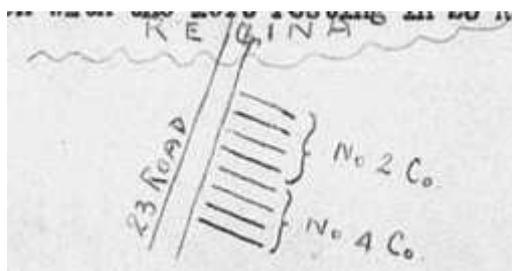
A report will be immediately sent to Bn. HQ if this is done.

3. Nos. 1 and 3 Coys.

Will move into the FABECK GRABEN as soon as Nos 2 and 4 have moved off and wait orders.

4. 2nd OPERATION.

At an hour to be notified later Nos. 2 and 4 Coys will leave the assembly trenches and form up in column of platoons just south of REGINA TRENCH with the left resting in 23 Road as in sketch:-



Preceded by a bombing section they will work up the 23 Road to the road junction with the WEST MIRAUMONT Road at R.17.b.3.1.

Having cleared the road (23) they will establish a series of posts facing North West joining up the road junction at R.17.b.3.1 with the REGINA TRENCH thus forming a defensive flank left flank.

Touch will be obtained with the 9th Brigade at the road junction R.17.b.3.1. and with the 49th Bn. in REGINA TRENCH.

No 1 Coy will follow the advance of 2 and 4 carrying wire and stakes and will assist in the work of consolidation.

No. 3 Coy will move to the 'jumping off' trench and remain there in reserve.

5. COLT AND LEWIS GUNS.

The Lewis Guns of 1, 2 and 4 Coys will form part of the garrison of the strong points and gun to each of six of these posts.

One Colt gun will be established near the road junction R.17.b.3.1 to command the WEST MIRAUMONT ROAD.

Two Colt guns will be established at REGINA TRENCH at about R.23.a.3.5. to enfilade 23 ROAD to the North.

The remaining Colt guns will remain in reserve in F.G.

6. CONSOLIDATION. The posts will be established EAST of 23 Road and an entanglement erected under the bank. The wire will thus be concealed and protected.

-----  
APPENDIX B

PRINCESS PATRICIAS CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY.

Narrative of Operations.

7th to 9th October 1916.  
.....

7th October.

On 7th October 1916 I was in support to the R.C.R. and 49th Bn. , with No.4 Co. in FABECK TRENCH, No.1 Coy. in CENTRE WAY and 2 and 3 Coys in MCDONNELL ROAD.

11 am Received Operation Orders No.55 covering details of an assault to be made at an hour to be notified later by the 7th Cdn. Inf. Bde., in conjunction with 9th Cdn. Inf. Bde. on our right, against REGINA TRENCH.

Task of the 7th Cdn. Inf. Bde. to capture and consolidate the following line :- WEST MIRAUMONT ROAD from junction R.17.b.3.1to REGINA Trench, to be consolidated as a left flank facing west to the advanced objective, thence along REGINA TRENCH to the junction of the communication trench at R.23.a.2.5. with flanks turned back to the HESSIAN Trench.

4.30 p.m. Received Operation Order No.56 ordering me to remain in support in position then occupied and to arrange to have two Companies in close support to 'jumping off' trench as soon as first objective taken. Bn. HQ. at R.29.c.9.8.

5.30 pm. Issued verbal instructions to O.C. No.2 Co. to move his Company from MCDONNELL ROAD to reinforce No.4 Co. in FABECK TRENCH.

6. p.m. Called Company Commanders together, went over Brigade Operation Orders and Bn. Operation Orders (see below) explaining fully the task of each Company. Nos. 2 and 4 Companies detailed to move up to 'jumping off' trench when attack proved successful. Nos.1 and 3 Coys to move up to FABECK Trench, when 2 and 4 Coys went forward.

8th October.

- 3.20 am. Advised zero hour was 4.50 a.m. (?)
- 6.45 am. Received verbal information from Capt. Wallis that attacking Battalions had reached REGINA Trench and my two support Coys were then moving up.
- 7 am. Message (No.1) received from Lieut. Morris dated 6.35 am states that Scouts report most of REGINA Trench held by us but enemy still holding isolated parts. Also reports Nos.2 and 4 Coys moving to 'jumping off' trench.
- 7.45 am Message received (No.2) from O.C. No.1 Co. and No.3 Co. stating both established in FABECK Trench.
- 7.45 am. Received messages (Nos. 3 and 4) from R.C.R. and 49th Bns stating that their last Companies were being ordered into assault and requesting me to leave garrison of at least two platoons per Company in 'jumping off' trench. I accordingly issued instructions to my Coys that should they be requested to go into assault this garrison must be left.
- 8.45 am. Received messages (Nos.7 and 8) from O.C. No.2 Coy, dated 7.25 a.m. stating they were established in 'jumping off' trench.
- 9.40 am. Message (No.9) received from 7th Cdn. Inf. Bde. advises 43rd Bn on my left failed to reach objective and ordering me to send out strong patrol to join up right of R.C.R. and left of 43rd Bn. Second message (No.10) received from Cdn. Inf. Bde. (7th) at same hour, ordered ground captured by 7th Cdn. Inf. Bde. to be held at all costs. Following interview with Col. Hill, Comdg. R.C.R. and Col. GRIESBACH Comdg 49th Bn., instructions were issued at once to Nos.1 and 3 Coys to move up from FABECK Trench to SUDBURY Trench and if sufficient room No.3 Co. to reinforce (jumping off' trench. Major Sullivan ordered, when Nos.1 and 3 Coys established in new position to ascertain whether assaulting units required further assistance to establish REGINA Trench and also to send out patrol to connect R.C.R. right with 43rd Bn left.
- 11.30 a.m. Message (No.12) received from Major Sullivan stating that RCRs driven out of REGINA Trench and falling back on 'jumping off' trench. This overcrowded the trench and Major Sullivan retired with his Coy to FABECK TRENCH. This also necessitated the withdrawal of Nos.1 and 3 Coys to FABECK Trench. No.4 Coy remained in close support to SUDBURY Trench.
- 1.30 pm. Message (No.14) received from 7th Cdn. Inf. Bde. advising Col. Griesbach in command of Brigade frontage.
- 1.30 pm. Verbal instructions received from Col. Griesbach to reinforce SUDBURY Trench with one Company. No.3 Co was sent up.
- 2.20 pm. Order received to take over, with one platoon, the left flank of 49th Bn to: (a) watch sap to German line west of TWENTY THREE ROAD: (b) connect up with patrol with troops on our left. This platoon supplied by No.1 Co. Message (No.17)
- 2.40 pm. In accordance with order from Col. Griesbach two platoons of No.3 Co. sent from SUDBURY Trench to right of R.C.R. to take up position astride KENORA Trench. Two platoons from No.2 Co. sent up from FABECK Trench to replace two platoons No.No.3 Co. taken from SUDBURY Trench. (Message No.19)
- 2.50 pm. Verbal order received to send our reserve section of bombers to take over bombing post in KENORA Trench which R.C.R. held.
- 7.15 pm. Operation Order received ordering men 4th C.M.R. Bn. to relive me in support on night of 8/9th October 1916. I withdrew my whole Bn. to MCDONNELL ROAD with exception of Reserve Bombing section which was left at disposal of 42nd Bn who relieved R.C.R. and 49th Bn. in front line.

9th October.

1.40 pm. Operation Order No.57 covering relief of Brigade received.

4.35 pm. Relief complete and Bn. march to bivouacs as TARA HILL.

.....

CASUALTIES.

	<u>Officers</u>	<u>O.R.</u>
Killed	-	9
Wounded	-	60
Missing	-	-
<hr/>		
TOTAL	-	69
<hr/>		
	6	
<hr/>		

Lieut. Col.  
Comdg. P.P.C.L.I.

-----

PRINCESS PATRICIAS CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY.

Messages received and sent re Operations of 7th to 9th October 1916.

No.1

To: Adjutant PPCLI            Recd. 7 am 8.10.16  
From: Lieut. W.H. Morris, PPCLI  
ZOLLERN TRENCH            Sent 6.35 am 8.10.16

The two scouts have returned from the right sector. They report most of REGINA TRENCH 1 held by us but enemy holds isolated parts. Officer i/c Reinforcing Co. left parapet to go over at 6.10 am. He said that "reinforcements were needed urgently". I have advised Major Sullivan of the fact and report just reached me that he is leaving at once with both 2 and 4 Coys.

Scouts from left sector now here. No 49th men returned to 'jumping off' for half hour after they went over. Scouts reached enemy wire in front of REGINA TRENCH slightly to the right of 49th Bn. centre. Few wounded or dead were seen up to this point. None of our troops were seen hung up in the wire. Our troops reported to be digging in and consolidating.

Sgd Liuet. W.H. MORRIS

---

No.2.

To: 7th. Can. Inf. Bde.  
From: Major A.A. Adamson PPCLI  
8.10.16 7.20 am

The following message forwarded for your information:  
Time 6.35 am Place ZOLLERN TRENCH

The two scouts have return d from Right sector. They repor most of REGINA Trench is held by us but enemy still holds isolated parts . Officer i/c R.C.R. reinforcing Co. left parapet to go over at 6.10 a.m. He said that 'reinforcements were needed urgently'. I have advised Major Sulivan of this fact and report just reached me that he is leaving at once with both 2 and 4 Coys. Scouts from Left sector now here. No 49th men returned to 'jumping off' trench for half an hour after they went over. Scouts reached enemy wire in front of REGINA Trench slightly to right of 49th Bn. centre. Few wounded or dead were seen up to this point. None of our troops were seen hung up in the wire. Our troops reported to be digging in and consolidating.

Sgd A.A. ADAMSON Major PPCLI

---

No.3.

To: O.C. PPCLI Recd. 7.40 am 8.10.16  
From: O.C. 49th Bn. Sent 7.17 am 8.10.16

Have ordered my last Company into the assault. I rely on you to garrison my 'Jumping off' trench with at least (2) platoons per Co.

---

No.4.

To: PPCLI Recd. 7.40 am 8.10.16  
From: Lt. Snider R.C.R. Sent 7.20 am 8.10.16.

My support Company ordered to move forward to attack. Would you please assure that 2 of your platoons remain as garrison in our 'jumping off' trench between W.MIRAUMONT ROAD and R.23.b.2.1. Major Hodson is there.

Sgd Lt. E.C. Snider

---

No.5.

Major Sullivan, O.C. No.2 Co. Sent 8.10.16.  
From: PPCLI Sent 8.10.16

Understand last Companies of R.C.R. and 49th have gone into assault. Should you be required to go forward you will leave a garrison in 'jumping off' trench of at least two platoons per Co. In the event of your going into the assault word must be sent back at once to Bn. HQ and reinforcements from 1 and 3 Coys will be sent up to strengthen garrison of (jumping off' trench.

Sgd L.V. DRUMMOND HAY Lieut. & Asst. Adjt.

-----

No.6.

To Lt. Morris PPCLI Recd. 7.45 am 8.10.16  
From PPCLI Sent 7.45 am 8.10.16

Understand last Companies of RCR and 49th have gone into assault. In the vent of Major Sullivan being required to go into assault he has been instructed to leave garrison of at least two platoons per Company in 'jumping off' trench. He has also been instructed to communicate with Bn. HQ if he goes forward and the 'jumping off' trench will then be reinforced from 1 and 3 Coys. If he goes forward will you please endeavour to assist in g tting word to Bn. HQ. Major Sullivan has written orders.

Sgd L.V. DRUMMOND HAY Lt. & Asst. Adjt.

-----

No.7.

To: Adjutamt PPCLI Recd. 8.25 am 8.10.16  
From: Lieut. E.P. Cloran No.4 Co. Sent 7.45 am 8.10.16

No.4 Coy has arrived in the 'jumping off' trench and are improving it. There were no casualties.

Sgd. E.P. CLORAN Lt.

-----

No.8.

To: Adjutant PPCLI Recd. 8.25 am 8.10.16  
From: Major H.G. Sullivan OC No.2 Co. Sent 7.25 am 8.10.16

Have just arrived with Nos.1 and 4 Coys in the 'jumping off' trench. R.C.Rs appear to hold only parts of REGINA Trench. They were held up in places. 49th I believe were held up here and there but gained most of the first objective. Casualties coming in few but the shelling here is very bad.

Sgd H.E. SULIVAN Major OC No.2 Co.

-----  
No.9.

To: RCR & PPCLI Recd 8.50 am 8.10.16  
From: 7th Can. Inf. Bde. Sent 8.30 am 8.10.16

Following received from 3rd Cdn. Division begins. It s reported that 43rd Bn on your right have pushed forward beyond REGINA Trench to high ground there. You will push out along WEST MIRAUMONT ROAD and establish block with 43rd Bn PPCLI will send out strong party to join up right of RCR and 43rd Bn left. Acknowledge.

Sgd 7th C.I.B.

-----  
No.10.

To: R.C.R., PPCLI, 49th Bn. Recd. 9.50 am 8.10.16  
From: 7th Can. Inf. Bde. Sent 9.10 am 8.10.16

Latest report shows that 43rd Bn. does not hold REGINA Trench on our right. You will push out to flank and block REGINA TRENCH and hold all ground taken. Also clean out KENORA TRENCH and attack junction of KENORA and REGINA Trenches and take it. Ground captured must be held at all cost and whole Brigade may be used to accomplish this.

Sgd 7th C.I.B.

-----  
No.11.

To: O.C. Coys 8.10.16  
From: PPCLI Sent 9.45 am 8.10.16

There seems to be some doubt as to whether the 9th Bde has reached objective. The Brigadier wishes our portion of REGINA TRENCH assured. The following operations will be carried out at once. Nos.1 and 3 Coys will move up to SUDBURY Trench. On arrival it will be ascertained if there is room in 'jumping off' trench for No.3 Co. If so No.3 Coy will move up and join Nos 2 and 4 Coys No.1 will remain in SUDBURY Trench.

If there is no room in jumping off trench for No.3 Co they will remain in SUDBURY Trench. When this has been done Major Sullivan will send out a reconnoitering patrol to REGINA TRENCH to ascertain whether R.C.R. and 49th are properly established in REGINA Trench and whether block has been established up WEST MIRAUMONT ROAD and in REGINA TRENCH east of junction of WEST MIRAUMONT and REGINA TRENCH. If this has not been done Major Sullivan will have officer i/c reconnoitering party interview officer i/c REGINA TRENCH and find out if this can be done without assistance of PPCLI. If assistance of PPCLI required number to be sent forward will be ascertained and will be supplied by Nos.2 and 4 Coys Please report fully when these instructions have been carried out. Two scouts will report at once to Major Sullivan to act as guides.

Sgd L.V. DRUMMOND HAY Lieut & Asst. Adjt..

---

No.12.

To: Adjutant PPCLI Recd. 11.30 am 8.10.16  
From: Major H.E. Sullivan OC No.2 Co. Sent 10 am 8.10.16.

The R.C.Rs have just been driven out of REGINA TRENCH. They are falling back on the 'jumping off ' trench which is getting crowded. I am withdrawing No.2 Co and if the 49th fall back also No.4 Co. to the FABECK Trench. The rain had made another attack absolutely impracticable.

Sgd H.E. Sullivan Major OC No.2 Co.

---

No.13.

To Adjutant PPCLI Recd 12.30 pm 8.10.16  
From: Major E.H. Sullivan Sent 12 noon. 8.10.16.

I have just retired with my Company to FABECK Trench ~~with my Co.~~ This has caused Nos.1 and 3 Coys to withdraw to the same trench. No.4 Co. is still supporting 49th in the front trench but they have their orders that if the 49th fall back as the RCR have done they must retire to FABECK Trench. The whole of the RCR have been driven out of the REGINA Trench and what is left of them have fallen back to the 'jumping off ' trench. This has become very crowded and dangerous and according to my instructions I have withdrawn No.2 Co to the FABECK Trench. I have given instructions to No.4 Co. that if the 49th fall back as they obviously must ne must bring his Co back to FABECH Trench. The artillery evidently did not do his work and neither the RCR or 49th gained and held their first objective. Before I withdrew my Co I talked the matter over with Major Hudson of the RCR and he and his junior officers agreed with me that the trench was too crowded and that I should withdraw. While I was up there my men worked hard consolidating the jumping off trench and they are now very tired and quite unfitted for any further operations. My casualties are unknown at present but fairly heavy, including Sgt. Major Paterson, wounded,

Sgd H.E. Sullivan Major OC No.2 Co.

---

No.14

To: RCR., PPCLI and 49th Bn. Recd. 1.30 pm 8.10.16  
From: 7th Can. Inf. Bde. Sent 1.05 pm 8.10.16

Lieut. Col. Griedbach, 49th Bn., will take command of the front held by this Brigade and will be responsible for its defence O.C. R.C.R. will co-operate with him and O.C. PPCLI will render necessary assistance.

Sgd 7th C.I.B.

-----  
No.15

Same as message No.14  
-----

No.16.

To: O.C. No.4 Co. 8.10.16  
From: PPCLI Sent 1.30 pm 8.10.16

Instructions have now been received that you are to retire and take up position in the left of SUDBURY TRENCH. No.3 Co. will come up and occupy right of SUDBURY TRENCH. The remainder of the R.C.R. and 49th Bn will hold the 'jumping off' trench. You will hold out [inserted: in] this trench, in close support until you receive further orders. Great care must be exercised in carrying out this retirement. The enemy must not be able to distinguish movement. Col. Griesbach is acting forward Brigadier.

Sgd. J.V. DRUMMOND HAY Lt. & Asst. Adjt.  
-----

No.17.

To: O.C. PPCLI Recd. 2.20 pm 8.10.16  
From: O.C. 49th Bn. Sent 2 pm. 8.10.16.

Will you be good enough to take over with one platoon the left flank of 49th for these purposes:-

- (a) Watch sap to German line west of 23 Road.
- (b) Connect with patrol with troops on our left.

Sgd. O.C. 49th Bn.  
-----

No.18.

To: O.C. No.1 Co. Recd. 8.10.16  
From: PPCLI Sent 2.30 pm 8.10.16

Will you please detail a platoon of one Officer and 20 Other Ranks to move up at once and take over left flank of 49th Bn. in 'jumping off' trench for these purposes:-

- (a) Watch sap to German line west of 23 Road.
- (b) Connect with small patrol with troops British on out left.

This was formerly held by No.4 Co, who are now in close support in SUDBURY TRENCH.

Sgd L.V. DRUMMOND HAY Lieut & Actg. Adj  
-----

No.19

To: O.C. PPCLI Recd. 2.40 pm 8.10.16  
From: O.C. 49th Bn. Sent 2.25 pm. 8.10.16.

Send at once two platoons to jumping off trench astride KENORA. These from SUDBURY. Complete SUDBURY to FABECK. Bombers in KENORA need rifle grenades. Urgent.

Sgd O.C. 49th Bn.

-----  
No.20.

To: O.C. No.3 Co. Recd 8.10.16  
From: PPCLI Sent 2.35 pm 8.10.16.

Please send at once two platoons to 'jumping off ' trench to take up a position astride KENORA TRENCH. Remainder will be reinforced in SUDBURY TRENCH from No.2 Co.  
Sgd L.V. DRUMMONG HAY Lt. & Asst. Adj

-----  
No.21.

To: O.C. No.2 Co. Recd. 8.10.16  
From: PPCLI Sent 2.40 pm 8.10.16

Please send two platoons to reinforce No.3 Co. in right of SUDBURY TRENCH at once.

Sgd L.V. DRUMMOND HAY Lt. & Asst. Adj

-----  
No.22.

To: PPCLI Recd. 7.15 pm 8.10.16.  
From: 7th Cdn. Inf. Bde. Sent 6.05 pm 8.10.16.

42nd Bn. will tonight relieve RCR and 49th Bns in front line and KENORA TRENCH under arrangements to be made by Bns concerned. PPCLI bombers will remain at the disposal of the 42nd Bn. On relief the RCR and 49th Bns will be formed into a composite Bn. under Lt. Col. Griesbach and will move to trenches in vicinity of CENTRE WAY. 4th CMR Bn has been placed under orders of this Bde. and will tonight relive PPCLI in close support., with two Coys in SUDBURY TRENCH and two Coys in FABECK TRENCH. On relief PPCLI will move into MCDONNELL ROAD. Bn. Hqrs will be established as follows: HQ. 42nd and Hq. CMR in dugout in R.29.g.1.8 now occupied by HQ 49th and RCR Bns. H.Q. will remain in present location. HQ Composite Bn will be R.29.c.9.8. in same dugout as HQ PPCLI. Acknowledge by wire addressed RCR PPCLI 42nd Bn. 49th Bn 4th CMR Bn.

Sgd 7th C.I.B.

-----  
No.23.

To: O.C. Coys            Recd.            8.10.16  
From: PPCLI.            Sent 7.40 pm 8.10.16.

The Bn. will be relieved tonight by 4th CMR Bn. The 4th CMR will be in close support with two Coys [inserted: in SUDBURY Trench & two Coys] in FABECK GRABEN. Coys will report Bn. HQ when they are relieved when a guide to new position in MCDONNELL Trench will be obtained. Details in other trenches with RCR and 49th will come out when 'jumping off ' trench is relieved by 42nd Bn. The senior Officer or NCO in charge of these details will report to Bn. HQ where guides to new positions will be obtained. This does not include the Bombers. Bombers in charge of Sgt. Burns will remain at disposal of 42nd Bn Lieut. J.A. Allen will be responsible that this is carried out. O.C. Coys will be responsible that any detail they have in any other part of the line fully understand all orders concerning relief. Only the reserve section of bombers now in KENORA Trench will be re[qu]ired to remain at disposal of 42nd Bn.

Sgd. L.V. DRUMMOND HAY Lt. & Asst. Adjt.

-----

**Wed, Nov 1, 1916    MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**  
MT. ST. ELOI 1/11/16 Battalion in rest billets at MT. ST. ELOI.

**Thu, Nov 2, 1916    MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**  
2/11/16 Battalion in rest billets at MT. ST. ELOI.

**Fri, Nov 3, 1916    MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**  
3/11/16 Battalion relieved 42<sup>nd</sup> Battalion R.H.C. in left sub-sector of 7<sup>th</sup> Brigade line during evening.

**Sat, Nov 4, to Tue, Nov 7, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**  
4/11/16 through 7/11/16 In trenches left sub-sector, LA FOLIE. Situation quiet.

**Wed, Nov 8, 1916    LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**  
8/11/16 Relieved during afternoon by 42<sup>nd</sup> Batt'n. Marched to billets in NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, relieving R.C.R.

**Thu, Nov 9 to Sun, Nov 12, 1916 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**  
9/11/16 through 12/11/16 In brigade reserve in NEUVILLE ST. VAAST. WORKING parties on brigade front.

**Mon, Nov 13, 1916 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

13/11/16 Relieved 42<sup>nd</sup> Batt'n in left sub-sector during afternoon.

**Tue, Nov 14 to Fri, Nov 17, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

14/11/16 through 17/11/16 In trenches, left sub-sector, LA FOLIE. Enemy more active than during previous tours in this sector. Our snipers, Lewis guns, Stokes mortars active daily. In general. situation quiet.

Work of repairing and revetting trenches actively continued.

**Sat, Nov 18, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, FRANCE**

18/11/16 Relieved during evening by 42<sup>nd</sup> Batt'n. On relief companies marched to rest billets at MT.ST. ELOI.

**Sun, Nov 19 to Wed, Nov 22, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

ST. MT. ELOI 19/11/16 through 22/11/16 Rest billets MT.ST.ELOI. Co'y parades for pay, baths, instruction in use of new gas helmets &c. Bombing and Lewis Gun classes. P.P.C.L.I. Comedy Co'y played for the batt'n on the evenings of the 19<sup>th</sup>, 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup>. On Wednesday 22/11/16 battalion route marched to AUBIGNY.

**Thu, Nov 23, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

23/11/16 During evening batt'n relieved 42<sup>nd</sup> Batt'n in left sub-sector, LA FOLIE.

**Fri, Nov 24 to Mon, Nov 27, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

24/11/16 through 27/11/16 Trenches. Left Sub-sector, LA FOLIE. Enemy fairly active. Our snipers, Lewis Guns, Stokes Guns and rifle grenade batteries active. Work of repairing and revetting trenches actively continued.

**Tue, Nov 28, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

28/11/16 During afternoon relieved by 42<sup>nd</sup> Battn. Marched to billets in NEUVILLE ST VAAST vacated by 42<sup>nd</sup>.

**Wed, Nov 29 & Thu., Nov 30, 1916 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

NEUVILLE ST VAAST 29/11/16 through 30/11/16 In Brigade Reserve at NEUVILLE ST VAAST. Working parties on Brigade front.

*[Note transcriber: during November 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]*

**Fri, Dec 1, 1916 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

NEUVILLE ST VAAST 1-12-16 Brigade Reserve NEUVILLE ST VAAST. Working parties on Brigade front.

**Sat, Dec 2, 1916      NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

2-12-16 Brigade Reserve NEUVILLE ST VAAST. Working parties on Brigade front.

**Sun, Dec 3, 1916      NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

3-12-16 During afternoon relieved 42<sup>nd</sup> R.H.C. in left subsector LA FOLIE sector.

**Mon, Dec 4, 1916      LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

LA FOLIE, LEFT SUB-SECTOR 4-12-16 Situation quiet. Continuation of repair and revetting of Trenches.

**Tue, Dec 5, 1916      LA FOLIE, SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

LA FOLIE, LEFT SUB-SECTOR 5-12-16 At 5 am a GERMAN patrol of 2 men approached our trench at the junction of CRATER LINE and VERNON SAP from the right of VERNON CRATER. When within our wire they were fired on by our sentry and retired; they were also fired on and bombed from VERNON CRATER.

At 8.30 am LIEUTS. [G.G.] REYNOLDS and [K.C.] BURNES [McG 144] left DURAND CRATER to reconnoitre enemy post between DURAND and DUFFIELD CRATERS, but were observed by enemy patrol who retired. Our patrol returned to starting point and at 8.50 am accompanied by SNIPER LOPSTON [[Loptson](#) S. McG 227] went out again. They made a gap in the enemy wire by removing several frames and entered the post at 9.20 am finding it empty. They damaged the sniping posts destroyed a number of bombs and returned with a pump at 9.30 am.

At 8.23 pm SNIPER LOPSTON [[Loptson](#)] and 2 N.C.O.'s raided this post again and shot the sentry on duty. An enemy patrol of 12 men then approached and our patrol withdrew.

The Divisional Commander sent his congratulations to the officers and O.R. engaged in these raids and special leave was granted to them all.

**Wed, Dec 6, 1916      LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

6-12-16 Situation quiet. Work on trenches continued.

**Thu, Dec 7, 1916      LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

7-12-16 Situation quiet. Work on trenches continued.

**Fri, Dec 8, 1916      LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

8-12-16 At 3.20 am LIEUT. A.A. McDOUGALL [411055] and SGT DOW [N.D. 411006] with 8 O.R. left COMMON No 1 POST to raid enemy post on north side of opposite lip of the crater. LIEUT McDOUGALL and PTE MULLEN [G.H. 51339] advanced to within 6 ft of the post and remained listening. PTE MULLEN then crawled up and discovered 2 enemy sentries. LIEUT McDOUGALL decided to rush the post and secure identification if possible. The enemy sentries were covered with revolvers and ordered to surrender. One fired his rifle and the other threw out a bomb which wounded the officer. The sentries were both killed with revolver fire. Four men carried LIEUT McDOUGALL [inserted: out] the others forming a

covering party. When all was clear SGT DOW destroyed the post with a Stokes shell and the party returned to our trench at 3.35 am. The Divisional Commander sent his congratulations to LIEUT McDOUGALL and SGT DOW and all O.R. who took part in this raid. The Battalion was relieved by the 42<sup>nd</sup> R.H.C. in the afternoon and marched to MOUNT ST ELOY.

**Sat, Dec 9, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

9-12-16 Divisional Reserve MOUNT ST ELOY. General cleaning up and parades for pay and inspection of clothing, arms, feet etc.

**Sun, Dec 10, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

10-12-16 Divisional Reserve MOUNT ST ELOY. Church parade at 10 am.

**Mon, Dec 11, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

11-12-16 Divisional Reserve MOUNT ST ELOY. Syllabus of training in P.T., musketry, bombing bayonet fighting, drill, Lewis Guns and Signals. P.P.C.L.I. Concert Party at 6 pm.

**Tue, Dec 12, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

12-12-16 Divisional Reserve MOUNT ST ELOY. Inspection by Brigadier ordered, but cancelled through bad weather. Concert Party.

**Wed, Dec 13, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

13-12-16 Divisional Reserve MOUNT ST ELOY. Training continued during morning. In the evening the Battalion relieved the 42<sup>nd</sup> R.H.C. in the left subsector LA FOLIE sector.

**Thu, Dec 14, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

14-12-16 Situation quiet. Work continued on repair and revetting of Trenches.

**Fri, Dec 15, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

15-12-16 Situation quiet. Work on trenches continued.

**Sat, Dec 16, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

16-12-16 LA FOLIE LEFT SUB-SECTOR Situation quiet. Work on trenches continued.

**Sun, Dec 17, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

17-12-16 Situation quiet. Work on trenches continued.

**Mon, Dec 18, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

18-12-16 Situation quiet. Work on trenches continued. Operation orders issued for the blowing of a mine during the night of the 18<sup>th</sup>/19<sup>th</sup>

**Tue, Dec 19, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

19-12-16 Between the hours of 1.30 and 1.45 a.m. three mines were blown in the vicinity of the GRANGE, BIRKIN, TIDZA groups. The near lips were successfully consolidated with few casualties. Lieut Pearson ([A.G.] PEARSON [51383]) was in charge of the operation in the front line. The new crater has been named PATRICIA The 42<sup>nd</sup> B'n relieved during the evening and the regiment moved back to reserve at NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST.

**Wed, Dec 20, 1916 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

NEUVILLE ST.VAAST 20-12-16 Usual working parties furnished to the front line.

**Thu, Dec 21, 1916 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

21-12-16 Usual working parties furnished to the front line.

**Fri, Dec 22, 1916 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

22-12-16 Usual working parties furnished to the front line.

**Sat, Dec 23, 1916 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

23-12-16 Usual working parties furnished to the front line.

**Sun, Dec 24, 1916 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

24-12-16 The Battalion moved up to the front line – LEFT SUB-SECTOR LA FOLIE SECTOR.

**Mon, Dec 25, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

LA FOLIE LEFT SUB SECTOR 25-12-16 Situation quiet throughout the day. Numbers of the enemy showed signs of wishing to fraternize and appeared in NO MANS LAND. They were not fired on – every opportunity was given that some of them might come in to our lines – none of them did so however

**Tue, Dec 26, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

26-12-16 Situation quiet. Work being carried on in the trenches constantly.

**Wed, Dec 27, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

27-12-16 Situation quiet. Work being carried on in the trenches constantly.

**Thu, Dec 28, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

28-12-16 Situation quiet. Work being carried on in the trenches constantly.

**Fri, Dec 29, 1916 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

29-12-16 Relieved today by the 42<sup>nd</sup> Bn and moved to DIVISIONAL RESERVE in the huts at MONT ST. ELOY.

**Sat, Dec 30, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

30-12-16 Cleaning up and bath and pay parades.

**Sun, Dec 31, 1916 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

31-12-16 Church parade in the morning. Company dinners for all ranks in the late afternoon.

*[Note transcriber: during December 1916 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]*

# PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY



*(Thierens Family Archives)*

## **WAR DIARIES 1914 -1919**

Transcribed by Michael Thierens, 1914, 1915 and part of 1916 proofread and commented on by Donna Walker & Ross Toms. The complete War Diary was proofread by Stephen K. Newman, who also made valuable suggestions regarding lay-out and provided much additional information on individual soldiers and diligently researched and pin pointed the locations of the Regiment.

[CEFStudies@EeMike.nl](mailto:CEFStudies@EeMike.nl)

© Michael Thierens 2008.

# 1917

### **Mon, Jan 1, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

Mont St Eloi 1/1/17 In reserve at the huts in Mont St Eloi. The Battalion was paraded and the presents of Her Royal Highness Princess Patricia of Connaught were given to the Officers and N.C.O's by the Commanding Officer.

### **Tue, Jan 2, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

2/1/17 The Battalion paraded at 9.30 am. for the General inspection and were inspected at 10 am by Brigadier General McDonnell [*A.C. Macdonell*].

**Wed, Jan 3, 1917 LA JOLIE, LEFT SUBSECTION, FRANCE**

La Folie left sub sector 3/1/17 Battalion paraded at 3.30 pm for the trenches and relieved the 42<sup>nd</sup> Battn R.H.C

**Thu, Jan 4, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

4/1/17 Situation quiet Usual trench routine carried on.

**Fri, Jan 5, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

5/1/17 Situation quiet Usual trench routine carried on.

**Sat, Jan 6, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

6/1/17 Enemy trench mortar bombardment on Battalion frontage

**Sun, Jan 7, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

7/1/17 Situation quiet. Work in trenches carried on.

**Mon, Jan 8, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

8/1/17 Battalion was relieved by 42<sup>nd</sup> Battn R.H.C. and went into Brigade Reserve in Neuville St Vaast. Working parties were furnished for front line. Battalion received letters from Her Royal Highness [*Princess Patricia of Connaught*] thanking the N.C.O's & men for their Christmas presents to her.

**Tue, Jan 9, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

La Folie left Sub sector 9/1/17 Working parties furnished for front line. The following honours and awards were promulgated in orders. Military Cross T/Major D.A. Clark. [[D.A. Clarke](#)] D.C.M. # 618 C.S.M. Gillingham F. Authority London Gazette. Jan. 1<sup>st</sup>. 1917. Mentioned in dispatches Lt/Col R. T. Pelly D.S.O. Major C.J.T. Stewart D.S.O. Capt. H.W. Niven D.S.O. M.C. Capt. R.S. Lake Lt. H.F. Richardson # 43 R.Q.M.S. Donald J No 1762 Sgt. Cooper E. No 603 Sgt Sinclair N. F. No 883 A/Cpl. Draycott W.M.L. Authority London Gazette Jan 4<sup>th</sup> 1917.

**Wed, Jan 10, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

10/1/17 Working parties furnished for front line.

**Thu, Jan 11, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

11/1/17 Working parties furnished for front line.

**Fri, Jan 12, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

12/1/17 Working parties furnished for front line.

**Sat, Jan 13, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

13/1/17 Battalion relieved 42<sup>nd</sup> Battn. R.H.C. in the front line.

**Sun, Jan 14, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

14/1/17 Situation quiet. Trench improvements carried on

**Mon, Jan 15, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

15/1/17 Situation quiet. Trench improvements carried on

**Tue, Jan 16, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

16/1/17 Situation quiet. Trench improvements carried on

**Wed, Jan 17, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

17/1/17 Situation quiet. Trench improvements carried on

**Thu, Jan 18, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

18/1/17 Battalion was relieved by 42<sup>nd</sup> Battn. R.H.C. and went into Divisional Reserve Mont St. Eloi.

**Fri, Jan 19, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

Mont St Eloi 19/1/17 Battalion paraded to Divisional Baths at Marceouil [Maroeuil] at 2.

P.M. A football match was played between Right half and Left half Battalion.

Demonstration was given by Special platoon training under Major Clark M.C. [*D.A. Clarke*]

**Sat, Jan 20, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

20/1/17 Usual training carried out. Football match played in the afternoon.

**Sun, Jan 21, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

21/1/17 Demonstration on new Infantry training given by Special Platoon. Drill parades during the day. Major A.A.M. [*Agar*] Adamson, D.S.O. to be a/Col. DR.O. 1415

**Mon, Jan 22, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

22/1/17 Platoon training regrouping of Platoons by Platoon Commanders.

**Tue, Jan 23, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

23/1/17 Presentation of new draft to their Colours. Platoon training and final inspection by the Commanding Officer preparatory to departure to trenches

**Wed, Jan 24, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

La Folie Sub Section 24/1/17 Usual trench routine. Situation quiet. Weather cold and bright.

**Thu, Jan 25, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

25/1/17 Usual trench routine. Situation quiet. Weather cold and bright.

**Fri, Jan 26, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

26/1/17 A raid was carried out by the Battalion on the German lines between Duffield and Durand Craters for the purpose of destroying listening post & dugouts and capturing any enemy encountered, the raid was successfully carried out by Major A. Rasmussen and a party of two NCOs. and ten men Two prisoners were taken and heavy casualties inflicted on the enemy and dugouts destroyed. Our party returned safely to our lines without casualties. Enemy shelled our lines heavily in retaliation but caused no casualties.

**Sat, Jan 27, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

27/1/176 Artillery activity on whole of our front, no casualties were inflicted

**Sun, Jan 28, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

28/1/17 A small raid at 4. AM. was carried out by Lt [A.N.B.] Mortimer [51259] 1 NCO and 4 O.R. on iron rail post in enemy observation line between Birkin & Common Craters Our party reached the post, killing 2 sentries and returned to our lines, Lt Mortimer and the NCO being slightly wounded.

Battalion was relieved by 42<sup>nd</sup> Battn R.H.C. and went into Brigade support in Neuville St Vaast

**Mon, Jan 29, 1917 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

29/1/17 Battalion furnished working parties for the front line.

**Tue, Jan 30, 1917 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

30/1/17 Battalion furnished working parties for the front line.

**Wed, Jan 31, 1917 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

31/1/17 Battalion furnished working parties for the front line. Heavy enemy artillery activity around Neuville St Vaast.

*[Note transcriber: during January 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]*

**Thu, Feb 1, 1917 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

Neuville St Vaast 1/2/17 Battalion furnished working parties for the front line.

**Fri, Feb 2, 1917 NEUVILLE ST. VAAST, FRANCE**

2/2/17 Battalion was relieved 42<sup>nd</sup> Battalion R.H.C. in the front line

**Sat, Feb 3, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

3/2/17 Situation quiet. Usual trench routine carried on.

**Sun, Feb 4, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

4/2/17 A small camouflet was blown by the enemy on the Battalion frontage. No casualties to the Battalion but the lip of Patricia Crater Post was damaged.

**Mon, Feb 5, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

5/2/17 Situation quiet. Usual trench work carried on.

**Tue, Feb 6, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

6/2/17 Situation quiet. Usual trench routine carried on

**Wed, Feb 7, 1917 LA FOLIE SECTOR, VIMY, FRANCE**

MONT ST ELOY 7/2/17 Battalion was relieved by the 42<sup>nd</sup> Battn R.H.C. & went into DIVISIONAL REST at MONT ST ELOY

**Thu, Feb 8, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

8/2/17 In reserve at the huts MONT ST ELOI. Training carried on as per Syllabus.

**Fri, Feb 9, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

9/2/17 Route march in the morning. Battalion paraded for Baths in ECROIVRES.

**Sat, Feb 10, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

10/2/17 Training as per Syllabus.

**Sun, Feb 11, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

BRUAY 11/2/17 Battalion moved to Corps Rest Area at BRUAY

**Mon, Feb 12, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

BRUAY 12/2/17 Parades carried on as per Syllabus of training. New platoon organisation. Bombing, Bayonet Fighting Rifle Grenadiers with sports at 3.30 p.m. in afternoon.

**Tue, Feb 13, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

13/2/17 Parades as per Syllabus of training

**Wed, Feb 14, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

14/2/17 Battalion paraded at 10.30 A.M. and were inspected by the Field Marshal Commanding-in-Chief [*Sir Douglas Haig*]. In the afternoon parades as per Syllabus. The following award was promulgated in Orders Military Cross:- Lieut. A.N.B. Mortimer (Authy M.S.H/4729/41 of 9/2/17).

**Thu, Feb 15, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

15/2/17 Battalion had a rehearsal of inspection parade and were inspected by the Corps Commander [*Lt-Gen Julian Byng*]. Remainder of day training & sports.

**Fri, Feb 16, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

16/2/17 Inspection by General Nivelles Commander-in-Chief of the French Armies in the North and North-East.

Battalion paraded in the evening and attended concert in the Theatre Royale given by Battalion Comedy Company.

**Sat, Feb 17, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

17/2/17 Parades as per Syllabus. Divisional School. Special platoon was placed at the disposal of the Battalion in the afternoon.

**Sun, Feb 18, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

18/2/17 Church Parade to Theatre in BRUAY. Football match in the afternoon between the right and left half Battn.

**Mon, Feb 19, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

19/2/17 Parades as per syllabus of training. Battalion Pay parade in the afternoon.

**Tue, Feb 20, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

20/2/17 Parades as per syllabus of training. Congratulatory message received from Field Marshall the Commander-in-Chief [*Sir Douglas Haig*] & General Nivelles Commanding the French Armies in the N. & N.E. re inspections of the 14<sup>th</sup> & 16<sup>th</sup> inst.

**Wed, Feb 21, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

21/2/17 Parades as per syllabus. Football match in afternoon between Battalion team and No 10 Can Field Ambulance. Brigade Boxing Tournament in theatre at 6. p.m.

**Thu, Feb 22, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

22/2/17 Parades as per syllabus of training.

**Fri, Feb 23, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

23/2/17 Parades as per syllabus of training. Football match in afternoon semi-final in Brigade Championship P.P.C.L.I. vs. 49<sup>th</sup> BATTALION.

**Sat, Feb 24, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

24/2/17 Parades as per syllabus of training.

**Sun, Feb 25, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

25/2/17 Brigade parade for the presentation of medal ribbons by G.O.C. 3<sup>rd</sup> Canadian Division [*Maj-Gen L.J. Lipsett*]

**Mon, Feb 26, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

26/2/17 Parades as per syllabus of training. Bath parade for Battalion at HOUDAIN in afternoon.

**Tue, Feb 27, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

BRUAY 27/2/17 Parades as per syllabus of training. Brigade Bombing and bayonet fighting competition at MARLES-LES-MINES.

**Wed, Feb 28, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

28/2/17 Parades as per syllabus of training. Battalion paraded to practice trenches at HOUDAIN.

*[Note transcriber: during February 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]*

**Thu, Mar 1, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

BRUAY 1.3.17 Half Battalion, Company training as per syllabus. Half Battalion, attack practice on Practice Trenches. Successful Battalion dinner in the evening prefaced by performance of Comedy Coy. Cloudy, showery weather. Officers "soccer" with the R. C .R's we won.

**Fri, Mar 2, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

2.3.17 Attack practices and Company Training. Weather fine.

**Sat, Mar 3, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

3.3.17 Parades as per syllabus of training: Half holiday in afternoon. Win for Officer's Soccer team vs. 42<sup>nd</sup>

**Sun, Mar 4, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

4.3.17 Church parade in a.m. cancelled on account of rain. Lieut [J.A.] Haslam arrives from England.

**Mon, Mar 5, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

5.3.17 Attack practice and Company Training.

**Tue, Mar 6, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

6.3.17 Company Foot ball. Attack practice as usual. Lieut [F.L.] Appleton to Hospital with Typhoid. Draft of 95 men from Can. Ent. Bn. [*Canadian Entrenching Battalion*] arrived today.

**Wed, Mar 7, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

BRUAY 7.3.17 Coy. Foot ball: Sports: Attack practices and Coy. Training: Inspection of Draft.

**Thu, Mar 8, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

8.3.17 Bn. in attack on Practice Trenches. Baths at HOUDAIN for half Battalion. Coy. Training in p.m.

**Fri, Mar 9, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

9.3.17 Bn. spent day on Practice Trenches.

**Sat, Mar 10, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

10.3.17 "Bn. in attack" in a.m. on Practice Trenches.

**Sun, Mar 11, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

11.3.17 Inspection by H.R.H. Prince Arthur of Connaught in the a.m. Address to Bn. by H.R.H. and a further address to officers. New draft presented to the Colour. Address to draft by Lt.-Col. [Agar] Adamson Weather, fine.

**Mon, Mar 12, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

12.3.17 Company training and attack practice.

**Tue, Mar 13, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

13.3.17 Battalion at Practice Trenches.

**Wed, Mar 14, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

14.3.17 Brigade at Practice Trenches. [inserted: Major] General Lipsett [*G.O.C. 3<sup>rd</sup> Canadian Division*] present

**Thu, Mar 15, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

BRUAY 15.3.17 Repetition of Brigade practice attack. Lieut-Gen. Byng [*Canadian Corps Commander*]. and Major General Lipsett [*3<sup>rd</sup> Canadian Division Commander*] present. The attack was quite a success Company Parades. Performance by Comedy Coy. for Officers and men of the Battalion.

**Fri, Mar 16, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

16.3.17 Company Training. Note of Condolence sent to H.R.H. Princess Patricia [inserted: of Connaught] on the death . of the Duchess of Connaught [*her mother*].

**Sat, Mar 17, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

17.3.17 Company Training.

**Sun, Mar 18, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

18.3.17 Bde. Church Parade, Square, Bruay. March past. Major Genl. Lipsett [*G.O.C. 3<sup>rd</sup> Canadian Division*] afterwards.

**Mon, Mar 19, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

19.3.17 Company Training. Lt. Morris in advance to DUMPBELL [*Dumbell Camp*].

[*Note transcriber: the Diarist lost track of the dates here, inserting two entries for 21 March and placing the entry for 20 March after them*].

**Wed, Mar 21, 1917 [Entry 1] BRUAY, FRANCE**

H.Q. Coy. 2 & 3, Coys. moved to DUMPBELL [*DUMBELL*] CAMP. BOIS DES ALLEUX [*MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY)*],. 1 and 4 Coys. remained in BRUAY Camp consists of Bivouacs. Rather uncomfortable.

**Wed, Mar 21, 1917 [Entry 2] BRUAY, FRANCE**

21.3.17 Lt. Col. [Agar] Adamson goes on Leave to Paris.

**Tue, Mar 20, 1917 BRUAY, FRANCE**

Move to BOIS DES ALLEUX [*MONT ST. ELOY (ELOY)*]. Still another day in BRUAY. Weather, bad.

**Thu, Mar 22, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY) & BRUAY, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 22.3.17 Half Battalion moves to trenches. Bn. H.Q. in GRANGE TUNNEL. 2 Coy. in Line. Bn. holding Coy. Frontage LEFT GRANGE to RIGHT TIDZA. 2 Coy. in PYLONES. Many working parties. Bad weather – snow and rain.

**Fri, Mar 23, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & BRUAY, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 23.3.17 1 and 4 Coys. move from BRUAY to BOIS DES ALLEUX [*MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY)*]. Major Clark [*D.A. Clarke 1763*] in Command. Transport at GOUY SERVINS. Bad weather Bosch very quiet. Our guns pounding away.

**Sat, Mar 24, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

24.3.17 Weather fine. ~~2 Coy. relieves 3 Coy in Line~~

**Sun, Mar 25, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

25.3.17 Our guns still pounding. The Bosch quiet. Showery weather.

**Mon, Mar 26, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

26.3.17 Raid by Major [A.] Rasmussen – [inserted: 11.p.m.] small party, by stealth. Party seen by Bosch and bombed before they got across. Casualties: 1 killed, 5 wounded.

**Tue, Mar 27, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

TRENCHES 27.3.17 Raid by Lt. [A.F.] Neatby [*411085*]. 7.15 a.m. – 6 men. Same place as Major [A.] Rasmussen - between PATRICIA and GRANGE. Stokes barrage on his flanks. Reached Bosch Line. Nobody there. 1 Coy. relieves 3 Coy. in line.

**Wed, Mar 28, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

28.3.17 Another daylight raid Lt. Neatby [*411085*] and 8 men Between DUFFIELD and GRANGE. Stokes barrage for flanks and Artillery for Rear. Reached German line but had rough time with a large number of Enemy. Hand to hand fight with Bosches. 5 killed by raiding party and 2 with Snipers. Our casualties: one killed: one wounded and missing. 1 seriously wounded two slightly wounded. The party did wonderfully. Also Corp. Mullen [*G.H. 51339*] & covering party of Snipers and R.G's [*Rifle Grenadiers*] did extremely well. Weather fine.

**Thu, Mar 29, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

29.3.17 Bad weather. Working parties from Half Bn at BOIS DES ALLEUX. 4 Coy. relieves 1 Coy in Line.

**Fri, Mar 30, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

30.3.17 Practice barrage Artillery on Bde front. 4. p.m

**Sat, Mar 31, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

31.3.17 Another barrage – 10. A.M. A better one. 1 Coy, in PYLONES, relieved by a Coy. of 60<sup>th</sup> Bn. Weather fine.

*[Note transcriber: during March 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]*

**Sun, Apr 1, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

Bois des Alleux 1.4.17 No 2 & 3 Coy's move from DUMBELL CAMP to billets in VILLERS-AUX-BOIS No. 1 & 4 from line to VILLERS billets. Enemy barraged our Communication Trench PLINE & GRANGE-GIVENCHY Road SOMBARD line – one man wounded. Strong enemy aircraft patrols over our lines

**Mon, Apr 2, 1917 VILLERS-AUX-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS-AUX-BOIS 2.4.17 Following message from H.R.H. Princess PATRICIA “Kindly convey to all ranks my heartfelt thanks for kind sympathy” and from [inserted: Lieut] General HON. SIR JULIAN BYNG Comm'g Can. Corps “Please convey to all ranks of Brigade my great appreciation of their repeatedly successful raids.”

**Tue, Apr 3, 1917 VILLERS-AUX-BOIS, FRANCE**

3.4.17 Lieut's McCARTNEY [*D.H. Macartney* 802] – [C.B.] HICK [489762] – [J.E.] ALMON [773] & [A.J.] KELLY taken on strength.

**Wed, Apr 4, 1917 VILLERS-AUX-BOIS, FRANCE**

4.4.17 No. 2 & 4 Coys relieve 43<sup>rd</sup> Battn in trenches Major [A] RASMUSSEN wounded in raid 27-3-17 & Lieut [A.F.] NEATBY [411085] in raid of 28-3-17.

**Thu, Apr 5, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & VILLERS-AUX-BOIS, FRANCE**

5.4.17 Major A.G. MARTIN M.C.[1266] returned to duty after completing Senior Officer's Course.

**Fri, Apr 6, 1917 GRANGE LINE, VIMY & VILLERS-AUX-BOIS, FRANCE**

6.4.17 No's 1 & 3 Coys proceed to GRANGE SUBWAY – VIMY RIDGE. Intermittent shelling by enemy – 3 of our planes fell in enemy lines in flames.

*[Note transcriber: there is no entry for Sat, Apr 7, 1917]*

**Sun, Apr 8, 1917 GRANGE LINE, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 8.4.1917 Orders received to attack & capture a portion of VIMY RIDGE. Intermediate objective being from S 22 d. 7¾.2 to S 22.d. 3½.5½ junction of BLUE to BEGGAR Trench exclusive. Reference Map VIMY sheet 36 S.W. 1/10000. and Final Objective being BRITT TRENCH from s.23.c.4.5. to Junction with STRAUBWASSER WEG

(S.23.c.3½ .6) Inclusive) Thence to S.22.d.9 ½.9 ½. with strong points at S.23.c.3½.6. and S.23.c.1.8.

Message received at midnight from Brig. Gen. A.G. MACDONELL as follows “I cannot go to bed without wishing you & your gallant lads good speed, best of good luck and victory”

*[Note transcriber: the next entries incorrectly begin with 8.4.1917, this should be 9.4.17]*

### **Mon, Apr 9 to Wed, Apr 11, 1917 ASSAULT ON VIMY RIDGE, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 8.4.17 [9.4.17] through 11.4.17 Operations against VIMY RIDGE successfully carried out – both objectives being reached and effectively consolidated. Detailed narrative of these operations appear in the Appendix referred to in the margin. The weather during the four days operations commenced with heavy showers on 8.4.17 turning to a fine bright day on the 9.4.17 with heavy snow storms on 10/4/17 and 11/4/17.

Battalion relieved on 11.4.17 and moves to La Motte Camp

Appendix No A

### **Thu, Apr 12, 1917 LA MOTTE FARM [MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY)], FRANCE**

LA MOTTE 12.4.17 3 to 4 inches of snow on ground – rapidly melting – Bright turning to snow showers. Camp in very bad condition. Lieut. L.V. DRUMMOND – HAY appointed Adjutant (27.12.16). LIEUT J.E. PIKE [475991] taken on strength - posted No. 3 Co & LIEUT N.D. DOW [411006] to Battn. H.Q. A/Major H.E. SULIVAN invalided sick to England. LIEUT [W.H.] MORRIS M.C. [410512] to be Bombing officer – Lieut. R.L. HAGGARD [1768] assumes Command No 3 Co.

### **Fri, Apr 13, 1917 LA MOTTE FARM [MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY)], FRANCE**

LA MOTTE CAMP 13.4.17 Showery. Following message received at 5 p.m. 13.4.17 “Congratulate all ranks heartily on the recent Canadian successes. I have heard of your doings with pride” PRINCESS PATRICIA” to which the following reply was sent by the Officer Commanding “All ranks of Your Royal Highness’ Regiment appreciate most keenly your gracious telegram and send further assurance of our devotion.”

### **Sat, Apr 14, 1917 LA MOTTE FARM [MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY)], FRANCE**

LA MOTTE CAMP 14.4.17 Military Medal awarded to No 487390 L/Cpl Campbell S.H. & 489766 Pte HENRY H.N. Lieuts LALOR C.F. SCOTT L. [640] & GODBER H.J. taken on strength posted No. 1 2 & 4 Co’s.

LIEUT R.H. SIMONDS, [411056] R.L. SLADEN & A.F. WAGNER [411111] killed 9.4.17 VIMY RIDGE

63 other ranks killed 137 wounded 3 missing. 10 died of wound Officers 3 killed 8 wounded

### **Sun, Apr 15, 1917 LA MOTTE FARM, [MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY)], FRANCE**

15.4.17 Rain. Following message from H.R.H. Princess Patricia through H.R.H. Prince ARTHUR of CONNAUGHT “I am very proud to hear of the gallant part taken by the Regiment in the Capture of VIMY RIDGE and I send them my most hearty congratulations. I sincerely trust that their Casualties were not heavy” to which the following reply was sent him

“All ranks of Her ROYAL HIGHNESS Regiment most thoroughly appreciate the very kind message just received from you. We have already cabled our Colonel – in – Chief acknowledging previous cablegram.” Signed AGAR ADAMSON LT. Col. P.P.C.L.I. Congratulatory messages were received from the Commander in – Chief [*Sir Douglas Haig*], & [*General H.S. Horne*] The Commander First Army [ inserted: and Sir Robert Borden] addressed to G.O.C Canadian Corps [*General Sir Julian Byng*]. Major A.G. MARTIN M.C. [1266] assumes duties of 2 i/c vice Major D.F.B. GRAY D.S.O. (appointed G.S.O. 3). Lieut L. SCOTT [640] assumes command of No. 2 Co. vice Major ~~GRAY~~ Martin Capt. A.G. PEARSON [51383] apptd. Acting Major vice Major C.J.T. STEWART D.S.O. invalided (10.2.17). Lieut. J.R. MACPHERSON [411064] to be Act’g Captain and Lieut. A.C. WHITE [51266] to be Act’g Captain whilst employed as Instructor 3<sup>rd</sup> Can. Div. School. Lieut. B.K. SNIDER [1624] taken on strength. Battalion moves to billets in GOUY SERVINS.

**Mon, Apr 16, 1917 GOUY-SERVINS, FRANCE**

GOUY SERVINS 16.4.17 Rain. Lectures and training.

**Tue, Apr 17, 1917 GOUY-SERVINS, FRANCE**

GOUY SERVINS 17.4.17 Lectures & Training. Rain. Congratulatory messages addressed to the C. in C. by H. M. The KING and by The SECRETARY of STATE for WAR and by the C. in C. French N. & N.E. Armies General NIVELLE referring to the action of VIMY RIDGE received.

Lieut TAGGART W.J. and WILLIAMS M.W. [*McG 145*] taken on strength.

**Wed, Apr 18, 1917 GOUY-SERVINS, FRANCE**

GOUY SERVINS 18.4.17 Rain. Congratulatory message from Major – General TURNER Comg Can. Troops in ENGLAND to Corps Commander referring to VIMY RIDGE action. Lectures and training

**Thu, Apr 19, 1917 GOUY-SERVINS, FRANCE**

GOUY SERVINS 19.4.17 Showery. Training

**Fri, Apr 20, 1917 GOUY SERVINS, FRANCE**

GOUY SERVINS 20.4.17 fine. Training. Battalion moves into Quarry Line on VIMY RIDGE at midnight. Major [A] RASMUSSEN reported back from hospital.

**Sat, Apr 21, 1917 QUARRY LINE, VIMY RIDGE, FRANCE**

Trenches 21.4.17 fine. Transport lines at LA TARGETTE

**Sun, Apr 22, 1917 QUARRY LINE, VIMY RIDGE, FRANCE**

Trenches 22.4.17 fine.

**Mon, Apr 23, 1917 QUARRY LINE, VIMY RIDGE, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 23.4.17 fine. No 2 Co'y relieves a Co. of 2 C.M.R. in T.19.b.

**Tue, Apr 24, 1917 WEST OF MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE ROAD, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 24.4.17 fine. [inserted: but cloudy] Nos 4 1 Co. & 3 Co. relieve 1 ½ Coys of 4 C M R. in right sub-section front line & No. 4 Coy one Co. 2 C.M.R. Ref. Map. 36C S.W. 1/20000. B. H. Q. at T.19 b. 8.4

**Wed, Apr 25, 1917 WEST OF MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE ROAD, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 25.4.17 Fine. [inserted: but cloudy] B. H. Q – railway embankment – 1 & 3 in front line 2 & 4 in support.

**Thu, Apr 26, 1917 WEST OF MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE ROAD, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 26.4.17 Fine. [inserted:& warmer but cloudy] A prisoner was captured by patrol at 1 a.m. Much patrolling. both aggressive & reconnaissance done – 2 new trenches being dug – a support line and Second line – Considerable hostile shelling.

**Fri, Apr 27, 1917 WEST OF MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE ROAD, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 27.4.17 Fine. Situation normal.

**Sat, Apr 28, 1917 WEST OF MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE ROAD, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 28.4.17 Fine. In night of 27-28 Nos. 2 & 4 Cos. relieve 1 & 3 in front line No. 1 & 3 retiring to Support. Normal

**Sun, Apr 29, 1917 WEST OF MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE ROAD, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 29.4.17 Fine. On 28th a Corps and a Division made a successful attack on our right capturing ~~Arleu~~ ARLEUX & part of OP.PY. Considerable hostile shelling

**Mon, Apr 30, 1917 WEST OF MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE ROAD, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 24.4.17 Fine. On night of 29-30 2 Cos. 52 Batl.n relieve Nos. 1 & 3 in Cos. in support. – 1 & 3 going back to Quarry line.

Fine. Bombarded with enemy gas shells from 1 a.m. to 5 p.m. 2 minor casualties. Much discomfort experienced. otherwise quiet. No. 1 & 3 Cos. proceed to billets at Villers au Bois. Total Casualties from 24 to 30 April. Officers – nil O.R. 6 Killed in action 2 Died of wounds 4 wounded still at duty. 22 wounded 9 shell shock & gas poisoning – Total 43. Major [D.F.B.] GRAY D.S.O. to be G.S.O. 3 3rd Can. Div. vice Major A.P.O. MEREDITH

[Note transcriber: during April 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]

APPENDIX A

PRINCESS PATRICIAS LIGHT INFANTRY

OPERATION ORDERS No.7:

By Lieut. Col. Agar Adamson, DSO, Comdg. PPCLI.

In the Field.

5th April 1917.

[inserted: Map Ref. 36 B. & 51C]

Operations will take place on day (date of which has been communicated verbally to all concerned)

1. INTENTION. No.2 Co. will relieve Centre Company of the 43rd Bn on W/X night.

No.4 Co. will relieve a Coy of the 43rd Bn in PYLONES on W/X night.

Nos.1 and 3 Companies will proceed to trenches and will be accommodated in GRANGE SUBWAY entering via QUARRIES line on X/Y night.

2. STARTING POINT. X.19.d.3.3. (Map Reference 36B)

3. ORDER OF MARCH. W/X night – 2,4 and H.Q.Details.

X/Y " - 1 and 3 Coys.

4. INTERVAL. 100 yards between platoons.

5. TIMR OF START. 7.45 p.m.

6. ROUTE. VILLERS AUX BOIS – LAMOTTE FARM – (F.2.d.4.9. to F.9.a.0.7. – F.9.a.5.4. – F.4.c.0.3. – F.4.c.2.1) – BERTHONVAL FARM and plank road.

7. DRESS. Battle order. Jerkins will be worn and one blanket carried.

Blanket will be returned to Transport on Z night.

8. REPORTS. Completion of reliefs will be reported to Bn. HQ by runner.

9. OFFICERS KITS Trench kit and mess stores for Nos.2 and 4 Coys and HQ

MESS STORES & will be piled ready for loading outside No.1mCo's billet  
TRANSPORT. at 3 p.m. today and Nos.1 and 3 Coys same time and place,  
April 6th.

Spare kits, men's packs and extra blankets rolled in bundles of ten  
will be placed in Canteen billet No.42 under Co. arrangements and  
handed over to Q.M.

10. BOMBS. Nos.2 and 4 Coys will draw bombs and other supplies to be  
carried at billet No.7 at 1 p.m. today.

Nos.1 and 3 Coys at same place and time on April 6th 1917.

11. SANDBAGS. Each man will carry one sandbag to enable him to carry  
rations etc which will not go in haversack. Sandbags will be  
issued in accordance with para.10.

Issued by runner at .....

Sgd. L.V. Drummond Hay Lt. & Adjt.

Copy No.1 2nd i/C

2 Adjt

3 O.C. No.1 Co.

4 2

5 3

6 4

7 O.C. Bn. Hqrs

8

9 T.O.

10 Q.M.

11 7th C.I.B.

12 War Diary

13 M.O.

-----

APPENDIX B

SECRET

Copy No.

PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY.

OPERATION ORDERS No.8

By Lieut. Col. AGAR ADAMSON, DSO Comdg. PPCLI.

In the Field.

7th April 1917

Reference Map – Vimy Sheet 36 SW. 1/10,000

.....

1.

INTENTION. On Z day 7th Cdn. Inf. Bn. will attack and capture a portion of the VIMY RIDGE.

2. TIME

Zero hour will be communicated separately to all concerned.

3. BOUNDARIES. (a) Intermediate Objective.

From S.22.d.7¾.2 to S.22.d.3½.5½

Junction of ~~BEGGAR~~ BLUE TRENCH and BEGGAR TRENCH (exclusive).

(b) Final Objective.

BRITT TRENCH from S.23.c.4.5. to Junction with STAUBWESSER WEG (S.23.c.3½.6) (Inclusive); thence to S.22.d.9½.9½, with Strong Points at S.23.c. ½2.6 and S.23.c.1.8.

.....

4. THE INTENTION The Battalion will attack from the OBSERVATION LINE on a ASSAULTING TROUPS. two Company frontage: Nos.1 and 3 Coys capturing the Intermediate Objective; Nos.2 and 4 Coys passing through and capturing the Final Objective.

Nos.1 and 2 Coys on the Right; Nos. 3 and 4 Coys on the Left.

5. OBJECTIVES.

No.1 Co. from S.22.d.7¾.2. to S.22.d.5½.3½.

No.3 Co. from S.22.d.5½.3½. to S.22.d.3½.5½.

No2 Co. BRITT TRENCH from S.23.c.4.5. to S.23.c.2.7.

No.4 Co from S.23.c.2.7. to S.22.d.9½.9½.

6. STRONG POINTS.

No.1 Co. with attached Engineers and Machine Guns will establish and hold S.P.6 at S.22.d.8½.5 with minimum garrison of 50 men.

No.2 Co. will establish S.P. at S.23.c.3½.6 and

No.4 Co at S.23.c.1.8.

.....  
7. PATROLS TO  
BOIS DU CHAMP  
POURRI

After reaching Final Objective, Nos.2 and 4 Coys will push patrols forward towards BOIS CHAMP DU POURRI (S.23.b) to ascertain whether the defences of these localities are occupied. Protective barrage will be lifted to enable this to be done. (Orders covering this will be issued later)

.....

9. BATTALION H.Q. Will be in GRANGE SUBWAY at S.27.d.93.96.

9. ARTILLERY  
BARRAGE AND  
INFANTRY  
ACTION.

At zero hour the intense shrapnel barrage will open on the enemy's front line system, a short distance east of his crater posts and continue for three minutes. Small parties of the leading Coys will push forward into the craters and enemy crater posts, if the barrage permits.

At plus 3 the barrage will move forward in accordance with Artillery Barrage Time Table previously issued until at plus 35 it is 150 yds beyond the Intermediate Objective. The Assaulting Troops will follow it up closely to the Intermediate Objective which will be mopped up and consolidated by the Coys detailed for this work. Parties will be pushed out in front and up Communication Trenches close under the barrage to protect the Consolidation Parties. The barrage will remain 150 yards ~~the~~ beyond the Intermediate Objective for 40 mins. during which time the troops detailed to capture the final objective will form up in rear of the Intermediate Objective.

A short time before Plus 75 the troops detailed to take the final objective will creep forward and form up close under the barrage in front of the Intermediate Objective, to assault the Final Objectiv

At Plus 75 the barrage will move forward in accordance with the Artillery Barrage Time Table until at Plus 95 it finally stops 300 yards beyond the Final Objective. The assaulting troops will follow the barrage closely, mopping up as they go, spe special attention being given to the ECOLE COMMUNE.

Battalion will detail part of their Coys proceeding beyond Intermediate Objective to provide covering parties and to construct the Strong Points in LA FOLIE WOOD. The remainder of these Coys will mop up consolidate and garrison the next trench in rear of and approximately parallel to the Final Obhectivr.

The actual advance into LA FOLIE WOOD will be preceded by scouts and covering parties who will be specially detailed for this work.

The barrage will ultimately lift to enable patrols to be pushed forward in accordance with para.7.

.....

10. MOPPERS UP.

Two sections of the 49th Bn. (E.R.) will be detailed to each

Coy to act as moppers-up. They will be under the orders of the Coys to which they are attached and will accompany the attack. After completing mopping-up they will act as stretcher-bearers, making two trips to Regimental Aid Post and then report to O.C. 49th BN. (E.R) at MACHINE GUN FORT. Moppers-up to be in "P" Line to left of GRANGE C.T. two hours before zero.

.....

11. 7th CANADIAN T.M. BATTY. One Officer will be in charge of one Gun and Crew and will be attached to No.2 Co. To be in Assembly Trench two hours before zero.

.....

12. 7th CANADIAN M.G. COY. One Officer in charge of one Machine Gun and Crew will be attached to No.1 Co. to be in Assembly 1½ hours before zero. A second Machine-gun will be in reserve at Bn. HQ until Final Objective has been captured when it will take up a position in S.P.\_6.

.....

13. ENGINEERS. One Officer and four sappers of the 7th Field Co. C.E. will accompany No.1 Co. to assist in the construction of S.P.6. This party will take up position in [inserted: assembly] trench two hours before zero.

.....

14. S.O.S. SIGNAL. The S.O.S. Signal will be RED, either rockets or Very lights. As many as possible fired in quick succession.

.....

15. DISTINUISHING FLAGS. When objectives are reached the Divisional distinguishing flags will be waved NOT stuck in the ground. Flags will be carried as follows: 3rd CND.DIV...BLACK & RED.  
4th CDN.DIV...RED.

16. SMOKE BARRAGE. No.4 Special Co. R.E. will arrange for a Smoke Barrage from 4 inch Stokes Mortars to cover the BLACK Line from O. to Plus 15, provided the wind is then between North West and South West. The decision as to the employment of smoke will rest with the Officer in charge of the 4 inch Stokes.

.....

17. CONTACT PATROLS. Contact aeroplanes will fly at the following times:-  
(a) Zero plus 50 minutes  
(b) Zero plus two hours.

18.

REPORTS.

Will be sent to Bn.HQ in GRANGE SUBWAY S.27.b.93.96. until Final Objective has been ~~gained~~ captured when Bn. HQ will be in FAMINE TRENCH S.22.d.5.3½.

19.

Watches will be synchronised at Bn. HQ three hours before zero.

Issued by runner at

Copy No.1 C.O.

- 2 2nd i/C
- 3 Adjutant
- 4 O.C. No.1 Co.
- 5           2
- 6           3
- 7           4

8 R.C.R.

9 42nd Bn

Sgd. L.V.DRUMMOND HAY Lieut.& Adjt.

10 49th Bn

11 7th Cdn. Inf. Bde

12 7th Cdn. T.M. Batty

13 7th Cdn. M.G. Co.

14 War Diary

APPENDIX C

PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY.

NARRATIVE OF OPERATIONS.

April 8th-9th-10th-11th, 1917.

On April 8th 1917 the Battalion was holding the line on VIMY RIDGE from SUFFIELD SAP to TIDZA CRATER with one Coy in line, two Coys in GRANGE SUBWAY and one Coy in EMPIRE REDOUBT, Battalion H.Q. in GRANGE SUBWAY. All details and general preparations had been completed and Bn. was under orders to attack and capture VIMY RIDGE.

Brigade Orders covering the attack were received on the morning of the 8th and Battalion Operation Orders [inserted: as] attached (marked "A") were accordingly issued.

### 8th April 1917

6 p.m. Message received from Brigade notifying Zero hour to be 5.30 a.m. 9th April 1917.

8 p.m. Instructions issued to Coys to be in Assembly Trenches ready to jump off at 4.30 a.m.

9th April 1917.

### 9th April 1917

4.30 a.m. Rum issue to all Coys.

5.30 a.m. Artillery opened and leading wave commenced to climb up our lip of craters.

7.10 a.m. Message No.1 received from Lieut. R.L. Haggard O.C. No.1 Co, stating that his Coy had reached FAMINE TRENCH with few casualties and that he was in touch with R.C.R. on right and No.3 Coy on left Prisoners taken belong to 262 Regiment.

8 a.m. Major McDougall went from Bn. HQ and established Advanced HQ in FAMINE TRENCH.

8.30 a.m. Message No.2 received from Lieut. Lownsborough, O.C. No.4 Co, stating his Coy reached final objective at 7.40 a.m. with few casualties. Lieut. R.L. Sladen killed, Lieuts. Cloran and Plumer [[Plummer](#)] wounded. Patrol sent down into wood in front and both his flanks connected up.

9.30 a.m. Message No.3 from Lieut. Tenbrocke [[TenBroeke](#)], O.C. No.2 Co, stating his Coy in final objective. 4 German Officers and 14 O.R. Taken prisoners. Casualties pretty strong. Enemy resistance weak. Enemy artillery firing on FAMINE TRENCH. Patrol sent out in direction of BOIS DU CHAMP POURRI. Flanks connected up.

9.45 am. Message No.4 received from Lieut. Tenbrocke [[TenBroeke](#)], O.C. N.2 Co, calling for bombs, S.A.A. and rifles grenades. Enemy reported to be fairly strong in front.

9.50 am ~~Lieut~~ Message No.5 from Lieut. Lownsborough O.C. No.4 Coy, calling for bombs, SA.A. rifle grenades and flares.

10.20 am. Message No.6 from Major McDougall advising German snipers very active on left. Hill 145 still in hands of enemy.

11.05 am Message No.7 from Lieut. Lownsborough stating that wire put out in front of his position

11.25am 49th Bn.moppers-up reorganised and carried ammunition to front line.

11.30 a.m. Telephone communication established between rear and advanced Bn.Headquarters.

4.10 pm. No.4 Coy reports enemy in small parties along BRACKEN TRENCH

and across country. Enemy Officers seen to ride up, leave horses at Slag Heap in rear and walk up towards the trenches. (Message No.8)

8.20 pm. Message No.9 from Major McDougall reports enemy shelling our front and support lines.

[10]th April 1917.

12.50 a.m. Information received from First Army through Brigade that enemy bringing up reinforcements from MERUCOURT to VIMY.

10.30 am The following report covering situation sent to 7th Cdn. Inf. Bde.:-

"The Battalion reached Final Objective with about 35 to 40 casualties. Consolidation was at once proceeded with and by 11 a.m. the first and second lines had been made continuous with the exception of 50 yards in second line. During the afternoon, commencing at 3 p.m. the enemy shelled both our lines with 5.9s, 4.2s and 7.7. mm doing a great deal of damage to our trenches and causing many casualties. This shelling kept up till 2 a.m. to-day, the first line suffering particularly heavy. All Corporals and Sergeants of No.2 Co, except Sgt. Fergus are casualties. Casualty report is attached.

At the moment of writing there are six machine guns in action but crews are short four men. One Stokes Gun is in front line, but we need ammunition for it and crew.

No.4 Coy is at present occupying a quarter of 42nd Bn front line. S.P.6 has been almost flattened out and I have withdrawn machine guns, two to second line and three to STRAUBWESSER WEG just behind S.P.6.

As you will can see from Casualty Report, No.2 Coy is disorganised. I am sending up two N.C.Os to help reorganise No.2 Coy.

Work is well under way and expect S.A.A. bombs, tools and salvage dumps will be completed today.

Sniping is still fairly active from the left.

Owing to weather and shelling the men are not as fr4sh as they might be.

I got into touch with R.C.R. Officer who reports that they are still O.K with certain reinforcements.

Excuse lack of continuity but blame Germans for keeping me up.

10.4.17

10.30 a.m.

### CASUALTY REPORT.

#### Total Casualties.

No.1 Co. 40  
No.2 Co. 75  
No.3 Co. 68

No.4 Co. 32  
215

Stretcher cases not cleared.

No.1 Co. 2 (including 1 German)  
No.2 Co. 11 „ 3  
No.3 Co. Nil  
No.4 Co. Nil  

---

13

Dead not buried.

No.1. Co. 13  
No.2 Co. 37  
No.3 Co. 13  
No.4 Co. 0  
63

No.2 Coy is very uncertain re figures. Am doing my best to get names and shall ~~do my best~~ send it in as soon as possible

10.4.17

10.30 a.m.

12.30 pm. [inserted: A patrol consisting of Lt. W.H. Morris, 2 Bn. Scouts and 20 OR. went out to ascertain position of enemy & on return Lt. Morris made the following report:-]

A patrol consisting of Lieut. W.H. Morris, 2 Bn. Scouts and 20 O.R divided into two parties explored ARTILLERIE WEG and STAUBWESSER WEG.

1. The party which went down ARTILLERIE WEG consisted of 2 Corpls. and 9 O.R. preceded by Scout Bettridge and 1 O.R. They travelled a distance of 130 yards from junction of ARTILLERIE WEG with our FRONT LINE reaching a point S.23.c.6½.6. After the party had proceeded 100 yards vigorous sniping was commenced by the enemy. the bullets lining the top of the trench. Scout Bettridge pushed ahead and looked over the top and ahead about 15 yards distant he saw what he said to be 25 or 30 Germans in the trench. He was observed by the enemy and showered with stick-bombs. Enemy sent up orange shower. The party then returned. Scout Bettridge reports trench at this point to be in fairly good shape.

2. The party which went down STRAUBWESSER WEG, consisting of one Officer, 1 Corporal, 1 Scout and 9 O.R. preceded by Scout Elder and 1 O.R. Party proceeded a distance of 100 yards reaching a point S.23.c.5½.7. About 60 yards down on the right side of trench there are two deep dugouts with wide entrances, very close together. Scout Elder walker [*walked*] about 10 yards from entrance of second dug-out when two Germans rushed out and only a miss-fire prevented him killing one of these. The rest of party rushed past dug-outs, the Officer in rear guarding one entrance and 1 O.R. the other. These Germans seemed to join a larger party and give warning for immediately we were bombed with stick-bombs, these falling short. One German shot at Scout Elder from what appeared to be a breast work on the left side of trench but before he could shoot again was hit in the hit by

Scout Elder; his helmet seemed to fly off in the air. Six men were seen in this breast work. The guard on the near dug-out shot one of the enemy in stomach when party was returning. The Officer remaining to bring up rear took two shots at one of the enemy in the far dug-out. This fellow appeared to think that the show was over and evidently was making for the breastwork. He fell back into dug-out entrance. There were five or six dead Germans in the trench between the dug-outs and the breastwork. The trench between these points showed signs of considerable damage usage. The trench became better as we approached breastwork from dug-outs.

Party went out.....12.50 p.m.  
 Party returned..... 1.20 p.m.

11th April 1917.

1.00 am No.1 Co. relieved No.2 Co. in front line, No.2 Co. returning to FAMINE TRENCH.

1.30 am No.3 Co. relieved No.4 Co, No.4 Co. returning to FAMINE TRENCH.

2 a.m. Message No.10 received from Brigade advising Battalion will be relieved by daylight and proceed to Brigade Support Area, with one Coy in "P" line, two Coys in EMPIRE REDOUBT and PYLONES, two platoons in MACHINE GUN FORT and two platoons in QUARRIES LINE.

3.20 pm Message No.11 received from Brigade advising that on completion of relief Battalion will proceed to LAMOTTE CAMP.

8.15 p.m. Relief completed and Battalion on the way to LAMOTTE CAMP.

SUMMARY. In submitting this narrative I would like to express my appreciation of the excellent work done by the two platoons, afterwards increased, by the 49th Battalion (Edmonton Regiment) who in accordance with Brigade Orders, acted as moppers-up, stretcher-bearers and ammunition-carriers.

TROPHIES. Battalion captured three enemy trench mortars and three machine guns.

CASUALTIES.

	<u>Officers.</u>	<u>Other Ranks.</u>
Killed	3	54
Died of Wounds		6
Missing		10
Wounded	7	142
Wounded at Duty	1	1
	-----	-----
	11	213

Sgd AGAR ADAMSON Lt. Col.

Comdg. P.P.C.L.I.

---

APPENDIX F D

“A” Form  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

TO {R.C.R.	49th Bn.	3rd Cdn. Div.	9th. CIBde
{P.P.C.L.I.	7th C.T.M.B.	8th. C.I. Bde.	
{42nd Bn.	7th. C.M.G.C.	Billeting Offr.	
		Forward Area.	
Sender's Number	Day of Month	In reply to Number.	AAA
* D.359.	20th.		

(1) The 7th.Cdn. Inf. Bde. less the R.C.R. will move the vicinity of QUARRIES LINE tonight, where they will be in Corps Reserve ready to move at half hours notice after 6.00 am, 21st inst. aaa (2) Battalions will move off from their billets as follows aaa 49th. Bn 12.01 am 21st. inst aaa 42nd Bn 12.30 am 21st. inst. aaa P.P.C.L.I. 12.15 am 21st. inst aaa Trench Mortar Battery to follow P.P.C.L.I. aaa (3) Route VILLERS AU BOIS – LAMOTTE FARM – PLANK ROAD aaa (4) Billeting parties will be sent forward at once and will report to Major Walkem, GRANGE SUBWAY, who will arrange accommodation aaa The 49th Battalion will be billeted in the most forward position aaa (5) Packs will not be carried aaa (6) Brigade Headquarters MACHINE GUN FORT aaa C.Os or Seconds-in-Command with Runners will be accommodated in the Machine Gun Fort and will report there by 4.00 am, 21st. inst aaa (7) ACKNOWLEDGE aaa Addsd P.P.C.L.I, 42nd. Bn, 49th Bn,. 7th. C.T.M. Bty, rptd all concerned.

From 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade.  
Place  
Time 8.20 pm.

(Z)  
Sgd. A.O.MEREDITH,  
Major.

---

APPENDIX F

“A” Form  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

TO: 7th. Canadian Infantry Brigade.

Sender's Number. Day of Month. In reply to Number. AAA

\* G.999. 30th.

Warning Order aaa The 7th. Cdn. Inf. Bde will move to the vicinity of the Quarries Line to be in position by 6.00 am 21st. inst where they will be in Corps Reserve ready to move at half an hours notice aaa Hqrs MACHINE GUN FORT aaa A & Q will allot accommodation aaa Addsd 7th. Cdn. Inf. Bde. A & Q, rpted all concerned. aaa ACKNOWLEDGE.

From 3rd. Canadian Division.  
Place  
Time 6.37 pm.

-----

**Tue, May 1, 1917 WEST OF MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE ROAD TRENCHES & VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 1.5.17 Fine. Remainder of 52<sup>nd</sup> Battn relieve 2 & 4 Cos. in line – 2 & 4 Cos. proceeding to Billets in Villers-Au-Bois.

**Wed, May 2, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 2.5.17 Fine. Battalion resting. Baths.

**Thu, May 3, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 3.5.17 Fine. Company training. Four Other Ranks reported died of wounds received April 9/10 1917 and one of Sickness – pneumonia. Battalion sports.

**Fri, May 4, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 4.5.17 Fine. Training in a.m. Sports in afternoon. A/R.S.M. JORDAN W. (1199) promoted R.S.M., Warrant Officer Class 1 (19.2.17). Pte. [S] BROWN (769740) previously reported killed 9/10-4-17 now reported wounded

**Sat, May 5, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 5.5.17 Fine. Training in a.m. Presentation of new drafts and officers to the Colour. Pte.[inserted: 552239] Baker V.R. previously reported Missing (9/10-4-17) now wounded, 817732 Pte. Harris J.A. ditto. Slight showers in evening.

**Sun, May 6, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 6.5.17 Fine. Church Parades at VILLERS. 709643 Pte JOHNSON [R.J.] previously reported missing (9/10-4.17) now wounded

**Mon, May 7, 1917 VILLERS AU BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 7.5.17 Fine – Redistribution of officers (effect 6.5.17). Battalion moves to PYLONES Shelter on VIMY RIDGE – Companies taking 5 officers each only. Remaining and details O.R. in Camp at LA TARGETTE – Major [D.A.] CLARKE [1763] in command.

**Tue, May 8, 1917 PYLONES AREA [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

PYLONES 8.5.17 Fine – Instructional class formed at LA TARGETTE for Officers & details

**Wed, May 9, 1917 PYLONES AREA [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

PYLONES 9.5.17 Rain in a.m.

**Thu, May 10, 1917 PYLONES AREA [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

PYLONES 10.5.17 Fine & warm

**Fri, May 11, 1917 PYLONES AREA [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

PYLONES 11.5.17 Fine.

**Sat, May 12, 1917 PYLONES AREA [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

PYLONES 12.5.17 Fine. Battalion moves forward over VIMY Ridge – relieving 1<sup>st</sup> C.M.R. in Brigade Reserve. Battalion H.Q. in LA CHAUDIERE. 1 & 2 Companies in VIMY DEFENCES 3 & 4 Companies under Command of Lt. Col. HILL R.C.R. in front line. 2nd Can. Division on right R.C.R. on left. Major [A.G.] Martin [1266] 2 i/c reports to O.C. R.C.R. to remain there while these two Companies are in Line

**Sun, May 13, 1917 LA CHAUDIERE AREA & VIMY DEFENCES, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 13.5.17 Fine – slight showers in p.m. Heavy shelling about [La] Chaudière One enemy shell landed in entrance of dug out occupied by No 1 Co. in Railway Embankment killing 4 and wounding 7 men. No. 1 & 2 Companies supply working parties for the front-line each night  
30 O.R. taken on strength. A/Major A.G. PEARSON [51383] Lieut [S.B.] PLUMMER [411051] Lieut. E.P. CLORAN [440396] Lieut. J. [H.] CARVOSSO [51116] – struck off strength – invalided England

**Mon, May 14, 1917 LA CHAUDIERE AREA, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 14.5.17 Showery. Persistent shelling of LA CHAUDIERE continues.

**Tue, May 15, 1917 LA CHAUDIERE AREA & VIMY DEFENCES, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 15.5.17 Cloudy & Cool. LIEUTs C.A. GRANT & J.R. RIDDELL [411142] taken on strength. 6 O.R. from C.B.D. taken on strength. Capt. A.G. PEARSON [51383] relinquishes rank of Acting Major on ceasing to command a Company. Quiet on the front. Casualties from 12.5.17 to date 4 O.R. killed and 13 wounded including 7 shell shock

**Wed, May 16, 1917 LA CHAUDIERE AREA & VIMY DEFENCES, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 16.5.17 Overcast & cold turning to heavy rain in evening & night. No. 3 Company relieved from front line and proceeded to billets in VIMY DEFENCES. No. 4 Company should have been relieved but relief did not turn up. Owing to this No. 4 Company lived for the next 24 hours on their iron rations.

**Thu, May 17, 1917 LA CHAUDIERE AREA & VIMY DEFENCES, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 17.5.17 Cloudy with mist. No. 4 Company relieved and moves to billets in VIMY DEFENCES

**Fri, MAY 18, 1917 VIMY DEFENCES, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 18.5.17 Cloudy. Whole Battalion now supplying working and carrying parties for the front line.

**Sat, May 19, 1917 VIMY DEFENCES, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 19.5.17 Cloudy,- clearing to fine. Great deal of aerial activity

**Sun, May 20, 1917 VIMY DEFENCES, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 20.5.17 Fine. Relieved by 52nd Battalion. Relief completed by 11 p.m. The Battalion proceeded to GRANGE SUBWAY

**Mon, May 21, 1917 GRANGE SUBWAY, VIMY RIDGE, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 21.5.17 Showery Battalion spends morning cleaning up and marches in afternoon to VILLERS HUTS in VILLERS-AU-BOIS

**Tue, May 22, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 22.5.17 Heavy Rain. Battn parades and training. Lieuts C.K: McRORIE [21867] D.A.WRIGHT and E.M. JACQUES [411061] taken on strength. The under-mentioned O.R. awarded MILITARY MEDAL No. 1065 SGT. S.J. RIDLEY McG 116 SGT. R.C.M. FERGUS, 487334 Cpl. R. LAVERS, McG 186 SGT. F.T. MABSON, 489753 L/C. W.A. WARNER, 475453 Pte. W.G. ELDER, 446134 G. THORNDYKE

489779 J.E. LIVETT, 411018 P.H. FERGUSON, 487371 E.H. NEWTON, 1033128 C. PORTER, 21409 Cpl. (A/SgT.) R. SAVAGE, (Att. 7 C.T.M.B) 475306 Pte. F.W. CRAWFORD (Att 7 C.I.B.)

**Wed, May 23, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 23.5.17 Fine. Battalion & Company drills & training & Baths. In addition to previously mentioned casualties, one O.R. killed and 8 wounded in operations 12-5-17 to 21-5-17. MAJOR A.G. MARTIN (M.C.) [1266] assumes command of Battalion temporarily from 21.5.17 vice Lieut. Col. AGAR ADAMSON (D.S.O.)

**Thu, May 24, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 24.5.17 Fine Drills, lectures and training.

**Fri, May 25, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 25.5.17 Fine – Battalion carries off second prize in C.A.S.C. Competition for our light draft team and limbered waggon - active service conditions - open to Units comprising 3rd Division R.C.R. first prize. Lieut. G.W. Guiou [475868] appointed Bombing officer (temporarily) and Lieut. J.A. HASLAM temporarily Assistant Adjutant

**Sat, May 26, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 26.5.17 Fine. Drill lectures and training in a.m. Battalion sports in afternoon. 7 O.R. taken on strength from C.B.D.

**Sun, May 27, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 27.5.17 Fine. Church parade in morning Brigade sports in afternoon

**Mon, May 28, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 28.5.17 Cloudy. Company training

**Tue, May 29, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 29.5.17 Cloudy & Cold. Musketry and training

**Wed, May 30, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 30.5.17 Fine with showers Musketry and training. LIEUT. A.L. MILLS taken on strength from 3<sup>rd</sup> Can. Ent. Battn MAJOR D.A. CLARKE (M.C.) [1763] struck off strength from 23.5.17 on proceeding to England. 3 O.R. taken on strength from C.B.D (29.5.17)

**Thu, May 31, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 31.5.17 Fine. Parades & musketry. Practice over tape trenches in p.m.

*[Note transcriber: during May 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]*

**Fri, Jun 1, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS-AU-BOIS 1.6.17 Fine - Parades - lectures & training. Military Medal awarded to No. 1086 Corporal F.C. HAVELOCK. 1 O.R. taken on strength

**Sat, Jun 2, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS-AU-BOIS 2.6.17 Cloudy. Parades & training. CROIX DE GUERRE awarded to LIEUT. E.P. CLORAN [440396].

**Sun, Jun 3, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS-AU-BOIS 3.6.17 Fine. Hostile aircraft made several night raids on Camps in vicinity of LA TARGETTE dropping numerous bombs -

**Mon, Jun 4, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS-AU-BOIS 4.6.17 Fine. Parades & training. Air raids at LA[insered: TAR] GETTE repeated.

**Tue, Jun 5, 1917 VILLERS-AU-BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS-AU-BOIS 5.6.17 Fine & warm. LIEUT. COL. [Agar] ADAMSON returns from England Assumes command of the Battalion (4.6.17). 1 O.R. taken on strength & 1 struck off on transfer 3 Can. Div. Hdqtrs.

**Wed, Jun 6, 1917 GRANGE SUBWAY AREA, VIMY RIDGE, FRANCE**

VILLERS-AU-BOIS 1.6.17 6Fine & warm – turning in afternoon to dust storms followed by heavy rain-showers. Battalion moves in afternoon to MONTREAL CAMP near GRANGE TUNNEL.

MAJOR C.J.T. STEWART D.S.O. taken on strength from England & assumes duties of 2nd in Command [inserted: (4.6.17)] CAPT. P. MOLSON taken on strength from England assumes Command of No. 2 Co (4.6.17)

**Thu, Jun 7, 1917 LA CHAUDIERE AREA & VIMY DEFENCES, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 7.6.17 Warm with showers. Battalion relieves 1st C.M.R. Battalion in 3<sup>rd</sup> line VIMY DEFENCES in evening. (Ref. Map VIMY 36 c S.W. Battn H.Q. LA CHAUDIERE S.18.d.8.2 – Each Company going in line with three platoons and four officers. Details Camp near Transport lines at LA TARGETTE MAJOR [A.G.] MARTIN M.C. [51383] being O.C. details.

**Fri, Jun 8, 1917 LA CHAUDIERE AREA & VIMY DEFENCES, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE, 8.6.17 Cloudy with slight showers. Battalion in support.

LIEUT GEN. Byng sends message of goodbye to the CANADIAN CORPS on relinquishing Command.

**Sat, Jun 9, 1917 LA CHAUDIERE AREA & VIMY DEFENCES, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 9.6.17 Cloudy. Battalion relieves 4<sup>th</sup> C.M.R. in front line right Subsection on night 9/10 June. Nos. 1 2 3 Coys in front line No 4 in support. Battalion H.Q. at T 13 d. 4. 9

42<sup>nd</sup> Battn on left 2nd Battn (1st Div.) on right.

**Sun, Jun 10, 1917 TRENCHES EAST OF LA CHAUDIERE, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 10.6.17 Very hot - Quiet

**Mon, Jun 11, 1917 TRENCHES EAST OF LA CHAUDIERE, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 11.6.17 Very heavy showers in early morning clearing later in day. Situation quiet

**Tue, Jun 12, 1917 TRENCHES EAST OF LA CHAUDIERE, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 12.6.17 Fine & warm. Patrol advanced as far as enemy's line but did not succeed in capturing any prisoner

**Wed, Jun 13, 1917 TRENCHES EAST OF LA CHAUDIERE, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 13.6.17 Fine. On night of 12/13 enemy put up barrage in front & behind front line also field gun flares.

**Thu, Jun 14, 1917 TRENCHES EAST OF LA CHAUDIERE, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 14.6.17 Fine & warm. Dummy trench about 600 yards in front of front line dug along No. 1 & 2 Co's front.

3 Division Horse Show held at BERTHONVAL FARM. The Battalion carries off 2nd prize for transport R.C.R. frist entitling both to ~~pla~~ enter in Corps show.

**Fri, Jun 15, 1917 QUARRY LINE AREA, VIMY RIDGE, FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 15.6.17 Fine. The Battalion is relieved on night of 14/15 by 116 Battn and proceeds to Toronto Camp in QUARRY Area VIMY RIDGE. Patrols were out every night during the Tour 9/15.

Cap. (A/MAJOR) J.W.H.G.H. VANDENBERG [[J.W.H.G. Van den Berg](#)](att 7 Mach. Gun. Co) made a Companion of DISTINGUISHED SERVICE ORDER and CAPT. P. MOLSON and LIEUT. A.C. WHITE [51226] (Div. Training School) awarded MILITARY CROSS in Birthday Gazette of June 1917.

**Sat, Jun 16, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 16.6.17 Fine and warm -Working parties. LIEUT G.W. LITTLE from ENGLAND taken on strength. A/MAJORS D.A. CLARKE [1763] and A.G. PEARSON [51383] relinquish that rank on ceasing to command Companies the former from 23.5.17 the latter from 9.4.17.

1 O.R. killed 13.6.17 and 8 wounded 10/6 to 13/6.

**Sun, Jun 17, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 17.6.17 Fine and warm ~~with showers in p.m.~~ Working parties.

**Mon, Jun 18, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 18.6.17 Fine - thunder showers in p.m.

**Tue, Jun 19, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 19.6.17 Heavy thunderstorms & rain in evening. Canadian Corps Horse Show. P.P.C.L.I. take 2nd prize for Transport R.C.R. 1st prize.

**Wed, Jun 20, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 20.6.17 Clearing. Showers in evening. Working parties.

**Thu, Jun 21, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 21.6.17 Cloudy followed by heavy showers. Battalion still in Support in Quarries Area & furnishing working parties

**Fri, Jun 22, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 22.6.17 Cloudy & cool. Heavy showers in p.m. Capt. H.E. SULIVAN from England taken on strength & posted to No. 2 Co.

**Sat, Jun 23, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 23.6.17 Fine. Battalion while in support is training & furnishing working parties

**Sun, Jun 24, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 24.6.17 Fine. MAJOR [A.H.] GAULT returns from England and is attached to 3rd Division. 2 O.R. struck off strength for Commissions

**Mon, Jun 25, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 25.6.17 Cloudy. First Army Horse Show. P.P.C.L.I. take 2nd prize for Infantry Battalion Transport. LANCASHIRE FUSILIERS first prize. Heavy rain at night

**Tue, Jun 26, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 26.6.17 Fine & cool. H.R.H. the DUKE OF CONNAUGHT at CAMBLAIN L'ABBÉ this Battalion furnishing Guard of Honour under Command of Major C.J.T STEWART D.S.O.

LIEUT D. MACLEAN [411060] from 3rd Canadian Entrenching Battalion taken on strength posted to No. 2 Co. 1 O.R. taken on strength from 3 C.T. Battn.

**Wed, Jun 27, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 27.6.17 Fine with slight showers. LIEUT. J.E. Pike [475991] and W.E. Ford [410953] struck off strength invalided to England. Heavy rain in night.

**Thu, Jun 28, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 28.6.17 Thunderstorm with very heavy rain in evening.

MILITARY CROSS awarded to LIEUT J.H. CARVOSSO [51116] – LIEUT G.W. GUIOU [475868] – LIEUT J.T. LONSBROUGH [475924]. On 27.6.17 GUARD of HONOUR parades at CAMBLAIN L'ABBÉ before H.R.H. THE DUKE of CONNAUGHT

**Fri, Jun 29, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 29.6.17 Heavy rain – Cold -

**Sat, Jun 30, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

LA TARGETTE 30.6.17 Cold with rain. Battalion receives warning order to take over portion of line held by 85th Battalion.

The following message received from Major General LIPSETT Com'g 3 Can. Division to the O.C. P.P.C.L.I. “Will you please convey my hearty congratulations to LIEUT. M. ALLAN [1742] and N.C.O.S and men of your Transport for their success at the Army Show. The P.P.C.L.I. have set the high standard for Transport in the Division and have kept it up consistently which is something a Battalion may well be proud off.”

*[Note transcriber: during June 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]*

**Sun, Jul 1, 1917 TORONTO CAMP [NORTH OF NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST], FRANCE**

CARENCEY 1.7.17 Cold and cloudy. The Battalion relieves 85<sup>th</sup> Battalion in the line in evening. Map reference 36 C S.W. 1/20.000. Battn. moved off from Quarries area 9.30 p.m.

No 1 & 2 Co's to front and outpost line relieving 85<sup>th</sup> Battn. Nos. 3 & 4 taking over from 72<sup>nd</sup> in support in PARTRIDGE BORDEN & IRISH Trenches. Bn. H.Q relieve 72<sup>nd</sup> in 'Piano' Dugout S.6.b. 1.1. Boundaries of positions as follows: - Southern S.6.c.1.1. along road through S.6 Central to N.31.c.8.4½ (road inclusive) thence VIA PARTICK TRENCH (inclusive) to N.31.d.9½.6½ – N.32.a.2½. ½ to Cross Roads N.26.d.3.1. Northern Souchez River. On the left the 42<sup>nd</sup> hold the line. R.C.R. in support. Relief completed at 2.30. Situation quiet, Casualties nil.

### **Mon, Jul 2, 1917 LA COULOTTE-AVION AREA, FRANCE**

CARENCY 2.7.17 Fine and warm. Battalion Transport lines move to near CARENCY. Situation quiet in line. Two casualties. Lt. Col. [Agar] ADAMSON being admitted to hospital MAJOR C.J.T. STEWART assumes Command.

### **Tue, Jul 3, 1917 LA COULOTTE-AVION AREA, FRANCE**

CARENCY 3.7.17 Fine. Detail camp (185 of all ranks) near CARENCY. AVION Trench & outpost in front held by No.1 Coy shelled heavily between midnight and 3 a.m. Five casualties one killed and four wounded. Remainder of day quiet

### **Wed, Jul 4, 1917 LA COULOTTE-AVION AREA, FRANCE**

CARENCY 4.7.17 Heavy showers. At 12.30 a.m. Enemy raided an advance post in front of AVION. Trench held by No. 1 Coy Lewis Gun Crew. Enemy party consisted of 5-7 men and entered post from unblocked trench taking the occupants by surprise. Four men wounded and one missing believed prisoner. At 10 a.m. the enemy exploded two mines a short distance a short distance in front of our post raided previously. No damage. Casualties for 24 hours 5 wounded one missing.

### **Thu, Jul 5, 1917 LA COULOTTE-AVION AREA, FRANCE**

CARENCY 5.7.17 Clearing. Enemy shelled heavily. No. 2 Co. suffering particularly from Trench Mortar fire in outskirts of AVION when CAPT. P. MOLSON M.C. Commanding No. 2 Co'y and LIEUT. D. MACLEAN [411060] were both killed by concussion from a heavy MINENWERFER. Two O.R. with these officers were also killed. Enemy also shelled support trenches and No. 3 Coy. had one killed and three wounded. Total Casualties for day 4 killed 1 died of wounds seven wounded

### **Fri, Jul 6, 1917 LA COULOTTE-AVION AREA, FRANCE**

CARENCY 6.7.17 Fine. H.R.H. The DUKE OF CONNAUGHT sends message of Congratulation to CANADIAN CORPS and was much impressed by the appearance and turnout of the Guard of Honour furnished by the P.P.C.L.I. & 24 Can. Battalion. Lieut G.S. STRATFORD [McG 187] taken on strength (No 1 Co) 30 O.R. taken on strength from 1.7.17 and 5 O.R. from 4.7.17 3 from L.O.C. [*Lines of Communication*] the rest from C.B.D. [*Canadian Base Depot*] 1 O.R. struck off invalided. Lieut. C.A. GRANT struck off invalided 17-6-17. 2 officers killed & 4 O.R. 1 O.R. missing and 17 O.R. wounded & shell shock - struck off 2/7 to 5/7

**Sat, Jul 7, 1917 LA COULOTTE-AVION AREA, FRANCE**

CARENCY 7.7.17 Fine - Clouding up in evening. At night [inserted: of 6th] 3/4 3 & 4 Cos relieve 1 & 2 in front line. Relief quiet. No 2 moves from Supports to ONTARIO & CANADA trenches a position closer to line, advanced posts shelled by enemy trench mortars. 3 casualties

**Sun, Jul 8, 1917 LA COULOTTE-AVION AREA, FRANCE**

CARENCY 8.7.17 Very heavy thunderstorms in early morning. Rain at night. In evening our front line heavily shelled from direction of MERICOURT by 2 5.9 at rate of 2 shells per minute. Several direct hits. No 4 Co. 3 killed 3 wounded

**Mon, Jul 9, 1917 LA COULOTTE-AVION AREA, FRANCE**

CARENCY 9.7.17 Dull and some rain. Battalion is relieved by 4 C.M.R. in night 9/10 and move back to Detail Camp near CARENCY bivouacking there.

**Tue, Jul 10, 1917 CARENCY, FRANCE**

CARENCY 10.7.17 Fine. Battalion moves to NIAGARA CAMP at Bois de la Haie 5 O.R from L.O.C. [*Lines of Communication*] & 1 from C.B.D. [*Canadian Base Depot*] taken on strength. 4 O.R. killed 11 wounded 5 to 9<sup>th</sup> July.

**Wed, Jul 11, 1917 BOIS DE LA HAIE (GOUY-SERVINS), FRANCE**

CHATEAU DE LA HAIE 11.7.17 Fine. Fumigation – parades – Lt. Col. Adamson rejoining from Hospital assumes Command. 1 O.R. taken on strength.

**Thu, Jul 12, 1917 BOIS DE LA HAIE (GOUY-SERVINS), FRANCE**

CHATEAU DE LA HAIE 12.7.17 Fine – Training and parades. LIEUT. A. J. ROBINS [1280] from 3 Can. Ent. Batl. [*3rd Canadian Entrenching Battalion*] taken on strength

**Fri, Jul 13, 1917 BOIS DE LA HAIE (GOUY-SERVINS), FRANCE**

CHATEAU DE LA HAIE 13.7.17 Fine with rain in evening. Major LIEUT. GEN. LIPSETT [*3rd Canadian Division Commander*] and LIEUT BRIG.-GEN. DYER commanding 7<sup>th</sup> Brigade inspect Battalion. MAJOR-GEN. A.C. MACDONELL late commanding 7th Brigade inspects Brigade at in afternoon and delivers a farewell address on assuming command of 1<sup>st</sup> Division.

**Sat, Jul 14, 1917 BOIS DE LA HAIE (GOUY-SERVINS), FRANCE**

CHATEAU DE LA HAIE 14.7.17 Heavy thunderstorms. Rain all night. Parades – Training Musketry

**Sun, Jul 15, 1917 BOIS DE LA HAIE (GOUY-SERVINS), FRANCE**

CHATEAU DE LA HAIE 15.7.17 Heavy rain in morning clearing later. MAJOR A.H. GAULT D.S.O. taken on strength 12.6.17 posted to B.H.Q. attached 3 Can Div. Hqrs. 2 O.R. struck off 1 taken on strength.

LIEUT. G. R. STEVENS [*McG 85*] taken on strength from 3 Can. Ent. Batl.(No 2) [*3rd Canadian Entrenching Battalion*] & LIEUT. J. MACKAY [*1683*] from C.B.D. (No 4) [*Canadian Base Depot*].

**Mon, Jul 16, 1917 BOIS DE LA HAIE (GOUY-SERVINS), FRANCE**

CHATEAU DE LA HAIE 16.7.17 Fine. Training & Musketry A/MAJOR A.G. MARTIN M.C. [*1266*] struck off strength on proceeding to England for duty (15/7/17) Examination of N.C.O.s for promotion. 1 O.R. struck off strength.

**Tue, Jul 17, 1917 BOIS DE LA HAIE (GOUY-SERVINS), FRANCE**

CHATEAU DE LA HAIE 17.7.17 Fine. Parades - musketry - training. 1 O.R. taken on s. Award of Good Conduct Badges to L/Cpls & privates. on completing two years service without reprimanded entry

**Wed, Jul 18, 1917 BOIS DE LA HAIE (GOUY-SERVINS), FRANCE**

CARENCY 18.7.17 Heavy rain showers. Battalion relieves 52 Battalion in HALIFAX AREA ZOUAVE VALLEY in evening going into billets there

**Thu, Jul 19, 1917 ZOUAVE VALLEY [EAST OF CABARET ROUGE], FRANCE**

CARENCY 19.7.17 Rain

**Fri, Jul 20, 1917 ZOUAVE VALLEY [EAST OF CABARET ROUGE], FRANCE**

CARENCY 20.7.17 Cloudy and Cool. Working parties. 1 O.R. taken on and 1 struck off strength. Capt H.W. NIVEN reported for duty & assumes Command of No 2 Co.

**Sat, Jul 21, 1917 ZOUAVE VALLEY [EAST OF CABARET ROUGE], FRANCE**

CARENCY 21.7.17 Fine - working parties

**Sun, Jul 22, 1917 ZOUAVE VALLEY [EAST OF CABARET ROUGE], FRANCE**

CARENCY 22.7.17 Fine.

**Mon, Jul 23, 1917 ZOUAVE VALLEY [EAST OF CABARET ROUGE], FRANCE**

CARENCY 23.7.17 Fine. MAJOR A.H. GAULT D.S.O appointed A.D.C. to G.O.C. 3 Can. Div. [*Lt-Gen Lipsett*] 20/6/17

**Tue, Jul 24, 1917 ZOUAVE VALLEY [EAST OF CABARET ROUGE], FRANCE**

CARENCY 24.7.17 Rain in morning - clearing later. 48 O.R. taken on strength

**Wed, Jul 25, 1917 ZOUAVE VALLEY [EAST OF CABARET ROUGE], FRANCE**

CARENCEY 25.7.17 Heavy rain in morning clearing later. Battalion marches to billets in Verdrel in afternoon

**Thu, Jul 26, 1917 VERDREL, FRANCE**

LA PUGNOY 26.7.17 Cloudy & overcast. Battalion marches in morning to billets in LAPUGNOY via BOIS d'ULHAIN – BARLIN – BRUAY 31 O.R. taken on strength.

**Fri., Jul 27, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LA PUGNOY 27.7.17 Cloudy but fine & warm. Newly joined reinforcements presented to their colour. 1 O.R. taken on strength

**Sat, Jul 28, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LA PUGNOY 28.7.17 Fine & warm. Inoculation.

**Sun, Jul 29, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LA PUGNOY 29.7.17 Very heavy thunderstorm & rain in morning. Drill training & musketry

**Mon, Jul 30, 1917 LA PUGNOY, FRANCE**

LA PUGNOY 30.7.17 Cloudy & overcast. Musketry drill & training.

**Tue, Jul 31, 1917 LA PUGNOY, FRANCE**

LA PUGNOY 31.7.17 Cloudy. No 4 Co'y moves to billets in LA BEUVRIÈRE  
Memorandum from G.O.C. 3<sup>rd</sup> Can Division [*Lt-Gen Lipsett*] published in Battalion orders, referring to successful operations of 3<sup>rd</sup> CAN. DIV since March 16 and their advance of approximately 4 ½ miles since MARCH

*[Note transcriber: during July 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]*

**Wed, Aug 1, 1917 LAPUGNOY & LABEUVIÈRE, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 1.8.17 Steady rain in morning. Orders received that Battalion is to be prepared to reinforce any one of the Divisions of the Canadian Corps - also the Divisions on right & left of Corps - and that Battalion should be prepared to carry out Practice Assembly. Battalion training - musketry

**Thu, Aug 2, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 2.8.17 Steady rain all day. Route march - musketry

**Fri., Aug 3, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 3.8.17 Rain off & on all day. Musketry & training & Baths.

**Sat, Aug 4, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 4.8.17 Cloudy – some rain. Training

**Sun, Aug 5, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 5.8.17 Fine.- Church parade-

**Mon, Aug 6, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 6.8.17 Mist and cloudy all day. LIEUT. J.M. CHRISTIE [1576] taken on strength and 23 O.R.

**Tue, Aug 7, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 7.8.17 Dull & cloudy. The Corps Commander [*General Arthur Currie*] inspects Battalion.

**Wed, Aug 8, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 8.8.17 Heavy thunder showers. Route marches – bathing Musketry

**Thu, Aug 9, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 9.8.17 Cloudy with showers.

**Fri., Aug 10, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 10.8.17 Cloudy with showers. Battalion marches to MARLES LES MINES for Brigade sports

**Sat, Aug 11, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 11.8.17 Cloudy in morning with showers. Heavy thunderstorm in evening.

**Sun, Aug 12, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 12.8.17 Cloudy with showers in evening. Battalion prepares to march to FEBVIN-PALFART as part of main guard for operations – but order cancelled in afternoon

**Mon, Aug 13, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 13.8.17 Cloudy with showers. Training & musketry as usual

**Tue, Aug 14, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 14.8.17 Cloudy & overcast. Tactical exercises – parades &c.( ?)

**Wed, Aug 15, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 15.8.17 Cloudy. Battalion marches to LOZINGHEM. Gas School  
LIEUT G S CURRIE M.C. to be temp. Capt. & to remain seconded 8-12-16 LIEUT  
(A/Capt.) R.L. HAGGARD [1768] vice Capt G.S. Currie M.C. seconded 20-1-17. LIEUT  
L.V. DRUMMOND-HAY promoted a/Capt. 10-5-17

**Thu, Aug 16, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 16.8.17 Fine - slight showers. On August 12<sup>th</sup> a telegram was sent by the O.C.  
to H.R.H. The PRINCESS PATRICIA “On the third anniversary of the formation of your  
Royal Highness’ Regiment all ranks extend to you our devotion and determination to carry on  
to a finish”. Telegrams expressing best wishes to the Battalion on its anniversary received  
from Brig Gen. R.T. PELLY and from O.C. 7<sup>th</sup> Reserve Battalion as well as from LIEUT-  
COL C.H. HILL D.S.O. commanding Royal CANADIAN Regiment.

**Fri, Aug 17, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 17.8.17 Fine. A telegram was received from H.R.H. THE PRINCESS  
PATRICIA addressed O.C. P.P.C.L.I. as follows: “Deeply appreciate kind telegram . I have  
absolute confidence that the Regiment will uphold its glorious record of the past and add  
many successes to its name. Please convey to all ranks my heartiest good wishes  
8 O.R. taken on strength from C.B.D.

**Sat, Aug 18, 1917 LAPUGNOY, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 18.8.17 Fine. Orders received to proceed to forward area on 19.8.17 at 9.10  
a.m. To be Acting Major while commanding a Company – Capt T.M. PAPINEAU M.C. as  
from 26/5/17. Capt. R.L. HAGGARD [1768] as from 10/4/17 to 4/6/17. To be Acting  
Captain LIEUT. W.H. MORRIS M.C. [410512] from 10/5/17. Capt H.E. SULIVAN  
transferred from No. 2 Co. to No 1 & assumes command of No 1 16/8/17 vice A/MAJOR  
MACDOUGALL proceeded to England. 48 O. R’s taken on strength of Bn. from Can. Corps  
Reinforcement Camp.

**Sun, Aug 19, 1917 HERSIN, FRANCE**

LAPUGNOY 19.8.17 Fine. Battalion moves to Billets in HERSIN.

**Mon, Aug 20, 1917 HERSIN, FRANCE**

LES BREBIS 20.8.17 Fine. Battalion moves to Billets in LES BREBIS ~~proceeding in even~~

**Tue, Aug 21, 1917 LES BREBIS, FRANCE**

LES BREBIS 21.8.17 Fine – windy – Lt [B.K.] SNIDER [1624] & 104 O.R. proceed to  
Corps School. Battalion proceeds to Brigade Reserve at FOSSE 11 at CITÉ St PIERRE –  
Seven (7) officers remaining out and proceeding to BULLY- LES – MINES. Transport lines  
move to PETIT SAINS FOSSE 10. on 22.8.17

**Wed, Aug 22, 1917 FOSSE 11, CITÉ ST. PIERRE (LENS), FRANCE**

PETIT SAINS 22.8.17 Fine – ~~Heavy~~ windy during most of day. Battalion relieved 24th Battn in Brigade Reserve. 15 casualties from gas [inserted: 1 O.R. wounded] not serious. Considerable shelling at CITÉ St PIERRE

**Thu, Aug 23, 1917 FOSSE 11, CITÉ ST. PIERRE (LENS), FRANCE**

PETIT SAINS 23.8.17 Fine. Heavy winds. Enemy doing considerable counter battery work [inserted: 3 O.R's slightly gassed & 1 wounded]

**Fri, Aug 24, 1917 FOSSE 11, CITÉ ST. PIERRE (LENS), FRANCE**

PETIT SAINS 24.8.17 Windy & cloudy in a.m. finer with wind in afternoon Shelling by enemy around CITE St PIERRE directed at our batteries

**Sat, Aug 25, 1917 FOSSE 11, CITÉ ST. PIERRE (LENS), FRANCE**

PETIT SAINS 25.8.17 Fine & windy. In evening Battalion relieves R.C.R. in front line. Relief effected satisfactorily, Nos 1 & 2 Companies relieving A & B Companies of the R.C.R. in the front line, whilst our Nos. 3 & 4 Companies relieved C & D Companies of the R.C.R. in close support. The R.C.R. took up positions in Reserve. Bn. on our left - 1st Yorkshires – On our right – 52nd Can. Bn. H.Q. at L.7.b.5.8. (Map Ref France 36 c.)

**Sun, Aug 26, 1917 CITÉ ST. LAURENT (LENS), FRANCE**

PETIT SAINS 26.8.17 Fine – heavy rains in the evening. Lieut [G.W.] Guiou M.C. [475868] & 10 other ranks established a block 80 yds. up Commotion Trench (Map Ref. France 36c.N8 b 9.9) no casualties during the operation which was a complete success. Scout section wiped out by a single shell – total casualties for the day:- 6 O.R's killed – 7 O.R's wounded.

**Mon, Aug 27, 1917 CITÉ ST. LAURENT (LENS), FRANCE**

PETIT SAINS 27.8.17 Fine but showery. Situation quiet. O.R. Casualties: - 1 killed – 8 wounded.

**Tue, Aug 28, 1917 CITÉ ST. LAURENT (LENS), FRANCE**

PETIT SAINS 28.8.17 Heavy rains with northerly wind. Inter - company reliefs - No 3 relieving No. 1 & No 4 relieving No.2. On our left 1st. Yorkshires were relieved by 5th. Chesshires [*Cheshires*] – on our right the 58th. Can. Bn. relieved the 52nd. Can. Bn. Situation quiet – Casualties:- 1 O.R. wounded.

**Wed, Aug 29, 1917 CITÉ ST. LAURENT (LENS), FRANCE**

PETIT SAINS 29.8.17 Heavy rains with North Westerly winds. Situation normal. Heavy shelling on our right. Casualties: – 4 O .R's wounded. 1 O.R. wounded 26.8.17 died of wounds in Barlin.

**Thu, Aug 30, 1917 CITÉ ST. LAURENT (LENS), FRANCE**

PETIT SAINS 30.8.17 Fair – occasional showers. Situation normal. Heavy counter-battery work in the evening. O.R. Casualties – 2 killed – 13 wounded

**Fri, Aug 31, 1917 CITÉ ST. LAURENT (LENS), FRANCE**

PETIT SAINS 31.8.17 Fine but showery. Situation normal. O.R. Casualties:- 2 killed – 4 wounded .Relieved between 11.30 p.m. & 12 midnight by the 49th Can. Bn. – 42nd Can. Bn. went into Reserve. Bn. took up billets in Fosse 10 PETIT SAINS.

[Note transcriber: during August 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]

**Sat, Sep 1, 1917 SAINS-EN-GHOELLE, FRANCE**

PETIT-SAINS 1/9/17 Heavy South Easterly winds – showery. ~~Battalion moves to billets in GOUY—SERVINS.~~ LIEUTS. R.D. MILYARD [*Millyard* 478280] & M.J. ROBB [261134] taken on strength, also 3 O. R's O.Rs. struck off strength:- 67 Casualties, 2 invalided to England & 1 transferred to 1st. Can. Inf. Bde. H.Q. LIEUT. C.K. McRORIE [21867] appointed active Assistant Adjutant. The following congratulatory message from Major-General Lipsett [3<sup>rd</sup> Canadian Division Commander] to Brigadier General DYER [7<sup>th</sup> Canadian Infantry Brigade Commander] was published in Bn. Orders under this date:-

"My dear General,  
" Please convey to Lieut-Colonel ADAMSON my  
"appreciation of the good work done by Lieut. Guiou and his  
"party. As far as I can judge; this work was well carried out  
"under trying conditions with coolness & courage, & was in  
"keeping with the high standard of the Regiment.  
" Yours sincerely,  
" L.J. Lipsett,  
" Major-General."

**Sun, Sep 2, 1917 SAINS-EN-GHOELLE, FRANCE**

PETITS-SAINS 2.9.17 Fine – cold. A few shells put into PETIT-SAINS. 2 civilians killed. [Inserted: Strength Increases:- 6 O.Rs strength Decreases:- 2 O.Rs]

**Mon, Sep 3, 1917 SAINS-EN-GHOELLE, FRANCE**

3.9.17 Fine. Bn. moves to billets in GOUY-SERVINS. Strength increases:- 6 O.R's LIEUT. W.J. TAGGART struck of strength on being invalided to England. Hostile aeroplanes visited this vicinity in the evening & few bombs were dropped. There were no casualties.

**Tue, Sep 4, 1917 GOUY-SERVINS, FRANCE**

4.9.17 Fine & quite warm. Strength Decreases:- 3 O.Rs. (attached to 3<sup>rd</sup> Can. Div. Troops)

**Wed, Sep 5, 1917 GOUY-SERVINS, FRANCE**

5.9.17 Fine & warm. In the early morning heavy bombardment heard in the direction of MERICOURT.

**Thu, Sep 6, 1917 GOUY-SERVINS, FRANCE**

6.9.17 Fine – cool.

**Fri, Sep 7, 1917 GOUY-SERVINS, FRANCE**

BOIS des ALLEAUX 7.9.17 Fine & quite warm. Bn. moves to Fraser Camp, Bois des Alleux. [*Mont St Eloi (Eloy)*]. Strength Increases:- LIEUT J.H. CARVOSSO [51116]; M.C. & 4 O R's. Majors A.T HUNTER and R.G. McDOWELL (attached, supernumerary Officers struck off strength on return to England. [*Both supernumeraries had been previously taken on strength 19 Feb 1917*])

**Sat, Sep 8, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

8.9.17 Fine & warm.

**Sun, Sep 9, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

BOIS des ALLEUX 9.9.17 Quite hot. MAJOR C. J. T. STEWART returns to England sick. (.....entry erased.....)  
The officers of the Bn turned out "en masse" to bid farewell to him. Capt. H. W. NIVEN assumes the duties 2nd i/c Lieut-Colonel A. [Agar] ADAMSON goes to England & Major HAMILTON GAULT assumes command of the Bn. LIEUT K C BURNES [McG 144] & 38 O .R's authorized to wear the 3rd. Canadian Divisional badge of a DUMBell (in black) showing their pre-eminent proficiency in their work.

**Mon, Sep 10, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

10.9.17 Fair. – Working party furnished.

**Tue, Sep 11, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

BOIS des ALLEUX 11.9.17 Fine & clear - Training.

**Wed, Sep 12, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), France**

BOIS des ALLEUX 12.9.17 Dull in a.m. fine & breezy in p.m.

**Thu, Sep 13, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

BOIS des ALLEUX 13.9.17 Foggy in morning & cold – cloudy in afternoon – Musketry.

**Fri, Sep 14, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

BOIS des ALLEUX 14.9.17 Fair & cool. Battalion drill & Training.

**Sat, Sep 15, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

BOIS des ALLEUX 15.9.17 Slight rain in early morning - turning to fair later. Baths - Working party of 300 men furnished in evening

**Sun, Sep 16, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

BOIS des ALLEUX 16.9.17 Overcast - clearing in afternoon. Warning order received for move to forward area to-morrow

**Mon, Sep 17, 1917 MONT ST. ELOI (ELOY), FRANCE**

BOIS des ALLEUX 17.9.17 Cloudy. Battalion relieves the 43<sup>rd</sup> Battalion in Brigade Support (No.2.3. & 4. Coys) and one Coy of 52<sup>nd</sup> Battn in Railway Embankment T.T.26.C. Central (Reference : 51 c – 51 b N.W – 36. c S.W.). The Battalion moved up to NEUVILLE ST. VAAST by light Railway to ZIVVY SIDING leaving billets at 5 p.m. B.H.Q. at ~~BEEHIVE~~ – T.27.d.3.7

**Tue, Sep 18, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

Trenches 18.9.17 Overcast – clearing later

**Wed, Sep 19, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

Trenches 19.9.17 Fine & hazy

**Thu, Sep 20, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

Trenches 20.9.17 Cloudy in a.m. Windy

**Fri, Sep 21, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

Trenches 21.9.17 Fine – cold at night

**Sat, Sep 22, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

Trenches 22.9.17 Fair

**Sun, Sep 23, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

Trenches 23.9.17 Cloudy & warmer

***Tue, Sep 18 to Sun, Sep 23, 1917, incl. [AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE]***

*[Added comment for all six days]*

During this tour in the trenches the situation was very quiet with little artillery activity on either side but considerable aerial activity. The Battalion furnished working parties daily

**Mon, Sep 24, 1917 MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE, FRANCE**

Trenches 24.9.17 Fair The Batt. Battalion moves up to the front line relieving the R.C.R. right subsector 1.2. & 3. Coys in front line each supporting themselves with two platoons in close support, in QUEBEC TRENCH the front line being in TOTNES trench. , No. 4 Co'y in NEW BRUNSWICK Trench in Support. Battalion H.Q. at T.22.d.8½.2½ 5 officers left at Transport lines at LA TARGETTE.

The 49th Battalion held the line on the left and the 14 East LANCASHIRE on the right – the 42nd Battalion being in support.

**Tue, Sep 25, 1917 MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE, FRANCE**

Trenches 25.9.17 Fair. 6 O.R. taken on strength Major C.J.T. STEWART D.S.O. invalided and struck off strength as at 17.9.17 LIEUT . C.F.H. BIDDULPH admitted to hospital while on leave is struck off strength as at 4.9.17.

**Wed, Sep 26 to Sun. Sep 30, 1917 MERICOURT-ACHEVILLE, FRANCE**

Trenches 26.9.17 to 30.9.17 During this tour in the front line the situation was quiet - the line being held lightly making a slight rise. The top of this rising ground was held with a series of listening posts in depth and width. Patrolling activity constituted the chief feature. Enemy patrols were occasionally encountered in no man's land and casualties inflicted. Six casualties occurred during the entire tour 2 from our own anti-aircraft shells. On the night of 29/30th an ammunition dump was exploded by Enemy shells on MOUNT FORÊT QUARRY causing 35 or 40 casualties of whom 3 killed (Θ-R's and) one wounded (all O.R.) belonged to this Battalion (4 Coy.)

On night of 29/30th the Battalion was relieved by R.C.R. and took up the positions in support held by the 42nd Battn. - No. 1, Co. in CANADA TRENCH from T20.b.4.6 to T.21 a.5.4 No. 2 Co same trench on immediate left of VANCOUVER ROAD No 3 Co.- 3 platoons in NEW BRUNSWICK TRENCH - one MONTREAL TRENCH. No 4 in CANADA from T 21 a.5.4. joining up with 49th Battn. ap to approximately T 21 d.2.8. No 1 & 4 being in support of left & No 2 & 3 of right Battalion.

B.H.Q. in C.P.R. Trench at approximately T 27.a.5.7.

Clear still weather prevailed during the tour with bright moon lit nights

*[Note transcriber: during October 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]*

**Mon, Oct 1, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

C.P.R. TRENCH 1.10.17 Very fine & clear. No 1 Co. goes out to NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST for baths – working parties supplied

**Tue, Oct 2, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

C.P.R. TRENCH 2.10.17 Very fine & clear – No 2 Co. & part of B.H.Q. out for baths - working parties

**Wed, Oct 3, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

C.P.R. TRENCH 3.10.17 Fair. No. 3 Co & part of B.H.Q. out for baths – working parties

**Thu, Oct 4, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

C.P.R. TRENCH 4.10.17 Cloudy & cool in morning. Heavy wind & rain storm in evening & night. No. 4 Coy out for baths - working parties

**Fri, Oct 5, 1917 AREA NORTH OF WILLERVAL, FRANCE**

C.P.R. TRENCH 5.10.17 Cold & cloudy – some rain. Battalion moves to LA PORTIQUE dump near NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST in night.

**Sat, Oct 6, 1917 NEUVILLE-ST-VAAST AREA, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 6.10.17 Heavy rain in morning to MONCHY-BRETON billets marching to ECURIE thence by light railway to LA BELLE EPINE – thence by road

**Sun, Oct 7, 1917 MONCHY-BRETON, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 7.10.17 Frost in early morning – Heavy rain with bright intervals in day Kit inspection

**Mon, Oct 8, 1917 MONCHY-BRETON, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 8.10.17 Fair & breezy in morning turning to rain in afternoon & evening

**Tue, Oct 9, 1917 MONCHY-BRETON, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 9.10.17 Fair with strong wind in morning turning to rain in p.m. Musketry

**Wed, Oct 10, 1917 MONCHY-BRETON, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 10.10.17 Rain in morning clearing in afternoon - fine & cold in evening Baths -

**Thu, Oct 11, 1917 MONCHY-BRETON, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 11.10.17 Fair in day - showers in evening & night. Brigade inspection by Army Commander who expressed his entire satisfaction with the appearance and steadiness of the Battalion Major Capt. H.W. NIVEN D.S.O. M.C. assumes command of the Battalion temporarily vice Major A.H. GAULT D.S.O. on leave. LIEUT. G.W. GUIOU M.C. [475868] was awarded BAR to the MILITARY CROSS (29.9.17) LIEUT. T.I. GIBSON [411040] joined (27-9-17) & 10 other rank. MAJOR A. RASMUSSEN struck off strength (7.9.17) on taking up duties of Instructor in AMERICAN Exp Force LIEUT. DOVE M.C. [823] struck off strength retained in England medically unfit (11.6.17) 2 O R die at C.C.S. [*Casualty Clearing Station*] of sickness LIEUT. M. TEN BROCKE [[Ten Broeke 51456](#)] to be acting Captain vice Temp. Capt. (a/g Major) E.S MACDOUGALL [[McDougall](#)] to England 30-8-17. 1 O.R. taken on strength 3/10/17

LIEUTS C.J. LIGHTBODY [410948] – G.H. BEESTON [475344] – A.R. CHIPMAN – H AGAR [748] and 3 O.R. taken on strength

**Fri, Oct 12, 1917 MONCHY-BRETON, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 12.10.17 Rain all day & night. Heavy in evening. Training & route marches. 19 O.R. rejoin Battalion

**Sat, Oct 13, 1917 MONCHY-BRETON, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 13.10.17 Rain - intervals of sunshine during the day. ~~Church Parades~~

**Sun, Oct 14, 1917 MONCHY-BRETON, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 14.10.17 Showery in a.m. fair in afternoon. 1 O.R. joins 2 struck off. Church Parades.

**Mon, Oct 15, 1917 MONCHY-BRETON, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 15.10.17 Fair - some showers. Training.

**Tue, Oct 16, 1917 MONCHY-BRETON, FRANCE**

MONCHY-BRETON 16.10.17 Fair – clouding up in p.m. rain in night. Battalion marches to SAUVY [SAVY] and entrains there for CAESTRE arriving at 2 p.m. and 5 p.m. then marching to billets near CAESTRE – B.H.Q. at W.7.a.8.5 [inserted: Le Peuplier] sheet 27 BORRE 1/40,000 26 O.R. ~~arrive & ??~~ rejoin 15/10/17

**Wed, Oct 17, 1917 LE PEUPLIER [SW of CAESTRE], FRANCE**

LE PEUPLIER 17.10.17 rain early in morning - fine later - clouding in afternoon - rain in night. 5 O.R. rejoin 9 struck off strength. During the rest at MONCHY BRETON Physical Training, Drill, lectures Bayonet Fighting & Musketry were carried out.

**Thu, Oct 18, 1917 LE PEUPLIER [SW of CAESTRE], FRANCE**

LE PEUPLIER 18.10.17 Fair. Training. CAPTAIN H.W. NIVEN D.S.O. M.C. to be Temp. Major A/g Capt. J.R McPHERSON [[MacPherson](#) 411064] to be Temp. Capt. A/g Capt. L.V. DRUMMOND-HAY to be Temp. Capt. Lieut. G.W. LITTLE to be Temp. Capt. LIEUT A.R. MILNE [410955] taken on strength from C.B.D. LIEUT. R.D. MILLYARD [478280] struck off on proceeding to 38th Battn. 1 O.R. taken on & 2 struck off strength.

**Fri, Oct 19, 1917 LE PEUPLIER [SW of CAESTRE], FRANCE**

LE PEUPLIER 19.10.17 Cold & overcast all day. Co'y Route marches in a.m. drill lectures & training. LIEUT. J.E. PIKE [475911] taken on strength from O.C.R.C. [C.C.R.C. *Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*]

**Sat, Oct 20, 1917 LE PEUPLIER [SW of CAESTRE], FRANCE**

LE PEUPLIER 20.10.17 Fair Training &c. LIEUT-Col [Agar] ADAMSON D.S.O. assumes command having returned from leave. LIEUT C.O. DOWLING [[G.O. Dowling](#)] taken on strength from C.M. Gun Co'y 1 O.R. taken on strength

**Sun, Oct 21, 1917 LE PEUPLIER [SW of CAESTRE], FRANCE**

LE PEUPLIER 21.10.17 Fair – Church Parades

**Mon, Oct 22, 1917 L LE PEUPLIER [SW of CAESTRE], FRANCE**

LE PEUPLIER 22.10.17 Rain in morning early clearing later. Battalion marches to Brigade Inspection near BORRE by H.R.H. The Duke of CONNAUGHT. Order received to move to forward area tomorrow

**Tue, Oct 23, 1917 LE PEUPLIER [SW of CAESTRE], FRANCE**

YPRES 23.10.17 Rain – clearing somewhat later in day. Battalion entrains at CAESTRE early in morning detraining at YPRES. Transport proceed by road from LE PEUPLIER to ST JEAN AREA (BELGIUM 28) via GODVAERSVELDE [*Godewaersvelde*] –BUSSEBOOM & VLAMERTINGE – establishing lines at I 2.d.1.10. Owing to Camp at ST JEAN AREA not being available Battalion remained in YPRES ruins. Much enemy aerial bombing at night

**Wed, Oct 24, 1917 YPRES, BELGIUM**

YPRES 24.10.17 Raining with clear intervals. Battalion furnished working parties carrying artillery ammunition in forward area. The Battalion is in Brigade reserve. Orders received to move on 25th to x camp near WIELTJE & advance party sent to take over – but later in the day this was cancelled owing to the accommodation in YPRES being better. Enemy aeroplanes coming over YPRES in squadrons of 11 & 13 - & bombing in day time. Our planes seem unable to cope with these formations. The plank road from WIELTJE to KANSAS CROSS blown up in 8 places.

**Thu, Oct 25, 1917 YPRES, BELGIUM**

YPRES 25.10.17 Morning clear with strong breeze clouding up later. Working parties again furnished. Enemy bombed and shelled YPRES & transport lines the latter being forced to move back of YPRES in consequence

**Fri, Oct 26, 1917 YPRES, , BELGIUM**

YPRES 26.10.17 Very heavy rain & wind in morning continuing until evening when clear moonlight . Working parties. The first portion of the Can. Corps PASSCHENDAELE offensive was carried out this morning by 8<sup>th</sup> & 9<sup>th</sup> Brigades.

Much enemy bombing on YPRES & back areas in evening & night. LIEUT. F.L. APPLETON & O.B. REXFORD [*McG 77*] and 19 O.R. taken on strength from C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*] Two men wounded from shell fire.

**Sat, Oct 27, 1917 YPRES, , BELGIUM**



## APPENDIX A

Copy PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY. SECRET.  
No .....

### INSTRUCTIONS FOR THE OFFENSIVE.

#### 1. INFORMATION.

The 72nd Canadian Infantry Battn will attack on the Right of the P.P.C.L.I. and the 49th Cdn Infantry Battn (E. R.) on the Left.

#### 2. OBJECTIVE & BOUNDERIES.

-----  
Map will be issued as soon as possible.  
Boundary between Battalions will be the GRAVENSTAFEL VINDICTIVE/CROSS-ROADS Road. This Road will be inclusive to the P.P.C.L.I.  
-----

#### 3. PLAN OF ATTACK.

(a) The Battalion will attack on a two-Company frontage. The R.C.R. will be in Brigade Support and will supply carrying parties.

The 42nd Battalion R.H.C. will be in Brigade Reserve.

(b) Nos. 2 and 3 Coys, (2 Coy on the right, 3 Coy on the Left), will capture, consolidate and garrison the Blue Objective, on map to be issued.

Nos. 1 and 4 Coys (4 Coy on the Right and 1 Coy on the Left), will consolidate and garrison a Support Line to the Blue Objective as shown on map. (Less Moppers-up, see following Sub- paragraph).

(c) Moppers-Up. All Moppers-up, including moppers-up for the Area between the Blue Objective and the Support Line, will be supplied by the Companies detailed to consolidate and garrison the Support Line. The number of men to be detailed by these two Companies will be decided upon later.

(d) Stokes' Guns. Two Guns of the 7th Canadian Trench Mortar Battery will be allotted to each of the attacking Battalions. It is not expected that these Guns will go forward in the attack. They will probably go forward shortly after the Attack, and take up defensive position in the Support Line.

The remaining four Guns will be in Brigade Reserve.  
-----

#### 4. BATH MAT TRACKS & MULE TRACK.

As soon as possible after the Attack Bath Mat Track No. 6 and Mule Tracks will be pushed forward as far as possible and will run via WATERLOO-Northern

Slopes of BELLEVUE and MEETCHEELE Spurs.  
-----

5. ASSEMBLY.

When the Battalion relieves a Battalion of the 9th Canadian Infantry Brigade in the Line, the Battle Front only will be taken over, On the night preceding the Attack the Assaulting Troops will be formed up to their Assembly positions one hour before Zero.  
-----

6. NOMINAL ROLL OF PERSONNEL TO BE LEFT OUT OF LINE.

To be issued later.  
-----

7. LIAISON.

Lieut. A. J. Kelly, with Runners, is detailed as Liaison Officer to the 72nd Battalion attacking on our Right. Lieut. C. K. McRorie, with runners, is detailed as Liaison Officer with the 49th Battalion, attacking on our Left. The duties of Liaison Officers are:- Keep his own Unit apprised of what the situation is in front of the Unit to which he is attached and to be thoroughly xxxxxxxx familiar with the plans and dispositions of this Battn.  
-----

8. SIGNAL COMM-UNICATON.

Lieut. J. A. Haslam will be responsible for the Signalling temporarily during the absence of Lieut. Reynolds, and will see that the following instructions , as far as they concern this Battalion ,are thoroughly carried out:-

(a) Before the Attack.

Brigade will have a speaking circuit to all Battalion HQrs, a line to propose[d] Brigade Report Centre, (T.S.) at BELLEVUE, (D.4.c.6.1.) and a speaking and Fullerphone Circuit to Division, and Brigades on Right and Left.

Brigade O.P.s will have a line to Brigade HQrs or Brigade Report Centre (T.s.)

As much as possible of above communications will be by buried cable.

A wireless set will be working from Brigade to Division.

(b) After Zero Hour.

The Brigade Signal Officer, six men with Power Buzzer, and four Runners will go forward with Staff

Captain "T" to locate Advanced Brigade Report Centre (R.C.), at approximately D.5.c.90.95. A Blue and White Signal flag, or, if this is undesirable a Blue and white sign on the Pill Box will be here to guide runners. Battalions and Coys may send reports to this Point, if their communications to Battalion HQrs are out. They will be sent back by Power Buzzer to Brigade Report Centre (T.S.) and from there forward to Battalion HQrs.

As soon as possible after attack is launched a party will start from Brigade Report Centre (T.S.) to lay cable above ground to Advanced Brigade Report Centre (R.C.)

Power Buzzer will be used until such time as the cable is laid, and if the cable is cut.

Two Signallers from each attacking Battalion will go forward with Brigade party to Advanced Brigade Report Centre (R.C.) From there they will lay a laddered telephone line to their respective Advanced Brigade Report Centres. The location of the latter to be selected by Battalions concerned and the co-ordinates forwarded to Brigade as soon as possible.

In addition the Signallers of each Attacking Battalion will lay a laddered telephone line from their Battalion HQrs to their Advanced Battn Report Centre.

If Battalion HQrs move forward to take up Advanced HQrs, an Officer will be left at former HQrs until communication is established with the new HQrs.

No Battalion HQrs are to move without Brigade permission.

Six pigeons will be supplied to each Battalion to be used under their own arrangements.

Messages sent to Advanced Brigade Report Centre (R.C.) should be as brief as possible to allow all reports to be handled quickly. Long messages are not necessary and only delay other and more important ones.

A Lucas Signalling Lamp and Signalling flags will be taken to Advanced Brigade Report Centre (R.C.) and to each Battalion Report Centre. A Brigade receiving station will be established either at Brigade Report Centre (T.S.) or at WATERLOO.

A Divisional Receiving Station will be established on ABRAHAM HEIGHTS, in touch with a transmitting Station on Hill 35, which will be in touch with advanced Divisional HQrs WIELTJE. Assaulting Battalions will arrange to open communications with the station on ABRAHAM HEIGHTS as soon as possible.

Runners will only be used when other means of

communication fail. The lines with dabs of luminous paint (for night work) will be laid from Brigade HQrs to Advanced Brigade Report Centre (R.C.); from the latter to their respective Battalion HQrs. Important messages should be sent in duplicate with runners at 100 yards interval.

Battalions will be supplied with the necessary equipment to send and receive messages from aeroplanes.

Battalion HQrs will be marked at night by three lights arranged as follows:

R.C.R. – In form of a triangle, thus – . . .

P.P.C.L.I. – In line parallel to ground- . . .

42nd Battn – By inverted triangle - . . .

49th Battn. – In vertical line - . . .

Brigade Headquarters and Brigade Report Centres will be marked by a single red lamp.

-----

9. ADMINISTRATIVE ARRANGEMENTS.

Instructions as to Water Dumps, Prisoners, Salvage, etc, will be issued by the Staff Captain “ A & Q”, 7th Cdn. Inf. Bde.

-----

10. DRESS , EQUIPMENT AND TOOLS.

(a)

Each man will carry:- 170 Rounds of S.A.A. with the exception of Signallers, Scouts, Runners, Lewis Gunners and Bombers, who will carry 50 Rounds.

One Aeroplane flare

Two Iron Rations in haversack, unexpended portion of day’s rations, one tin of solidified alcohol and three sandbags.

(b) Each Bomber will carry ten Mills Grenades,

(c) All available wire cutters will be carried.

(d) Two Rifle Grenades will be carried by all Other Ranks except Bombers and Lewis Gunners.

(e) Companies will carry:

24 S.O.S. Rifle Grenades No. 32.

100 Shovels, and as many Watson Fans as may be issued.

(f) Rifle Grenadiers will each carry ten Rifle Grenades. Extra blank ammunition will be carried by Rifle

Grenadiers.

(g) Muzzle Protectors will be used on all rifles.

-----

11. MAPS.

One copy of PASSCHENDAELE sheet 1/10,000 will be issued to every Officer, R.S.M, C.S.M.s, Platoon Sergeants and Section Commanders.

-----

12. ADVANCE POSTS.

Particular attention to be paid to pushing forward Advance Posts and take up Commanding Positions immediately upon arriving at our Objective.

-----

13. GREAT COATS.

Great Coats will be worn and will be piled in Coy Dumps previous to Zero Hour, and it is expected will be conveyed to the rear area by carrying party from the R.C.R.

-----

14. ADDITIONAL.

Further particulars, maps Barrage Maps etc. will be available later.

(Signed) L. V. DRUMMOND – HAY  
Captain & Adjutant.

**APPENDIX “B”**

PRINCESS PATRICIA’S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY.

NARRATIVE OF OPERATIONS.

October 28th, -29th-30th-31st and November 1st 1917.

On the 17th October the Battalion moved to CAESTRE near HAZEBROUCK to complete training for the PASSCHENDAELE Offensive. Strenuous training was carried out in the Area until 23rd October when the Battalion entrained at CAESTRE and detrained at YPRES in heavy rain. The Battalion was ordered to proceed to “X” Camp in WIELTJE Area, but owing to the fact that the 9th Brigade had not cleared the Camp we were to move into, temporary billets were obtained in YPRES, which subsequently became permanent billets until the 28th October. During the

time the Battalion was in YPRES, preliminary orders were issued by Brigade including maps, showing objectives, boundaries, etc. and subsequently Battalion Orders attached marked "A", "B", "C", were issued together with Secret Map No. 4 marked "D" attached. All men were also fully equipped with the various articles for the attack as laid down in Operation Orders.

On the morning of the 28th October orders were received from Brigade that we were to relieve the 43rd, 52nd and 58th Battalions on GRAVENSTAFEL RIDGE, with Battalion Headquarters at OTTO FARM. The Battalion, less No. 4 Company, moved off from YPRES at 3-00 p.m. in accordance with attached Operation Order marked "E", and proceeded to WIELTJE CORNER and from WIELTJE CORNER Via Bath Mat Track No. 5 to GRAVENSTAFEL RIDGE. Very heavily shelled going in but very few casualties. No. 4 Company was attached to the 49th Battalion and came under Officer Commanding 49th Battalion tactically, and took up a position on the front which the Battalion was to attack from. No. 4 Company relieved the 116th Battalion in DAD TRENCH, as shown in attached [map marked "F"](#). The 116th Battalion were to have pushed a line forward into the SNIPE HALL this night previous to the relief, but were unable to do so. This operation was carried out later in the night on completion of relief by No. 4 Company. The line was consequently pushed to SNIPE HALL and at daybreak No. 4 Company was situated as shown on attached [map marked "G"](#).

Up to this time Barrage Map had not been issued by Brigade as information regarding the result of the operation on the night of 28th/29th, which would decide the jumping-off trench, was not available. On the morning of the 29th a reconnaissance of our position was made and subsequently the jumping-off trench was decided upon and Barrage Map was issued as per Secret Map attached marked "H".

A Company Commanders Conference was called at Battalion Headquarters at OTTO FARM at 11-30 a.m. on the 29th, and final instructions were given. It was also explained to Company Commanders that for numerous reasons it had become necessary the draw back the jumping-off trench slightly to a line along which we were able to connect with both flanks. Following this Conference and to corroborate points taken up, attached Instructions marked "J" were issued to Companies.

At 3-00 p.m, 29th inst, telegram received from Brigade notifying Zero Hour would be 5-50 a.m. Message attached, marked "A" "K"

Orders then received for Battalion, less No. 4 Coy to move from GRAVENSTAFEL RIDGE and to assemble in Jumping-Off Trench. On arrival of Nos. 1,2, and 3 Coys, No. 4 Coy

withdrew to Right Support Trench and Battalion assembled in positions they were to jump off from the following morning. Battalion Headquarters moved to WATERLOO.

At 11-05 p.m. 29th, the following message received from Major T. M. Papineau M.C, marked "L" and attached to War Diary copy of Narrative:-

"All four Companies are now reported to be in their Assembly Positions. No. 3 Company has two Posts in Front where No. 4 Company's leading Platoon was. Each Post one N.C.O. and 6 men. Will be withdrawn about 5-00 or 5-30 a.m. Relief was seen by the enemy as it came in and was actively fired upon. No. 3 Company had one man killed, No. 1 Company one man killed, No. 2 Company one man killed, No. 4 Company one man killed and one man wounded. Germans reported to be wiring in approximately on road across our immediate frontage."

Several casualties in Assembly trenches. Lieuts. LALOR, MACKAY and BEESTON were wounded.

#### 30TH OCTOBER, 1917.

1-00 a.m. Two Platoons of R.C.R. now in Reserve position in DAD TRENCH.

4-00 a.m. Major H. W. Niven D.S.O, M.C, Lieut. J. M. Christie, three Scouts and three Runners proceeded forward to establish Advanced Battalion Report Centre at BELLEVUE.

4-30 a.m.- Telephone communication working well, between Advanced Report Centre and Battalion Headquarters. The Lucas Lamp Signal Stations at Battalion Headquarters and at Advanced Report Centre in good working order.

5-50 a.m.- Barrage opens and advance commences.

The following messages regarding the Attack sent back from Advanced Battalion Report Centre

7-05 a.m.  
Message No.1: "All Coys going ahead in good order."

7-45 a.m.  
Message No. 2: "Right Coy seems unable to keep up with barrage owing to smoke."

7-50 a.m.  
Message No. 3: "Number of prisoners now coming in."

9-25 a.m.

Message No. 4: "Crest of hill taken. Large Pill box surrendered. Our Machine Guns established."

10-00 a.m.

Message No. 5:- "Many Stretcher cases on the field. Stretcher Bearers wanted."

10-30 a.m. Sgt Mullin, Scout Sergeant, returns from Front Line and reports Battalion to have captured Pill Box on crest of the highest ground on our front and to be consolidating on enemy's side of the crest, just in front and along road running through MATCHEELE. Strength of Battalion estimated at 225.

11-15 a.m. Message No. 6:- "Reinforcements badly needed forward.

11-20 a.m.

Message No.7:- "No. 1 Company about 40 strong. Strength of four Companies about 250."

11-25 a.m. Two platoons of R.C.R. held in Reserve in DAD TRENCH sent up to reinforce.

11-30 a.m. Two more Platoons R.C.R. from GRAVENSTAFEL RIDGE brought up to Reserve in jumping-off trench.

1-45 p.m.

Message No. 8:- "100 magazines filled for Lewis Guns wanted at front line at once.

2-20 p.m. Position of Battalion now settled and reported to Brigade as follows:-

"We are established on the high ground in front of MATCHEELE with a line running approximately parallel with road running through METCHEELE across our front. We are in touch with the 49th on our left. Our position is now definite".

3-15 p.m. Officer casualties very heavy and reported to Brigade as follows:-

Major T.M. Papineau M.C.	Killed in Action	30-10-17.
Capt. R.L. Haggard.	" " "	"
Capt. W.H. Morris M.C.	" " "	"
Lieut M.W. Williams	" " "	"
Lieut J E. Almon.	" " "	"
Lieut H.E. Agar.	" " "	"
Lieut J.R. Riddell.	" " "	"
Lieut G.H. Beeston.	Wounded.	30-10-17.
Lieut J.E. Pike.	"	"

Lieut A. J. Robins.	„	„
Lieut C.F. Lalor.	„	„
Lieut J. Mackay.	„	„
Lieut A.R. Chipman.	„	„
Lieut T.I. Gibson.	„	„
Lieut G.R. Stevens.	Gassed.	28-10-17.
Lieut G.G. Reynolds.	Wounded at Duty.	29-10-17.
Lieut D.H. Macartney.	„ „ „	30-10-17.

3-20 p.m. Message sent to Rear to have Captain H.E. Sullivan, Lieuts. C.K. McRorie and C.J. Lightbody sent up at once.

4-25 p.m. Line along which Battalion has consolidated as per attached map marked "M". Notified to Brigade S.O.S. Barrage line settled.

5-05 p.m.  
 Message No. 9 received from Lieut. P.M. Puley No. 1 Company:-  
 "There are about 100 men out inf front of Pill-Box marked "X" on previous report. These are in charge of 3 Corporals and 1 Lance-Corporal. They are supported on right by party sent up by R.C.R. Position for fire is a good one. They have 2 Lewis Guns.

Another party of 75 rifles command ridge and valley below on the left and join up with 49th. We have Lewis Guns but a limited supply of ammunition. A party of Germans approached our trench at about 1.0.0. The artillery replied to our S.O.S. and had several direct hits, dispersing the party. At present they are moving around under cover of a white flag, picking up wounded. Reported to F.O.O. several "heavies" dropping short. Cannot locate Lucas Lamp in the trench".

5-05 p.m.  
 Message No. 10 received from Lieut Puley:-  
 "Could you supply party for ten stretcher cases to report at Pill-Box marked "X".  
 These men could work in daylight as we hold the ridge".

6-50 p.m. Arrangements being made to get extra troops as Stretcher Bearers to clear Battle Field of numerous wounded. Some parties came up but owing to shelling few of them are able to get beyond ridge.

8-00 p.m. Strength of Battalion now estimated about 180.

8-30 p.m. Company of the R.C.R. detailed to go forward to garrison and consolidate a line in close support to the

line now held by the Battalion.

9-30 p.m. Captain H.E. Sullivan and Lieuts. C. K. McRorie and C. J. Lightbody report from Rear. Captain Sullivan detailed to go forward and take charge of the firing line. Lieut McRorie detailed to No. 2 Company and Lieut Lightbody detailed to No. 1 Company.

10-00 p.m. The 3 Officers to reinforce the line move forward together with Company of R.C.R. detailed to consolidate Support Line.

31 OCTOBER 1917.

1-30 a.m.

Message No. 11 received from Capt. Sullivan:-

“I find our line consisting of shell holes running about level with pill-box. Well held in small separate posts. Capt. Wood of the R.C.R. brought up his Coy. of 30 Other Ranks and has dug in 50 yards behind Pill-Box. There are only 8 R.C.R. left in the front line with 2 Officers. We have 6 Lewis Guns in working order and hold the crest of the ridge. The enemy have apparently dug themselves in 200 yards in front of us. One of their patrols has just come up to our line but was beaten off. I figure I can hold this line against any counter-attack they put across. The sniping from our left in the worst feature. I am sending out Lieut Macartney who is all in and has been slightly hit in the wrist. Capt. Macpherson is pretty well all in. Lieut Puley has done very well and was in charge of the front line when I took over. We have about 15 stretcher cases in this Pill-Box as well as others outside. The enemy were using white flags today with their stretcher parties. I suggest that you send up stretcher parties by daylight to-morrow with white flags. We want water, S.O.S. Signals, S.A.A. and Bombs. Also a few rounds of blank.”.

1-45 a.m. Capt. H. E. Sullivan seriously wounded and Major H. W. Niven D.S.O. M.C. detailed to go forward and take charge of front line. Lieut. J. A. Haslam goes up to take charge of Battalion Advanced Report Centre.

2-00 a.m. Information received that the Battalion will be relieved on the night of 31st/1st by the 42nd Battalion. Their advance parties go up during the night.

3-00 a.m. Advised by Brigade that all 123th [*123<sup>rd</sup> Pioneer*] Battalion and details from other Battalions will be forward by 5-30 a.m. to clear Battle Field of Stretcher cases.

5-00 a.m. Information received that Captain H. E. Sullivan Died of Wounds.

4-15 a.m. The S.O.S. went up along our front. Artillery reply very good, Enemy did not attack.

7-00 a.m. Stretcher Bearing parties arrive and work of clearing Battle Field of wounded commences.

8-15 a.m.

Message No. 12 received from Major Niven:-

“Have been around all posts and sniping not good today. Think shelling yesterday spoilt the Bosch nerve. I send a map with of Tenbrocke No. 2 Coy. position with No. 4 Coy. He has two Lewis Guns. Could see with glasses 4th Division on our right front about 500 yards away, but swamp between makes visiting difficult. 49th Battn. seems a long left flank to this position of No. 1 Coy and No. 4 Coy. and all the sniping is coming from their front”..

8-15 a.m.

Message No. 13 received from Major Niven:-

“Have 7 Lewis Guns all in working order and mounted ready to fire. S.O.S. went up from 4th Division about 4-00 a.m.”.

1-00 p.m. Attached Orders marked “N” and “O” sent out in connection with the relief of the 42nd Battalion.

5.30 p.m. The S.O.S. goes up on our front. Our artillery opens and enemy retaliation becomes heavy, which delays [inserted: relief] which was to have commenced at 6-00 p.m.

6-00 p.m. Battle FIELD REPORTED CLEAR OF ALL WOUNDED.

7-00 p.m.

Message No. 14 received from Capt. J. R. Macpherson:-

“Owing to mixture of Coys. still existing here I cannot give close estimate of strength. We have about 30 of the R.C.R. whom we are using in close support just in rear of Pill-Box which is H.G. No. 4vCoy. is about 50 strong, No. 2 Coy. very weak. Accompanying sketch map shows disposition as I am given it on left and I know it to be on right. Enemy observed in considerable numbers on road where marked “X”. Appeared to be in full marching order as if making a relief. Fire of Lewis Guns failed to check this movement. Sniper who was in or near Graf House no longer active. Had house searched tonight and found it vacant. Machine Guns on low ground (49th Battn) front very troublesome, also snipers. Only a line of shell holes held on frontage. No wire or trench. Capt. Sullivan was shot through chest tonight and carried out. Very bad I believe. Tenbrocke\* and McRorie are on right. Lightbody and Puley on left. Lieut Allan and Grant-Suttie and Capt. Wood of R.C.R. here. No

immediate attack expected, but shelling heavy at intervals.”.

\* [*Tenbroeke*]

7-00 p.m.

Message No. 15 received from Major H.W. Niven:-

“Have been over to 4th Division on our right and talked the matter over with Major Hamilton and we both agree that it will be impossible to connect. Quiet day so far, no casualties. Am arranging to have all dead buried before leaving and sending a note to Haslam to do the same in his Area.

7.15 p.m. Lamp Signal communication maintained throughout whole operation until 6-35 p.m. when Sergt Crock, operating the Station at Advanced Battalion Report Centre was wounded, and Station blown up. New station erected at once and signal communication organised and maintained until completion of relief.

7-20 p.m. Artillery slackens up and relief commences.

12-00 midnight. Relief complete and Battalion proceeds to POMMERN CASTLE. Enemy shelling GRAVENSTAFEL RIDGE and Area with gas shells necessitating the wearing of gas masks during the march to POMMERN CASTLE.

1st NOVEMBER 1917.

3-00 a.m. The Battalion arrives at POMMERN CASTLE. 49th Battalion also here and composite Battalion formed. Accommodation very limited.

Lieut A.J. Lightbody seriously wounded on arriving at POMMERN CASTLE. He later died from these wounds.

The Battalion ordered to proceed to “X” Camp, St. JEAN AREA on completion of relief by 13th Battn, but owing to shelling which commenced about 10-00 a.m. the Battalion moves off at once, takes up a position in Field near WIELTJE CROSS ROADS and remains there until arrangements could be made to get into “X” Camp.

The Battalion remained in “X” Camp on the night of 1st/2nd and proceeded on the morning of the 2nd to YPRES, entraining for ABEELE. Arrived at ABEELE about 11-30 a.m. detrained, and marched to WICTOU AREA, where we are now billeted.

nNote. All maps referred to and report maps received from time to time, together with all original messages received, attached to War Diary copy of this narrative.

4-11-17.

(Signed) Agar Adamson.

Lieut-Colonel.  
Commanding P.P.C.L.I.

-----

B

INSTRUCTIONS FOR THE OFFENSIVE NO. 2.

ROYAL FLY)  
ING CORPS.

(a) A contact patrol aeroplane will be furnished by No. 21 Squadron R.F.C. to fly and call for flares at Zero plus 4 hours. The contact aeroplane will be marked as follows:-  
In addition to the ordinary Squadron marking ( a dumb-bell on the fusilage behind the national marking), and a big "A" in front of the national marking) contact machines will have a small black rectangular plaque behind the lower plane on each side.

(b) The most advanced Infantry will signal their position on the aeroplane calling by Klaxon horn or showing white lights by lighting WHITE flares and signalling with Watson fans. Flares must be lit in the bottom of trenches or in bottom of shell holes. The extreme importance of communicating their position must be impressed upon all Units as one of the chief difficulties in the recent type of fighting is the accurate location of our own front line, and unless the Infantry make their position known they cannot expect effective support from our Artillery in case of emergency

(c) In addition to the contact machine a patrol will be furnished to fly at ZERO plus one hour and remain in the air the whole day for the special purpose of locating and informing the Artillery of any signs of counter-attacks. This machine has no special markings.

-----

ANTI-AIR  
CRAFT DEFENCE.

It must be clearly understood that the duty of defending themselves against low flying aircraft rests with the Infantry. Our own aeroplanes cannot effectively deal with them, but recent experience on this front has conclusively proved that rifle and machine gun fire from the ground is most effective for the purpose. Four or five hostile machines have been brought down by these means in one day.

-----

FLIGHT

(a) S.O.S. Signal.

SIGNALS.

On the Second Army front the S.O.S. is a rifle grenade signal showing three parachute lights, vis, RED over GREEN, over YELLOW. This signal will remain in force on the Canadian Corps front until further orders.

The S.O.S. on the Fifth Army front is a succession of rifle grenade signals bursting into two RED and two GREEN simultaneously.

(b) S.O.S. Signals

It has been found advisable to establish S.O.S Relay posts to repeat the signal from the front line back to Supporting Battalions and Artillery. Infantry Battalions in the front line will arrange for Relay post to their Battalion Headquarters. The Staff Captain "T" 7th Canadian Brigade, will arrange for Relay posts from Headquarters of Battalions to Brigade Headquarters.

SYNCHRONIZATION OF WATCHES.

-----  
The signalling Officer will take a synchronized watch to Brigade Signal Office at 9.15 a.m, and 6-1 5 p.m. daily to check the time.

Reliable watches must be used for synchronization, and they must be sent so that the second hand minute hands agree. Watches without a Second Hand must not be used for synchronization.

In synchronizing watches the exact error of the watch should be noted and written down.

No attempt should be made to set the watch to the exact right time.

5. PATROLLING OF NO MAN'S LAND.

-----  
Several cases have occurred on which the enemy have occupied No Man's Land just prior to the bombardment and managed to get inside our barrage. Assaulting Battalions must be warned of this. In order to prevent this, patrols must be pushed out into No Man's Land and kept out until a few minutes before Zero hour.

6. LEWIS GUN POSTS.

-----  
As soon as the BLUE OBJECTIVE has been captured, attacking Battalions will each push out three Lewis Gun Posts to positions in shell holes about 100 yards in front.

Particular attention will be paid by these posts to ascertain the positions of posts on their flanks. This especially applies to posts on flanks of Battalions.

7. ACTION IN  
CASE PART OF  
LINE HELD UP.

Should any part of the line be held up by Machine Guns, wire or other unforeseen circumstances, units on the flank will push on and endeavour to envelop the obstacle. In the case of wire, units who cannot get through themselves should endeavour to assist neighboring units by using covering fire of rifles, etc, to keep the enemy's heads down while reserves are pushed through the gaps.

-----  
(Sgd) L. V. Drummond-Hay.  
Captain & Adjutant.  
P. P. C. L. I.  
-----

SECRET (c)

PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY. C

Instructions for Offensive No.3.

- (1) Reference previous instructions and Map "B" which was entered to date at conference to-day.
- (2) The Battalion will capture and consolidate the Blue Objective (2nd Stage) on 30th October, 1917, with Nos. 2 and 3 Coys (2 Coy on Right and 3 Coy on Left.) Nos. 1 and 4 Coys will support the Attack. No. 4 Coy on Right and No. 1 Coy on Left, and will consolidate Intermediate Objective as entered on Map "B".
- (3) Zero hour will be notified later.
- (4) There will probably be a halt of 20 minutes at Intermediate Objective.
- (5) Battalion will Attack in four waves- - two waves to each Company. The leading wave of Assaulting Companies will jump off in line. The remainder of Battalion in Artillery formation. Distance between waves approximately 30 yards. (Sections in file.)
- (6) Boundaries between Assaulting Corps [Coys] will be as arranged between Company Commanders.

- (7) Support Coys will be responsible for the Mopping-up and will each detail one Platoon to Mop-up between Intermediate and Final Objectives on their own front. Moppers-up will be in third wave.
- (8) One Machine Gun from the 7th Canadian M.G.Coy will be attached to each Assaulting Coy and will go forward in Third Wave. Guns will be placed upon reaching Final Objective. A Section of 8 men has been detailed to carry ammunition under arrangements to be made by Lieut. H. McKenzie, 7th Canadian M.G.Coy.
- (9) One Lewis Gun and Crew from Support Coys will be attached to Assaulting Coys as arranged.
- (10) One Stokes Gun will be attached to each Assaulting Coy and will be accompany Fourth Wave.  
25 Men from the R.C.R. Coy will be detailed to carry ammunition under directions of Capt. A.P. Gregg, O.C. 7th Canadian Trench Mortar Battery.
- (11) One Company of R.C.R. will be available for carrying and 2 Platoons of R.C.R. will be held in reserve.
- (12) Artillery barrage maps will be issued as soon as received from Brigade. If wind is favorable smoke will be used to indicate the pause on the Intermediate Line and the Final Protective barrage.
- (13) Immediately upon reaching Final Objective, two Advanced posts from each Coy will be pushed out and will take up a Commanding position roughly 100 yards in advance of Final Objective.  
No. 3 Company will place two Lewis Guns with these posts, and No. 2 Company, one Lewis Gun.
- 
- (14) Paragraph 3 (sub-para. B) of "Instructions for Offensive No.1" is cancelled insofar as it refers to Support Line to Final Objective.
- (15) Battalion ration and water Dumps will be WIMBLEDON Dump. (D.5.a.8.2.)
- (16) Particular attention will be taken to have escorts obtain receipts for any prisoners conducted to Rear and handed over to A.P.M.

NOTE:- Part of this information was more fully covered

in previous orders.

(Sgd) L.V. Drummond-Hay.  
Captain & Adjutant.

-----

#### Appendix E

#### PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY.      SECRET (c)-

REFERENCE SHEET  
8, N.W. & S.E.  
1/20,000.

- (1)            The Battalion less No. 4 Coy will relieve the 9th Canadian Infantry Brigade in the Gravenstafel Road Area to-night, (night of 28th to 29th.)

                  No. 4 Coy will be tactically under Command of "O.C." 49th. Battalion, and will take over Battalion frontage. No. 4 Company will proceed to "X" Camp, ST. JEAN AREA and report to "O.C." 49th Battalion at a time to be notified later.

- (2)            The Battalion will relieve the 9th Brigade as follows:-
  - 1 Coy will relieve the 43rd Battalion
  - 2 Coy will relieve the 52nd Battalion
  - 3 Coy will relieve the 58th Battalion.
- (3)            Time to Start. To be notified later.
- (4)            Order of March. 1, 2, 3, and H.Qrs.
- (5)            Starting Point. The Battalion will form up in

Column of Route on the Main Road running past the Prison facing the Square. Head of the Column to be in line with the Prison.

- (6) Dress:- Full Marching Order.
- (7) Advance Party. One Officer and 4 Other Ranks per Coy will proceed to the forward area as already arranged. Lieut. Christie will proceed at once and report to 9th Canadian Infantry Brigade Headquarters, and arrange to have guides supplied for the Battalion at the rate of 2 guides per Platoon. These guides will meet the Battalion at Otto Farm at about 5.30 p.m. Particular attention will be paid to ensuring that these guides are thoroughly familiar with the road from Otto Farm to the Area their Coy is to proceed to. Sergeant Mullen will be responsible that guides are available to guide Battalion to Otto Farm. D.15.a.8.0.
- (8) Officers' Kits. Mess stores, blankets rolled in bundles of 10 will be piled outside Coy Headquarters by 12 noon and will be picked up by T.O, and conveyed to Transport Line.
- (9) Captain H.E. Sullivan will be "O.C." Details and will issue his own orders.
- (10) Sanitation. Owing to the fact that all Billets at present occupied by the Battalion were taken over without authority, particular attention will be paid to the cleanness of billets.
- (11) No. 4 Coy will report "T.O." 49th Battalion at Wieltje Farm. The Transport Officer will make arrangements to convey Lewis Guns by limbers as far as possible, which will probably be Wieltje Cross Roads, from which point they will have to be carried.
- (12) On completion of relieve, Coys will report by Runner to Battalion Headquarters. Battalion Headquarters will be Otto Farm

(Sg) L. V. Drummond-Hay. Capt. & Adj

-----

Appendix F: [No. 26 Message map](#)

[Map](#) showing advance of No 4 Coy on night of 28/29<sup>th</sup> after 9<sup>th</sup> Battn went out –

-----

Appendix: [MESSAGE FORM](#)

Report from No. 4 Coy to ADJT. PPCLI, 3.15 a.m, 29.10.17:

“Enemy seen on our front in numbers at distance of 250 yds. Are now 100 yards in advance of 49th Bn and cannot find battalion on ~~left~~ right, so do not consider it safe to move company farther forward”

-----

Appendix G

[Barrage Map](#) (Enfilade Barrage)

-----

Appendix M

[No. 26 Message Map – advanced positions](#)

-----

Appendix O\*

PRINCESS PATRICIA’S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY. SECRET (O).

31st October 1917.

Lieut. J.A. Haslam,

-----

The 2 Platoons under your Command at BELLEVUE will be relieved by 42nd Battalion to-night. I will arrange guides for the incoming Unit. You will remain with these 2 Platoons until they are relieved, and then report to me at WAERLOO HOUSE. These 2 Platoons will remain under the Command of “O.C.O.” P.P.C.L.I. for the present. When relieved they will proceed to OTTO FARM where they will be met by Lieut. Guiou who will supply a guide to POMMERN CASTLE where Battalion will be billeted to-night.

Each man will carry our 25 rounds of S.A.A. only. All other ammunition will be handed over to the 42nd Battalion.

Signed "L.V. Drummond-Hay,

Captain & Adjutant.

\* [*Mistakenly named Appendix N by ???*]

---

Appendix N

PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY. SECRET (N)

31st October 1917.

Major Niven,

The Battalion plus the 2 Platoons of the R.C.R. under Command of Lieut. Allan and Grant Suttee will be relieved by 2 Coys of the 42nd Battalion to-night.

The Coy of the R.C.R. that went in last night in Support of our line will not be relieved.

Please have eight guides being one guide for each Platoon report to me at WATERLOO at 5.30 p.m. to-day to guide in relief.

On completion of relief Battalion plus 2 platoons of the R.C.R. will proceed to OTTO FARM where they will be met by Lieut. Guiou who will supply one guide for each Coy to POMMERN CASTLE where Battalion will spend the night.

The 2 Platoons in BELLEVUE AREA will be relieved under arrangements being made direct with Lieut. Haslam.

One Platoon of the 42nd Battalion may be used for this purpose.

On completion of the relief you will please report to the Commanding Officer at WATERLOO.

Each man will carry out 25 rounds of S.A.A. only. All other ammunition will be handed over to the 42nd Battalion.

Please acknowledge.

Signed "L.V. Drummond-Hay,  
Captain & Adjutant.

-----

**Thu, Nov 1, 1917 WIELTJE AREA, BELGIUM**

WIELTJE C 1.11.17 Cloudy & cold. The Battalion moves out of the line into Camp near WIELTJE

**Fri, Nov 2, 1917 WIELTJE AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 2.11.17 Cloudy & cold. The Battalion marches to YPRES and entrains to ABEELE marching thence to SCOTS CAMP near WATOU – Camp location K.12.a.3.3. (Belgium 28) – the Transport moving by road. Billets scattered and crowded - barns and tents

**Sat, Nov 3, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 3.11.17 Mist & clouds – cold with rain at night. Muster parade.

**Sun, Nov 4, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 4.11.17 Mist & clouds – Church parade. 45 O.R. join from C.R.C.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*]  
2 O.R. rejoin & 1 struck off strength.

**Mon, Nov 5, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 5.11.17 Fine in morning - clouding up in the afternoon. Baths.  
The following messages were received

From H.R.H. Princess Patricia “Just heard of the magnificent work done by the Battalion on Oct. 30th. Heartily Congratulate all ranks; deeply grieved for all the losses sustained and for Major PAPINEAU’s death

From Major A .H. Gault “The greatest regret of my life is that Army Orders prevented my being with you. God bless you all.

From MAJOR GEN. L. J. LIPSETT C.M.G. Commanding 3rd Can. Div. to Brig. Gen. H.M. Dyer D.S.O. G.O.C. 7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B.

Dear General DYER I have not been able to see your Battalion Commanders to express to them my appreciation of what they and their Battalions have done. I congratulate you and all the Brigade most heartily. The Battalions have done magnificently. The P.P.C.L.I. have many fine actions to their credit during the war – but I am sure none could be finer than their advance of the 30<sup>th</sup>

From FIELD MARSHALL SIR DOUGLAS HAIG, Commander in-Chief to G.O.C. 2nd ARMY. “The successes gained by your troops yesterday under such conditions are deserving of the highest praise. While all the troops did well and constituted materially to the results achieved – the performance of the 3<sup>rd</sup> CANADIAN DIVISION in particular was remarkably fine. The ground gained is of high importance – and I congratulate you and all under you on the results of the great efforts made”.

**Mon, Nov 5, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 5.11.17 Fair in morning – clouding up in afternoon. Baths

**Tue, Nov 6, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 6.11.17 Cold with rain – clearing at night. Baths.  
Pte Hill [F.] 447542 awarded the MILITARY MEDAL.

**Wed, Nov 7, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 7.11.17 showery

**Thu, Nov 8, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 8.11.17 Cold & cloudy turning to rain in evening & night. New draft is presented to the colour. H.R.H. Prince ARTHUR of CONNAUGHT visited the Battalion yesterday and conveyed to the C.O. the following message from the PRINCESS PATRICIA “I have the greatest pride in my regiment and while deploring your great losses I feel that the spirit and endurance of the Regiment which I love so well may always be depended on to uphold the highest ideals of the Empire”.

The following message was received from Lady EVELYN FARQUHAR “Will you convey to all ranks of the Regiment my deepest admiration for their gallantry and grit. While I deplore the heavy losses I know that it can always be depended on to be a credit to the service.

**Fri, Nov 9, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 9.11.17 Cloudy & overcast with clear intervals. Training

The following message was received from the Officer Commanding 43<sup>rd</sup> Battalion (Major CHANDLER)

Dear Colonel Adamson. Your very kind appreciation of the work done by my lads on bearer parties for your Regiment is more than ample praise for the small service they rendered. I have read your letter to them and they desire me to say that they did no more than their duty to their comrades who were carrying on the fight; being just out of the fighting themselves and knowing the conditions they could do no less than their best. It may be your turn on some future occasion to help us out. The Camerons will always welcome any opportunity of doing anything they can for a Regiment for which they have so much admiration as ~~for the~~ they have for the P.P.C.L.I. and though we never had the chance, we still look forward to the day when we may race the ‘Patricia’s’ to their objective. May I offer my congratulations on the splendid performance of your Regiment. I am sorry your casualties are so heavy – but you always rise again like a Phoenix stronger than ever – so that the P.P.C.L.I. even if badly cut up will still remain the same old fighting dogs.

CAPT. J. THOMPSON rejoins – posted to No. 3 Co. CAPT. H.C. DUNN (C.A.M.C.) [C. [St Clair Dunn](#)] posted to P.P.C.L.I. from 8 Can. Field Amb. 1-11-17.

2 O.R. taken on & 1 struck off strength. Training & parades

**Sat, Nov 10, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

Rain & cold. Warning order received to move back to PASSCHENDAELE AREA. Training & parades.

The officer commanding 7 Can. Mach. Gun Co'y write to C.O. "The officers and men of this Company very greatly appreciate your letter regarding the unfortunate death of LIEUT [H.] McKENZIE [P.P.C.L.I. - 1158] and also wish to thank you for your kind remarks as to the work of this Co'y during the recent action. All ranks feel the greatest admiration for your Battalion and although now Divisional Troops – we hope that we will always be associated with the 7<sup>th</sup> Brigade when in the line. The Esprit de Corps of the P.P.C.L.I. men with this Unit is most remarkable and you may rest assured that you will always get the best support possible.

The following message from Lieut.-Col. W.B. KINGSMILL Comg. 123<sup>rd</sup> Cdn. Pioneer Battn to Lt. Col. ADAMSON " Nothing has occurred since our arrival in France that has given me more unqualified gratification than your very kind and appreciative letter regarding the behaviour of my men after your Regiment's glorious attack on the 30th October. While all ranks of my Unit feel most gratified to receive such praise it is however only natural that they should have done everything that was humanly possible to get your brave chaps to the Dressing Station where they could receive the attention they so richly deserved. ~~From~~ The accounts I have received of the wonderful achievement of your Battalion show how thoroughly the officers and other Ranks are carrying on the splendid tradition of your Regiment. The only thing to regret is that such wonderful deeds should be at such great cost." Major C.J.T. STEWART D.S.O. rejoined and assumed the duties of 2nd i/c. LIEUTS. R.S MACPHERSON [411056] and A. [R.] JONES [410954] taken on strength. Capt D.A. McLEOD (C.A.M.C.) ceases to be attached on returning to 9 Can. F. Amb. MAJOR [H.W.] NIVEN returns to No. 2 Co'y. as C.O.

#### **Sun, Nov 11, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 11.11.17 Showery in morning clearing in afternoon. Xmas pay

#### **Mon, Nov 12, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 12.11.17 Fine. Training & parades. 3 O.R. struck off – 1 taken on strength.

#### **Tue, Nov 13, 1917 WATOU AREA, BELGIUM**

SCOTS CAMP 13.11.17 Dull & cloudy in morning clearing in afternoon. The Battalion moves by bus to B Camp near WIELTJE – Transport by road.

#### **Wed, Nov 14, 1917 WIELTJE AREA, BELGIUM**

WIELTJE CAMP 14.11.17 Cloudy – Drizzling rain in evening. The Battalion relieves 43<sup>rd</sup> Battn. in ~~the~~ ~~lin~~ night. No's. 1 & 2 Co'ys take over close support positions near VINDICTIVE CROSS ROADS (Reference PASSCHENDAELE Sheet)

This consisted of a series of disconnected lengths of trench and improved shell hole positions along a line running approximately V.30.c.75.30 to V.30.d.30.30. No. 1 Co. on the right & in support to R.C.R. No. 2 Co'y on left supporting 42 Battn. No. 3 Co'y in rear supports but supplied garrisons for the fortified positions at MEETCHEELE & BELLEVUE. B.H.Q. in pill box at BELLEVUE Pill Box

#### **Thu, Nov 15 to Sat, Nov 17, 1917 NORTH & WEST OF PASSCHENDAELE, BELGIUM**

BELLEVUE 15.11.17 to 17.11.17 During the period 14./15./16/ the weather was fair but cloudy with frequent ground mists and the whole of the support area – but particularly 1 & 2 Co'ys was subjected to heavy artillery fire. This lasted practically continuously - and also throughout the 17th – ~~per~~ the only quiet period during the entire tour 14/17 being between 4 a.m. and 9 a.m. on 17th. The front and rear areas were shelled with gas during the nights 15/16 & 16/17

No. 1 & 2 Co'ys were under control of 42<sup>nd</sup> & R.C.R. – messages being sent to the H.Q. of these Battns. at MEETCHEELE.

Aeroplane activity on the part of the enemy was very marked at all times especially on the 15<sup>th</sup> – mist & fog interfering with them on the other days. Our activity in the air was slight and not sufficient at any time to drive off enemy planes which besides directing artillery fire – also flew low and played upon our trenches with machine guns.

The Battalion suffered 59 Casualties – chiefly in 1 & 2 Co'ys – Lt. STRATFORD being killed and Lts. [A.R.] JONES [410954] [J.H.] CARVOSSO [51116] & [R.S.] MACPHERSON [411046] wounded – the latter two at duty. O.R. killed & died of wounds. wounded & missing.

The Battalion was relieved on the night of 17/18 by the 2<sup>nd</sup> Royal Berks [Berkshire]. There was a good deal of confusion as the Companies taking over were nearly twice as strong numerically as our own and had therefore to provide extra cover for themselves & as a consequence the relief was unduly prolonged

### **Sun, Nov 18, 1917 NORTH & WEST OF PASSCHENDAELE, BELGIUM**

WIELTJE 18.11.17 Cloudy. Battn. moves back in early morning to B Camp at Wieltje & remains there all day. Considerable Enemy shelling during the night. Transport moves to HONDEGHEM

### **Mon, Nov 19, 1917 WIELTJE AREA, BELGIUM**

19.11.17 Cloudy. Battalion moves by bus from KRUISSESTRAAT to ROBECQ - & the Transport by road to same place

### **Tue, Nov 20, 1917 ROBECQ, FRANCE**

COTTES 20.11.17 Cloudy. Battalion & Transport move from billets in ROBECQ to billets in COTTES – St HILAIRE

### **Wed, Nov 21, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 21.11.17 Cloudy – Battalion settling down in Billets

### **Thu, Nov 22, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 22.11.17 Cloudy – Colour parade in the afternoon LIEUT A.N.B MORTIMER [51259] carried the colours. Large draft of eleven Officers and 92 OR's taken on strength. LIEUT'S A.N.B. MORTIMER. [51259] G. GRANT. [602] R.G. BARCLAY [487394] A E. POTTS. [McG 268] A.L. CLARKE. [[W.L. Clark 411080](#)] S. LOPSTON. [[S. Loptson McG 227](#)] W.E. [E.W.] DUVAL. N.F. GAMMELL. [475265] M.L. HANCOCK. [McG 39] W.S. RAMSAY [[W.T. Ramsay 487369](#)] J.W. JEAKINS [McG 230].

**Fri, Nov 23, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 23-11-17 Bright & Cold – Battalion training carried on under Company arrangements.- LIEUT A.R. LINNELL [[A.P. Linnell](#), 475919] taken on strength and posted to No 3 Company – 2 OR's struck off strength casualties 17-11-17

**Sat, Nov 24, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 24-11-17 Rain & Cold – Battalion training carried on under Company arrangements Battalion Bath parade at LILLERS.

**Sun, Nov 25, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 25/11/17 Cloudy & Cold – Training as per Syllabus of training.  
Battalion pay parade in the afternoon. MAJOR C.J.T. STEWART D.S.O. assumes command of the Battalion during the temporary absence of LIEUT-COLONEL AGAR ADAMSON D.S.O. acting Brigadier – 33 OR's taken on strength

**Mon, Nov 26, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 26/11/17 Local showers – Battalion training as per Syllabus of training.  
Battalion parade in afternoon. 4 OR's taken on strength 2 OR's struck off strength

**Tue, Nov 27, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 27/11/17 Bright & Cold – Battalion training as per syllabus of training.  
Lieuts. G.C. Aldridge [751] and B.M. BENSON [487520] taken on strength also 8 O.R's 5 OR's struck off strength on reporting to 7<sup>th</sup> Cdn Trench Mortar Batty

**Wed, Nov 28, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 28/11/17 Bright & Cold – Battalion training as per syllabus.  
LIEUT C.C. ROBINSON taken on strength and posted to No 3 Company. Also 1 OR.

**Thu, Nov 29, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 29/11/17 Bright & Cold – Battalion route march and Bath parade to Lillers by Company's. The following ~~Aw~~ decorations have been awarded 487413 a/Sgt Moore L.L. 487446 a/Sgt Prideaux A. 51156 Frederickson C. 540106 [[540108](#)] Pte Sparling J.G. 487387 Cpl Bainbridge J.W. 207939 McMillan J.L. 770037 Pte McDonald T. [[MacDonald](#)] 678881 Pte Mitchell E.J. 124402 Myers T. 476068 A/Sgt Wood R. 487368 L/Cpl. Lappin W.I. LIEUT T. I. GIBSON [411040] struck off strength invalided to England 17/11/17 1 OR. struck off strength.

**Fri, Nov 30, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 30/11/17 Bright & Cold – Battalion training as per Syllabus  
MAJOR H.W. NIVEN D.S.O. M.C. struck off strength on being granted 2 months leave to Canada. 3 ORs struck off strength.  
1 O.R. reported died of wounds.

[Note transcriber: during November 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]

**Sat, Dec 1, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 1/12/17 Bright and cold – Battalion training in morning as per Syllabus Sports in afternoon. 1 O.R. taken on strength from L.O.C. [*Lines of Communication*] LIEUT J.E. PIKE [475991] struck off strength on being invalided to ENGLAND

**Sun, Dec 2, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 2/12/17 Fine & Cold – Battalion Church parade in morning.

**Mon, Dec 3, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 3/12/17 Cloudy but fine – Nos. 1 and 2 Coys firing on Ranges Remainder of Battalion training as per syllabus. 1 O.R. taken on strength. MAJOR J.O. SHARP [*180<sup>th</sup> Bn*] attached [*19 Feb 1917*] supernumerary struck off strength [*5 Sep 1917*] Authority Canadian Corps A 29-4-2 dated 1-12-17

**Tue, Dec 4, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 4/12/17 Fine & Cold – Battalion tactical scheme carried out in the morning. Inter platoon football match in afternoon.

**Wed, Dec 5, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 5/12/17 Bright & Cold – Battalion training as per syllabus. LIEUT. COLONEL AGAR ADAMSON D.S.O. on ceasing to be Acting Brigadier assumes command of the Battalion. 9 O.R.s taken on strength from C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*]

**Thu, Dec 6, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 6/12/17 Dull and warmer weather – Battalion training as per Syllabus. 2 O.R's struck off strength

**Fri, Dec 7, 1917 ST HILAIRE, COTTES & FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 7/12/17 Dull & showery – Battalion training as per syllabus – The following decorations have been awarded – A11013 [*411013*] SERGT. CHRISTIE H.F. No 4 Coy Distinguished Conduct Medal 1649 SERGT. CROOK H. Military Medal MAJOR E.S. McDOUGALL taken on strength and assumes Command of No 3 Coy.

**Sat, Dec 8, 1917 ST HILAIRE, COTTES, FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 8/12/17 Dull but fine – Battalion training in morning as per Syllabus.- Sports in afternoon – 8 O.R's taken on strength – MAJOR A. HAMILTON GAULT D.S.O. has been granted the local rank of LIEUT-COLONEL while commanding 3<sup>rd</sup> Canadian Divisional Wing C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*]

**Sun, Dec 9, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 9/12/17 Raining heavily all day – Battalion church parade in morning.

**Mon, Dec 10, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 10/12/17 Dull & cloudy – Training. 1 O.R. taken on strength

**Tue, Dec 11, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

ST HILAIRE COTTES 11/12/17 Cloudy – Battalion engaged in tactical scheme in morning In afternoon – Battalion Drill. LIEUTS. A.J. KNOWLING [475414] H.M. DOUGLAS [McG 263] – M. MACKAY [579] & L.E. KOELLE [*surname changed to HARVEY in 1918*] join from C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*] and 4 O.R. attached from 49<sup>th</sup> for duty with Band. [inserted: 10.12] LIEUT. A.R. JONES [410954] struck off strength invalided

**Wed, Dec 12, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES ST HILAIRE 12/12/1917 Dull & cold – clearing in evening. Battalion drill & training. Major H.W. NIVEN D.S.O.M.C. awarded a Bar to the D.S.O. LIEUT J.M. CHRISTIE [1576] and MAJOR T. McCARTHY (chaplain) awarded Military Crosses. 35 O.R. taken on strength from C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*]

**Thu, Dec 13, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES ST HILAIRE 13/12/1917 Dull & cold. Training under Company arrangements in morning. Lecture to Battalion on the Civil Educational Training to be carried out during the winter.

**Fri, Dec 14, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES ST HILAIRE 14/12/1917 Milder & drizzling in morning, clearing in late afternoon. Baths & Company training

**Sat, Dec 15, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES ST HILAIRE 15/12/1917 Bright & clear. Musketry in morning & afternoon Military Medal awarded to Sergt. ROSS H.A.[105111] – L/Cpl OLSEN O. [261098] Pte. McLARTY J.M. [489786] for gallantry at PASSCHENDAELE on 30.10.17 23 O.R. join from C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*] & 1 from L.O.C. [*Lines of communication*] 1 O.R. struck off.

**Sun, Dec 16, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 16.12.17 Cloudy. New reinforcements are presented to the Colour. Church Parade

**Mon, Dec 17, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 17.12.17 Snow in morning clearing later in day. Warning order was received on 16th for battalion to proceed to CAMBLAIN L'ABBÉ en route for AUX RIETZ but were afterwards cancelled.

**Tue, Dec 18, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 18.12.17 Clear & bright with hard frost. Battalion route march. Warning order having been received to proceed to LIEVIN Area – An advance party is sent up to look over the line. 1 O. R. struck off strength.

**Wed, Dec 19, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 19.12.17 Cold & clear. Battalion training. 1 O. R. taken on strength.

**Thu, Dec 20, 1917 ST HILAIRE & COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 20.12.17 Cold – hoarfrost. Training under Co. arrangements in new battle formation.

**Fri, Dec 21, 1917 MARQUEFFLES FARM [AIX-NOULETTE], FRANCE**

MARQUEFFLES HUTS 21.12.17 Cold & misty. Battalion moves by lorry to MARQUEFFLES CAMP. (Huts) Transport by road to FOSSE 10 (PETIT SAINS) Owing to lorries not arriving at COTTES until late in the afternoon the Battalion did not arrive in Camp until after midnight. A very uncomfortable move & camp.

**Sat, Dec 22, 1917 MARQUEFFLES FARM [AIX-NOULETTE], FRANCE**

MARQUEFFLES HUTS 22.12.17 Cold & cloudy in morning clearing later to bright frosty day

**Sun, Dec 23, 1917 MARQUEFFLES FARM [AIX-NOULETTE], FRANCE**

LIEVIN 23.12.17 Hard frost – cloudy. In the evening (4. p.m.) the Battalion entrains at AIX NOULETTE detraining at AUSTRALIAN Siding (M 22.d. Central ref. 36 C S. W. 1) relieving the 13th Battalion in the [inserted: front] line right subsector. The men taking in packs and one blanket. Bn. H.Q. at M.3.a.4.8. 3 & 4 Companies in front line supported by 1 & 2 Companies.

**Mon, Dec 24, 1917 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

LIEVIN 24.12.17 Thawing - some snow in the evening. Quiet but some sniping by the enemy whose line is not defined - [*indecipherable word*] is supposed to be holding the houses – across the street from ~~the~~ our front line of outposts in the outskirts of LENS. 1 O.R. wounded.

**Tue, Dec 25, 1917 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

LIEVIN 25.12.17 Snow flurries in morning turning to heavy snowfall in the evening.  
Situation quiet

**Wed, Dec 26, 1917 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

LIEVIN 26.12.17 Snow flurries – cold & clear in the evening. 1 & 2 Co's relieve 3 & 4 in the front line

**Thu, Dec 27, 1917 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

LIEVIN 27.12.17 Cold & cloudy

**Fri, Dec 28, 1917 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

LIEVIN 28.12.17 Cold & cloudy

**Sat, Dec 29, 1917 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

LIEVIN 29.12.17 Cold & cloudy. The Battalion is relieved by R.C.R. in the evening and marches to reserve billets in King's Cross Camp – ZOUAVE VALLEY. Cold and uncomfortable Camp consisting of small corrugated iron huts holding 6 or 8 men each. During this tour of trenches there was little activity on either side. Casualties amounted to 6 other ranks wounded. Major STUART D.S.O. [C.J.T. STEWART] took the battalion into the line with a trench strength of 28 officers and 480 O.R. The Battalion's right rested on the SOUCHEZ RIVER and on the left the 8th Brigade held the line. Lt. COL. [Agar] ADAMSON took over the command on 25/12.

**Sun, Dec 30, 1917 SOUTH EAST OF SOUCHEZ, FRANCE**

SOUCHEZ HUTS 30.12.17 Cold & cloudy with some snow. Bn. in huts resting

**Mon, Dec 31, 1917 SOUTH EAST OF SOUCHEZ, FRANCE**

SOUCHEZ HUTS 31.12.17 Cold & clear. H.R.H. PRINCESS PATRICIA wires ~~th~~ "Thanks Kind Telegram. I congratulate Battalion on the 3<sup>rd</sup> anniversary of its arrival in France where its heroic achievements have ever given me cause for being justly proud." This was in reply to a telegram sent H.R.H. by the Battalion on 20.12.17 on the occasion of the 3rd anniversary referred to. The following telegram was also received from H.R.H. Princess PATRICIA addressed to Lt. COL. ADAMSON "I wish you and the Officers N.C.O.s and men of the Battalion a very happy Xmas and the best of luck in the New Year. May 1918 bring us a Victorious Peace." Xmas greetings received from Major Gen. L.J. LIPSETT C.M.G. commanding 3rd Can. Div.

The Dist. [*Distinguished*] Conduct Medal awarded to 1116 C.S.M. Peacock C (No. 3 Coy) for gallant behaviour in the PASSCHENDAELE action (30.10.17)

LIEUT. J. CHRISTIE [475260] taken on strength & 2 O.R. 6 O.R. struck off.

[Note transcriber: during December 1917 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]

# PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY



*(Thierens Family Archives)*

## ***WAR DIARIES 1914 -1919***

Transcribed by Michael Thierens, 1914, 1915 and part of 1916 proofread and commented on by Donna Walker & Ross Toms. The complete War Diary was proofread by Stephen K. Newman, who also made valuable suggestions regarding lay-out and provided much additional information on individual soldiers and diligently researched and pin pointed the locations of the Regiment.

[CEFStudies@EeMike.nl](mailto:CEFStudies@EeMike.nl)

© Michael Thierens 2008.

# 1918

# PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY

## ***WAR DIARIES 1914 -1919***

© Transcribed by Michael Thierens

**Tue, Jan 1, 1918 SOUCHEZ AREA, FRANCE**

SOUCHEZ HUTS 1.1.18 Cold & cloudy. The Battalion has its delayed Xmas dinner in SOUCHEZ CAMP.

**Wed, Jan 2, 1918 SOUCHEZ AREA, FRANCE**

SOUCHEZ HUTS 2.1.18 Fine – a little snow at night. LT. [A.L] MILLS [411169] and 1 O.R. struck off strength.

**Thu, Jan 3, 1918 SOUCHEZ AREA, FRANCE**

SOUCHEZ HUTS 3.1.18 Colder – fair & clear freezing hard at night.

**Fri, Jan 4, 1918 SOUCHEZ AREA, FRANCE**

SOUCHEZ HUTS 4.1.18 Clear & cold in early morning moderating in afternoon. In the afternoon the Battalion relieves R.C.R. in the front line leaving LENS JUNCTION by light railway and as far as RED MILL SIDING in LIEVIN – MAJOR [C.J.T.] STEWART commanding. Trench strength 28 officers and 455 O.R. No. 3 Co'y on the right of the line No. 4 on left – both holding the right sub. sector. No 1 & 2 Companies in support in APPROACH & AGUE trenches. B.H.Q. at M.3.a.4.8. (36.C.S.W.1.) This was the same front as the Battalion occupied on its last tour and the front line Companies now disposed in the same way as on that occasion.

**Sat, Jan 5, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

Lievin 5.1.18 Thaw in afternoon. Overcast all day. At 9 p.m. the Enemy attempted a bombing raid on one of our posts, advancing in two parties of six and four respectively. Our post opened up on them with rifle fire – when the raiding parties took cover amongst the ruins of buildings and advanced to within bombing distance when they were dispersed by our stokes mortars commencing a shoot scheduled for that hour. We inflicted several casualties upon the enemy and had none among our own men.

**Sun, Jan 6, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

Lievin 6.1.18 Cloudy. very cold in morning – moderating later – rain in evening.

**Mon, Jan 7, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

Lievin 7.1.18 Thaw. Snow rapidly going. Frost in evening. No. 1 & 2 Companies relieve 3 & 4 in the front line.

**Tue, Jan 8, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

Lievin 8.1.18 Heavy fall of snow clearing in evening.

**Wed, Jan 9, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

Lievin 9.1.18 Heavy snow & wind storm.

**Thu, Jan 10, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

Lievin 10.1.18 Strong wind & thaw – Snow disappears. The Battalion was relieved by R.C.R. in afternoon moving to support area in LIEVIN.

During this tour 4 – 10 as many as ten patrols were sent out, & which thoroughly patrolled our side of the LENS – ARRAS road – but none of the Enemy were encountered with the exception of the bombing raid on the 5<sup>th</sup> and no identification could be obtained. Our snipers were fairly active during this tour and made 5 observed hits – whilst the result of 8 other targets fired at could not be ascertained. Our casualties for the tour were nil.

There was not very much artillery activity on either side.

**Fri, Jan 11, 1918 LIEVIN, FRANCE**

Lievin 11.1.18 Wind continues Slight rain in morning. The Battalion is now in Brigade support. B.H.Q. at M.23.c.-Central. No. 3 Co. has two platoons billeted in the area close to R.C.R. B.H.Q. – forming a Counter attack party. The other two platoons were billeted in the vicinity of CROW DUMP and CRAZY REDOUBT. The three remaining Companies back in LIEVIN around B.H.Q. The Distinguished Service Order was awarded to Capt. J.R. MACPHERSON [411064] for gallant and efficient service at PASSCHENDAELE on 30.10.17

1 O.R. struck off strength (23.12.17)

Temp. MAJ. (A/Lt. Col) [Agar] A.S.A.M. ADAMSON D.S.O. to be Temp. LIEUT. COL. (31.Oct.1916.) Temp. MAJOR A. RASMUSSEN resigns his commission on transfer to American Forces (29.11.17) 10 O.R. taken on strength. 2 O.R. struck off strength.

2 O.R. previously reported wounded now reported Died of Wounds.

**Sat, Jan 12, 1918 LIEVIN, FRANCE**

Lievin 12.1.18 Thawing. Fair. 2 men wounded. Nos. 1, 2 & 4 Coy's supply working & carrying parties by night. This continued during the period 10 – 16

**Sun, Jan 13, 1918 LIEVIN, FRANCE**

Lievin 13.1.18 Clear fine & frosty. Capt. M. TENBROEKE [*M. TEN BROEKE 51456*] awarded the MILITARY CROSS. No. 1641 C.S.M. BAKER C awarded the DISTINGUISHED CONDUCT MEDAL. Temp. LIEUT G.M. SMITH M.C. to be Temp. Capt. and to remain seconded 31.Oct.1917. Temp. LIEUT. (A./Capt.) M. TENBROEKE M.C. to be Temp. Capt. 31.10.17. LIEUT G.G. REYNOLDS and J.N. EDGAR [507] to be Temp. Captains (31.10.17).

Hon. Capt. R.S. LAKE transferred to England & posted to E.O.R.D. Seaford (29.12.17). 3 O.R. struck off strength – 1 O.R. reported wounded 30.10.17 now reported Died of Wounds 28.12.17

**Mon, Jan 14, 1918 LIEVIN, FRANCE**

Lievin 14.1.18 Cold – Heavy snowfall.

**Tue, Jan 15, 1918 LIEVIN, FRANCE**

Lievin 15.1.18 Heavy rain & wind storm all day & night.

**Wed, Jan 16, 1918 LIEVIN, FRANCE**

Lievin 16.1.18 Heavy wind. Raining in morning. The Battalion moves into front line – No's 3 & 4 Coy's occupying the front line as before

**Thu, Jan 17, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

Lievin 17.1.18 Rain.

**Fri, Jan 18, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

Lievin 18.1.18 Rain in a.m. wind at night.

**Sat, Jan 19, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

Lievin 19.1.18 Dull - windy.

**Sun, Jan 20, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF LENS, FRANCE**

Lievin 20.1.18 Dull & windy. The Battalion comes out to SOUCHEZ Huts in the evening – being relieved by the 102<sup>nd</sup> Battn. Very good relief.

During the above tour 17-20 patrols were sent out every day. The snipers were given many targets to shoot at, on the first day, and as a good many observed hits were made on these targets – the enemy kept low during the balance of the tour. FOSSE ST LOUIS appeared to be occupied in fairly large numbers by the enemy in spite of a 6" artillery shoot directed against it [inserted: on] the 16<sup>th</sup>. A considerable quantity of wire was placed out in front of our outpost line during this tour. On the morning of the 19<sup>th</sup> a German was killed while approaching our front line and in this manner we secured identification of the Regiment opposite to us (99 R.I.R.) [*99 Reserve Infantry Regiment*]

The tour, though the shortest was the most trying yet experienced on the LENS sector as the heavy rains whilst the Battalion was in support caused the trenches to collapse and the mud and water in places was waist high. These conditions had slightly improved on the night of relief 19/20.

There were no casualties on this tour

[inserted: except 1 O.R. died of wounds 19.1.18.]

**Mon, Jan 21, 1918 SOUCHEZ AREA, FRANCE**

SOUCHEZ 21.1.18 Dull & windy. Battalion in Souchez huts.

**Tue, Jan 22, 1918 SOUCHEZ AREA, FRANCE**

BOIS DE FROISSART 22.1.18 Dull with some fine intervals turning to heavy rain in evening. Battalion moves from SOUCHEZ huts to hut camp in BOIS DE FROISSART near HERSIN – Transport lines move from FOSSE 10 to COUPIGNY. The G.O.C. 3<sup>rd</sup> ~~Can. Division~~ 7th C.I.B. forwarded a letter of ~~ap~~ which he had received from the G.O.C. 3<sup>rd</sup> Can. Div. conveying his appreciation of the patrol work carried on the Brigade front. The award of Dist. [*Distinguished*] Conduct Medal to 1116 C.S.M. C. PEACOCK cancelled and award of MILITARY MEDAL substituted. 10 O.R. taken on strength & 9 O.R. struck off.

**Wed, Jan 23, 1918 AREA SOUTH OF HERSIN, FRANCE**

BOIS DE FROISSART 23.1.18 Cloudy. Baths at AIX NOULETTE

**Thu, Jan 24, 1918 AREA SOUTH OF HERSIN, FRANCE**

BOIS DE FROISSART 24.1.18 Cloudy. Wiring parties 10 O.R. struck off strength. Company training by Cos. rest engaged in wiring.

**Fri, Jan 25, 1918 AREA SOUTH OF HERSIN, FRANCE**

BOIS DE FROISSART 25.1.18 Mist in morning clearing to bright clear day – cold at night. Company training.

**Sat, Jan 26, 1918 AREA SOUTH OF HERSIN, FRANCE**

BOIS DE FROISSART 26.1.18 Mist in early morning clearing to bright fine day ~~Company having Church Parades~~ Training.

**Sun, Jan 27, 1918 AREA SOUTH OF HERSIN, FRANCE**

BOIS DE FROISSART 27.1.18 Mist in early morning – clearing to bright fine day clothing disinfected.

**Mon, Jan 28, 1918 AREA SOUTH OF HERSIN, FRANCE**

BOIS DE FROISSART 28.1.18 Fine & clear. Cold at night. Clothing disinfected. 10 O.R. taken on strength (26<sup>th</sup>) LIEUT C.K. McRorie [21867] from B.H.Q. to 2 Coy. 120 O.R. taken on strength from 3<sup>rd</sup> Div. Wing.

**Tue, Jan 29, 1918 AREA SOUTH OF HERSIN, FRANCE**

BOIS DE FROISSART 29.1.18 Fine & clear. Gas drill. Bombing L. G. [*Lewis Gun*] Platoon in attack Extended order – training.

**Wed, Jan 30, 1918 AREA SOUTH OF HERSIN, FRANCE**

BOIS DE FROISSART 30.1.18 Fine & clear. Musketry and other training per syllabus. Sports in afternoon.

The Victoria Cross awarded to Sergt. [G. Harry MULLIN](#) [51339]\* for gallant behaviour at PASSCHENDAELE in capturing a commanding pill box single handed. This strong point was causing heavy casualties. He ~~also~~ rushed a sniper's post destroyed the garrison with bombs crawled on the pill box shot the two machine gunners and captured the garrison of ten. His clothes were shot through in this enterprise.

2 O.R. taken on strength.

\*[on hyperlink please scroll down past Lieut H.M. McKenzie to G.H. Mullin entry].

**Thu, Jan 31, 1918 AREA SOUTH OF HERSIN, FRANCE**

BOIS DE FROISSART 31.1.18 BOIS DE FROISSART 31.1.18 Cold. Foggy all day.

Training per syllabus.

4 O.R struck off for-~~p~~ Commissions.

[Note transcriber: during January 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]

**Fri, Feb 1, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 1.2.18 White frost & fog – cold at night. The Battalion is inspected by G.O.C. [Brigadier-General H.M. Dyer] 7th C.I.B. 1 O.R. taken on strength.

**Sat, Feb 2, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 2.2.18 Fair. No.1 & 2 Co. on wiring parties. No. 3 & 4 training & Instruction. The G.O.C. 7th Brigade writes that he was very pleased with his inspection of yesterday and specially struck with the spirit of the men. He found the turn out of the Transport section excellent and the Cook Kitchens in very good condition.

Lieuts A.C. WHITE M.C. [51266] (4 Co'y) & B.K. SNIDER[1624] rejoin from 3<sup>rd</sup> Div. Wing C.C.R.C. 1 O.R. off strength.

**Sun, Feb 3, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 3.2.18 Fair in morning clouding up in afternoon. Church parade. Officers reconnoitre Blue line.

**Mon, Feb 4, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 4.2.18 Bright & fine in morning. No. 4 Co. wiring. The remainder attend a demonstration by special platoon from 3<sup>rd</sup> Can. Div. Wing C.C.R.C. [Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp]

**Tue, Feb 5, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 5.2.18 Mild & fine. Drill & Training. The Belgian CROIX DE GUERRE awarded to 792 C.S.M. SPURGEON C. and Belgian DECORATION MILITAIRE to 23709 Pte(A/Cpl) TURCOTTE J.A.. 3 O.R. taken on strength

**Wed, Feb 6, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 6.2.18 Cloudy & mild. Rain at night. 10 platoons from 1. 2. & 4 Co'y wiring. 4 O.R. taken on strength  
LIEUT E.M. JACQUES invalided to England

**Thu, Feb 7, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 7.2.18 Mild. Rain & wind. Battalion carries on Specialist Training. 1 O.R. taken on strength.

**Fri, Feb 8, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 8.2.18 Dull with some rain in a.m. clearing in afternoon. 8 platoons wiring. Remainder at musketry. 21 O.R. taken on strength. 2 O.R. reported missing after 30.10.17 now reported killed in action.

**Sat, Feb 9, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 9.2.18 Colder - cloudy. fair in p.m. Musketry & route march. 1 O.R. died. [Pte Kirby W. 51291 died of heart failure, age 43]

**Sun, Feb 10, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 10.2.18 Cloudy - clearing to fine in p.m. church parade. 1 O.R. joins from L.O.C. [*Lines of Communication*]

**Mon, Feb 11, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 11.2.18 Cloudy & cool. Platoon tactical training – Battalion Drill. Sergt WHITE E.L. No. 51493 appointed Regimental Quartermaster Sergeant vice R.Q.M.S. DONALD J. [G. 43] to England (30.12.17). CAPT. G.G. REYNOLDS from B.H.Q. to No. 2 Co. LIEUT C.C. ROBINSON to be Signalling Officer.

**Tue, Feb 12, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 12.2.18 Cloudy & overcast. Co'y route marches with Box Respirators. Baths. 1 O.R. taken on strength.

**Wed, Feb 13, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 13.2.18 Rain. No parades. 7 O.R. rejoin.

**Thu, Feb 14, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 14.2.18 Cloudy & mist. Battalion carries out tactical scheme. 2 O.R. taken on strength & 2 struck off. Capt. J.R. MACPHERSON [411064] detained in ENGLAND whilst on leave & detached to E.O.R.D. 28.1.18.

**Fri, Feb 15, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 15.2.18 Damp & cold in a.m. clearing ~~at night~~ in evening with frost.

**Sat, Feb 16, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 16.2.18 Cold & Bright. In the early morning the Battalion carries out a scheme of attack assembling at BOUVIGNY-BOYEFFLES falling in at 2 a.m. 1 O.R. struck off.

**Sun, Feb 17, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 17.2.18 Bright & clear with hard frost in morning. Cold all day. No church parade owing to Enemy shelling in vicinity of Church Hut in COUPIGNY. 1 O.R. taken on and 2 struck off strength. LIEUT. L.E.L. KOELLE [*surname changed to HARVEY in 1918*] invalided to England. (11.8.18)

**Mon, Feb 18, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 18.2.18 Bright clear & frosty. Whole battalion wiring

**Tue, Feb 19, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 19.2.18 Bright clear & cold. ~~Colour parade and~~ [inserted: Colour Parade] Training

**Wed, Feb 20, 1918 HERSIN AREA, FRANCE**

Bois de Froissart 20.2.18 Milder. Heavy rain & windstorm in evening. No. 2 Coy. goes to AUCHEL for Course. ~~Colour Parade~~ Tactical training - gas Drill and Company drill. 15 O.R. granted 3 mn [*months*] leave to Canada.

**Thu, Feb 21, 1918 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

Cellars Camp 21.2.18 Cloudy in early morning clearing to fine bright day. The Battalion moves to CELLARS CAMP at NEUVILLE ST VAAST leaving 8.15 a.m. arriving 12.15 p.m. Transport moves to DALY CAMP on MT. ST. ELOI ROAD. LIEUT. A.R. CHIPMAN rejoins from C.B.D. [*Canadian Base Depot*] 21-2-18.

**Fri, Feb 22, 1918 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

CELLARS CAMP 22.2.18 Cloudy & windy. Working parties & Company training.

**Sat, Feb 23, 1918 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

CELLARS CAMP 23.2.18 Bois de Froissart 23.2.18 Cloudy – no wind. Working parties. No. 1 Co’y is attached to Engineers at PETIT VIMY for work E. of VIMY RIDGE. 1 O.R. taken on and 4 struck off strength.

**Sun, Feb 24, 1918 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

CELLARS CAMP 24.2.18 Cloudy with slight showers. Church parade. 10 O.R. taken on strength. 1 struck off.

**Mon, Feb 25, 1918 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

CELLARS CAMP 25.2.18 Rain in morning clearing to fine in evening. Company training working parties. 6 O.R. taken on & 1 struck off strength

**Tue, Feb 26, 1918 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

CELLARS CAMP 26.2.18 Fine & white frost in morning. Cloudy at night. 1 O.R. taken on strength.

**Wed, Feb 27, 1918 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

CELLARS CAMP 27.2.18 Cloudy. Rain in evening. Working parties.  
The VICTORIA CROSS is awarded to LIEUT. [H. MACKENZIE](#) D.C.M. [1158] late Can. MACHINE GUN Co (formerly P.P.C.L.I.) for gallant behaviour in the PASSCHENDAELE Engagement of 30.10.1917 when he assumed command of No. Co’y after all its officers had become casualties and rallied the Co. taking their objective.

**Thu, Feb 28, 1918 NEUVILLE ST VAAST, FRANCE**

CELLARS CAMP 28.2.18 Fine - with slight sleet showers. Working parties and Company Training. MAJOR M.S. McDOUGALL [*E.S. McDougall*] struck off strength on proceeding to England to report for duty at at Can. Training School BEXHILL.  
3 O.R. taken on strength.

*[Note transcriber: during February 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson.]*

**Fri, Mar 1, 1918 VILLERS AU BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 1.3.18 Snow showers - bright at intervals. The Battalion moves to SUBURBAN Camp at VILLERS AU BOIS in morning.

**Sat, Mar 2, 1918 VILLERS AU BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 2.3.18 Overcast cold. Company training. LIEUT. C.A. GRANT rejoins battalion. (1.3.18). 1 O.R. taken on strength

**Sun, Mar 3, 1918 VILLERS AU BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU BOIS 3.3.18 Cloudy - thawing. Church parades. 7 O.R. taken on strength. PRINCESS PATRICIA of CONNAUGHT is appointed by His MAJESTY Honourary Colonel in Chief of the Battalion. (22.2.18) The following telegram was sent by the Officer Commanding

“Your Regiment having just learned of the great honour His MAJESTY THE KING has conferred upon us, in appointing you our Colonel in Chief, wish to immediately acquaint you with the happiness this has caused amongst all ranks and to express our unceasing loyalty and devotion.”

**Mon, Mar 4, 1918 VILLERS AU BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU bois 4.3.18 Mist & fog all day. The Battalion attends a demonstration of Tanks in the attack at BERTHONVAL Wood.

**Tue, Mar 5, 1918 VILLERS AU BOIS, FRANCE**

VILLERS AU bois 5.3.18 Fair Drill & Training. 45 O.R. join the Battalion. The following telegram was received from The Princess Patricia “Please thank all ranks for kind telegram. I am most proud and pleased at the honour of being appointed your Honourary Colonel-in-Chief and send greeting to you all.”

**Wed, Mar 6, 1918 VILLERS AU BOIS, FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 6.3.18 Fine and bright. Training Companies in Tank formation & drill. Lecture on use of Ammonal tubes. The Battalion moves in the afternoon to ANXIOUS Trench (B.H.Q.) and neighbourhood being in Right Support & relieving the 52nd Battn. in right support of AVION SECTOR. No 1 Coy & B.H.Q. by road and remainder of Battalion from DINKYVILLE Jc. (x.13.b.4.3) to LENS J.c (x.11.d.9.3.) by train and rest of way by road. The move was carried out in afternoon & evening. B.H.Q. (S.6.c.1.8.) No. 3 Coy. S.12.b.75.25. LENS – ARRAS Rd. No. 1 & 4 Co. S.12.b.3.5. Red Trench.- No. 2 S.[T.] 8.a.50.65 in Railway Embankment. 49th Battn. in left Support – 5th Brigade on right.

**Thu, Mar 7, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF LA COULOTTE (AVION), FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 7.3.18 Fine & bright. Working parties. 9 O.R. taken on & 4 struck off strength.

**Fri, Mar 8, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF LA COULOTTE (AVION), FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 8.3.18 Fine & bright. Cool in evening. Working parties

**Sat, Mar 9 to Mon, Mar 11, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF LA COULOTTE (AVION), FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 9.3.18 to 11.1.18 Fine bright weather - visibility poor. Situation quiet Working parties.

**Tue, Mar 12, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF LA COULOTTE (AVION), FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 12.3.18 Fine - bright - clearer. In the night the Battalion relieves the R.C.R. in the Front line, right AVION subsector. B.H.Q. in BEAVER TRENCH. CAPT. ST. C. DUNN [*Capt C. St. Clair DUNN, CAMC*] & 1 O.R. were killed in front line area on 9.3.18. Enemy shelled during relief rather heavily - with some gas shells. 1 O.R. Killed & 1 gassed.

**Wed, Mar 13, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

BEAVER TRENCH 13.3.18 Bright cloudless day. Little Enemy activity. Several patrols were sent out - found our own wire very heavy difficult to get through in places - but in other spots badly cut by shell fire. No Enemy encountered. Some enemy T.M. & artillery work in afternoon & evening. Several enemy planes cross our lines but driven off almost immediately by M.G. fire.

**Thu, Mar 14, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

BEAVER TRENCH 14.3.18 Rain in early morning clearing later in a.m. Increased hostile T.M. and artillery activity - gas shells - An enemy plane tried twice to cross our line but was driven off by our M.G. & rifle fire Enemy have (?) balloon sent over our lines. A patrol was sent out to examine several trenches in front of our position and found them deserted. 6 O.R. join Battalion. Capt. A.G. Thomson (C.A.M.C.) temporarily attached as M.O.

**Fri, Mar 15, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

BEAVER TRENCH 15.3.18 Fine bright & cold. Enemy batteries active throughout the morning - quiet remainder of day. Our batteries very active and very effective barrage laid down on Corps front for 5 C.M.R. ~~bar~~ raid. Our aircraft very active - only one enemy plane observed crossing our line & driven back at once. Numerous patrols were sent out during day and in the early morning Lt [A.C.] White [51266] and a party placed two ammonal tubes in Enemy wire which were exploded to divert attention from a raid which was put on by 5 C.M.R. on our right. We had no casualties. No enemy encountered by our patrols. The enemy put over a number of gas shells (10 C.M. & T.M.) during evening. In the feint attack before spoken of in addition to the ammonal tubes - 50 dummy figures were put out by us. These with the explosion of the ammonal tubes caused the enemy's S.O.S. to be sent up on our front first. A machine gun opened up on the dummies causing 38 'casualties' among them. [inserted: A congratulatory telegram was sent to PRINCESS PATRICIA on her birthday.]

**Sat, Mar 16, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

BEAVER TRENCH 16.3.18 Fine & bright. Enemy artillery active - ours also. Little hostile aerial activity. 2 of our planes - R.E. 8's, were shot down - 1 behind German lines & 1 in our wire. We sent out an officer's party and brought in the pilot & observer - 1 of whom was wounded.

**Sun, Mar 17, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

BEAVER TRENCH 17.3.18 Fine visibility better somewhat cloudy in afternoon. Enemy aeroplanes more active but few cross our lines. 1 Officer & 6 O.R. cut their way through hostile wire & entered enemy's first line trench - two men encountered who ran when fired at. 1 man of raiding party killed.

**Mon, Mar 18, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

BEAVER TRENCH 18.3.18 Fine & bright. Quiet. 31 O.R. taken on strength LIEUT H.M. DOUGLAS [McG 263] struck off strength invalided - & 1 O.R.

**Tue, Mar 19, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

BEAVER TRENCH 19.3.18 Rain in morning - continues all day. The Battalion is relieved in Front line by R.C.R. and moves back to right support in old positions. B.H.Q. at S.6.c.1.8.

**Wed, Mar 20, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

BEAVER TRENCH 20.3.18 Rain in morning clearing in afternoon. Working parties. The following message was sent to H.R.H. Princess Patricia on 15/3/18.

“All ranks join in wishing you many happy returns.”

The following reply has been sent “Grateful thanks to all ranks for good wishes.”

31 OR's taken on strength and 6 O.Rs struck off strength.

**Thu, Mar 21, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF LA COULOTTE (AVION), FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 21.3.18 Weather fine and clear. Battalion on working parties in front line.

**Fri, Mar 22, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF LA COULOTTE (AVION), FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 22.3.18 Weather fine Situation quiet. Working parties in front line and in salvage

**Sat, Mar 23, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF LA COULOTTE (AVION), FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 23.3.18 Fine & clear. Situation quiet. Working parties in front line

**Sun, Mar 24, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF LA COULOTTE (AVION), FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 24.3.18 Fine situation quiet working party

**Mon, Mar 25, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF LA COULOTTE (AVION), FRANCE**

DORIS 25.3.18 Fine & clear. Situation quiet. Battalion relieved R.C.R. in front line Battalion Hdqrs. T.8.D.5.7. Battalion frontage extended to the right.

**Tue, Mar 26, 1918 DORIS TRENCH, FRANCE**

DORIS 26.3.18 Fine & clear. Enemy quiet. Our heavies active throughout the day. Hostile shelling light. Numerous small parties of enemy seen around trenches & dispersed by our fire.

**Wed, Mar 27, 1918 DORIS TRENCH, FRANCE**

DORIS TRENCH 27.3.18 Fine and clear towards evening. Enemy very quiet. Our artillery active during the night. Battle patrol of 1 Officer and 11 O.Rs with Lewis Gun from 1 a.m. to 3 A.M. No signs of enemy. A patrol of 1 Off. and 12 O.Rs patrolled our front in T 4c but had nothing to report.

**Thu, Mar 28, 1918 DORIS TRENCH, FRANCE**

DORIS TRENCH 28.3.18 Very cold and raw. Rain in the evening. Hostile artillery active in evening. A patrol of 1 Officer and 10 O.Rs went out at 1 AM and fired Stokes gun on enemy machine gun positions.

**Fri, Mar 29, 1918 DORIS TRENCH, FRANCE**

DORIS TRENCH 29.3.18 Windy and raw. Situation quiet heavy artillery fire on back areas in the evening. 15 O.Rs taken on strength. LIEUT'S MILNE A.R. [410955] McRORIE C.K. [21867] PULEY P.M. [18233] and 5 O.R's struck off strength.

**Sat, Mar 30, 1918 DORIS TRENCH, FRANCE**

DORIS TRENCH 30.3.18 Raining all day. Situation quiet.

**Sun, Mar 31, 1918 DORIS TRENCH, FRANCE**

DORIS TRENCH 31.3.18 Fine and windy. Battalion relieved by R.C.R. and moved into Brigade Reserve.

*[Note transcriber: until March 22, 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel Agar Adamson. He was struck off strength as medically unfit and he was succeeded by Lieutenant-Colonel C.J.T. Stewart March 30, 1918]*

**Mon, Apr 1 to Sat, Apr 6, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF AVION, FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH April 1 to April 6 The Battalion was relieved in the Front line by the R.C.R. returning to support on the night of March 31 - April 1. No 1 Co. in GERTIE trench 2 Co. in DORIS 3 Co. in RED & 4 Co. at LENS ARRAS Rd & RED TRENCH.

During this tour in supports the situation was quiet except that there was fairly continuous Enemy shelling at junction of LENS ARRAS road & Red trench and BETTY Sap. The weather was for the most part fair and the Battalion furnished working parties daily.

On April 5th LIEUT A.R. CHIPMAN was appointed Adjutant (1-3-18) vice Capt L.V. DRUMMOND-HAY to regimental duty. 19 O.R. taken on strength.

Capt. J. THOMSON and LIEUT. A.E. POTTS [McG 268] struck off strength to 3 Can. Div. Wing (31.3.18)

Capt. G.C. McDONALD M.C. rejoined from C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*] [(4-4-18) assumes duties of 2<sup>nd</sup> i/c of Battalion. 54 O.R taken on strength (5-4-18).

LIEUT. J. T. LOWNSBROUGH [475924] M.C. & M.J. ROBB [261134] struck off strength (31.3.18). & 1 O.R

### **Sun, Apr 7 & Mon, Apr 8, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF AVION, FRANCE**

TRENCHES April 7/8 Battalion relieves R.C.R. in right sub-sector. B.H.Q. at T.8.c.9.5. Companies same disposition as previously.

### **Mon, Apr 8 to Fri, Apr 12, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

TRENCHES April 8-12 The Battalion remained in the front line from April 7/8 until April 12. During this tour there was more shelling than on previous tour particularly at the corner of DORIS & KEANE trenches & the head of Communication trenches. One man was killed. Patrolling was very active on our part working up to German trenches but enemy not encountered except on night 10/11 when one of their working parties was badly shot up close to the enemy wire.

During this tour a Boche aeroplane flying over low our lines was brought down by Lewis gun fire from the Battalion & fell in No 1 Co. area. We captured the occupants – one wounded Officer and one N.C.O. unwounded.

### **Thu, Apr 11 & Fri, Apr 12, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

TRENCHES APRIL 11/12 No 3 Co was relieved by the 49th and went back to RED Trench - less 1 platoon which went to LA COULOTTE. Clear & bright weather  
52 O.R. taken on strength 9.4.18 14 O.R struck off 9-4-18 28-2-18 & 8.4.18

### **Sat, Apr 13, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 13.4.18 Dull & cold strong wind in afternoon. The Battalion sidesteps to the left in early morning being relieved by the 4th Division (54 & 75) and relieving the 42nd & being in support to the 49th Battalion forming with it the right boundary of 3rd Division. The other Battalions [inserted: of the division] being N. of SOUCHEZ River. No. 1 Co. in right Adept Trench No. 2 in Centre Adept No. 4 in left Adept & Brewery at LA COULOTTE - No. 3 Co Red Trench B.H.Q. at Anxious. 9 Russians (O.R) are struck off strength & 1 other (11.4.18)

### **Sun, Apr 14, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF AVION, FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 14.4.18 Cold & cloudy with strong wind - working parties.

### **Mon, Apr 15, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF AVION, FRANCE**

ANXIOUS TRENCH 15.4.18 Cold & cloudy. Situation quiet. In the night 15/16 the Battalion relieves the 49th in the front line taking up a position from the River to ACTRESS

Trench - disposition being as follows: - 1-2-3-4 Coys. B.H.Q. at LA COULOTTE Brewery N.31.c.60.05.

The following message was received from Brig.-Gen HUGH M. DYER G.O.C. 7 C.I.B. dated 12-4-18 "Dear Major Stewart. At this time, when I am asking your Regiment to continue their work in the line after an already long tour, I write to tell you of my perfect confidence that all ranks will continue to show that keenness for fighting, and willing readiness to do good work that has been so marked during the tour. I thank you all from the bottom of my heart for the evidence all ranks have given me of the splendid spirit which permeates your great Unit. More especially for the very fine offensive patrol work which has been done by you throughout. Will you please express my pleasure to all ranks. Wishing you the best of luck - yours very sincerely Hugh M. Dyer" [inserted: D.S.]

LIEUT. K.C. BURNES [McG 144] to be acting Captain vice Temp. Capt. J.R. MACPHERSON M.C. D.S.O. [411064] (to England) 28/2/16

LIEUT. G.W. GUIOU M.C. [475868] to be acting Capt. Vice Temp/Cap J.N. EDGAR [507] (to Hospital) 11/3/18 2 O.R off strength

### **Tue, Apr 16, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

~~ANXIOUS TRENCH~~ LA COULOTTE 16.4.18 Cloudy - some rain. quiet. Officers patrol to AVION Church & surrounding area. Three other patrols were sent out. - no enemy encountered. We projected gas which caused slight retaliatory barrage on our front & rear areas.

### **Wed, Apr 17, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

LA COULOTTE 17.4.18 Cloudy. At 8.45. a.m. 1 off. 11 O.R. & a Lewis gun acted as covering party to a STOKES gun which was set up at N.32 b.70.92. The gun fired 24 rounds on cemetery group & then was withdrawn. Numerous patrols were sent out by us but no enemy encountered. Several enemy planes were driven back from our lines by M.G. & rifle fire.

Considerable artillery fire from our field & heavy guns.

### **Thu, Apr 18, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

LA COULOTTE 18.4.18 Rain & wind. Cold. We sent out a daylight patrol near AVION Church. Numerous patrols were sent out & examined hostile wire - but encountered no enemy

### **Fri, Apr 19, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

LA COULOTTE 19.4.18 Cold with snow & sleet showers in morning clearing towards evening. Our artillery active enemy quiet. Four patrols & two battle patrols were sent out.

### **Sat, Apr 20, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

LA COULOTTE 20.4.18 Fair. Usual patrolling activity. Situation quiet.

### **Sun, Apr 21, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

LA COULOTTE 21.4.18 Fair. In the night the Battalion moves out to support. No. 1 & 4 Coy's in LA COULOTTE & vicinity No. 3 in ADEPT Trench No. 2 in RED TRENCH near

LENS ARRAS Road. B.H.Q. in Red trench in former Brigade H.Q. S.5.d.80.50. LIEUT. F.L. APPLETON appointed Temp. Captain (26.11.17). LIEUT. N.D. DOW [411006] struck off strength on being posted to 3 T.M. Battery 2 O.R. killed & 4 wounded during last tour in line

**Mon, Apr 22, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF AVION, FRANCE**

RED TRENCH 22.4.18 Cold & windy rain at night. Situation quiet.

**Tue, Apr 23, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF AVION, FRANCE**

RED TRENCH 23.4.18 Clearing, fine in evening.

**Wed, Apr 24, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF AVION, FRANCE**

RED TRENCH 24.4.18 Thick fog in morning - mist all day. Thunderstorm in late evening. Situation quiet.

**Thu, Apr 25, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF AVION, FRANCE**

RED TRENCH 25.4.18 Milder – mist. Every Company furnished tumping \* parties to-day as well as every other day while in support.

*\* [Note transcriber: tumping – a method of carrying a heavy load more usually referred to as a tumpline method.]*

**Fri, Apr 26, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF AVION, FRANCE**

RED TRENCH 26.4.18 Fog & mist all day. 2 O.R killed 1 wounded.

**Sat, Apr 27, 1918 SOUTHWEST OF AVION, FRANCE**

RED TRENCH 27.4.18 Fog & mist all day. The Battalion relieves the 49th Battalion in the Front line - same dispositions as on previous tour but B.H.Q. in Piano Dug out. 50 O.R. are sent to C.C.R.C. in exchange for 50 O.R. taken on strength from C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*]

LIEUT. J.H. CARVOSSO M.C. [51116] invalided 14-4-18 (sick)

**Sun, Apr 28, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

PIANO DUGOUT 28.4.18 Fog & mist. No. 4 Co'y take a German prisoner, who gave valuable information as to enemy's dispositions. A number of patrols were sent out

**Mon, Apr 29, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

PIANO DUGOUT 29.4.18 Dull & mist in morning. Rain in afternoon & all night  
Lt. Col. A.A.M. [*Agar*] ADAMSON D.S.O. classified P.B. 27. March 1918 and struck off strength (27.3.18). 1 O.R. wounded 17/4 now died of wounds. 1 O.R. wounded 24/4/18. Many patrols sent out to Enemy's wire and valuable observation made.

**Tue, Apr 30, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

PIANO DUGOUT 30.4.18 Heavy rain all morning - cloudy & overcast in evening. Situation quiet. Usual patrolling a penetrating enemy wire to Enemy posts.

*[Note transcriber: During April, 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel C.J.T. Stewart]*

**Wed, May 1, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

PIANO DUGOUT 1.5.18 Dull & cloudy. No 4 Co attempts a raid but the rain had made No man's land almost impassable and it was found difficult to approach nearer than 50 yards from enemy wire at which point hostile machine guns (3 in number) opened fire - but 2 out of the 3 were silenced with rifle grenades. Situation quiet.

**Thu, May 2, 1918 AVION, FRANCE**

PIANO DUGOUT 2.5.18 Warm & fine. The battalion is relieved by 60th Brigade - 2 Cos. of K.R.R.'s & 2 Co's of R.B. and entrain to LENS Jc. There taking lorries to HERMIN arriving at 5 a.m. on 3<sup>rd</sup>. During the ~~previous~~ tour of trenches just completed - 58 days in all - the Battalion was the only one which did not retire or withdraw from any part of the trench system occupied on going into the line.

**Fri, May 3, 1918 HERMIN, FRANCE**

HERMIN 3.5.18 Warm & fine. Battalion in rest billets - No. 3 Co'y in HERIPRÉ the remainder in HERMIN.

**Sat, May 4, 1918 HERMIN, FRANCE**

HERMIN 4.5.18 Cloudy. Company training. Capt. E. McG. MACBRAYNE [[Eion MacGregor MacBrayne](#)] and LIEUT. G.C. PLANT [[E.C. Plant](#)] & 4 O.R. taken on strength & 14 O.R. struck off.

**Sun, May 5, 1918 HERMIN, FRANCE**

HERMIN 5.5.18 Heavy showers of rain. Church Parade & sports.

**Mon, May 6, 1918 HERMIN, FRANCE**

HERMIN 6.5.18 Clearing - fine in p.m. Route march & Training. C.S.M. Paterson S. 1615 - to be Acting R.S.M.

**Tue, May 7, 1918 HERMIN, FRANCE**

HERMIN 7.5.18 Heavy rain in morning. Battalion marches to ST. HILAIRE at 7 a.m. arriving at 3 p.m. to billets in COTTES previously occupied in Nov. 1917. Capt. G.W. LITTLE struck off strength to England as Instructor.

**Wed, May 8, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

ST. HILAIRE-COTTES 8.5.18 Fine. In billets at COTTES. Training. Warning order received to be ready to move forward at 4 hours notice. Kit inspection.

**Thu, May 9, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

ST. HILAIRE-COTTES 9.5.18 Bright & clear. Training. 2 O.R. taken on strength.

**Fri, May 10, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

ST. HILAIRE-COTTES 10.5.18 Cold & overcast. Musketry & training.

**Sat, May 11, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

ST. HILAIRE-COTTES 11.5.18 Cold & overcast clearing in p.m. Drill & Musketry at AUCHY-AU-BOIS Range 30 O.R. struck off strength.

**Sun, May 12, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

ST. HILAIRE-COTTES 12.5.18 Slight showers in a.m. Clearing in afternoon. Colour parade followed by Church parade.

**Mon, May 13, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 13.5.18 Cloudy with heavy rain in evening. The Battalion carries out attack scheme at LINGHEM area. 2 O.R. taken on strength

**Tue, May 14, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 14.5.18 Fine. Brigade operations in LOZINGHEM area - carrying out an attack

**Wed, May 15, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 15.5.18 Fine & bright. Company training & sports.

**Thu, May 16, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 16.5.18 Fine & warm. Company training

**Fri, May 17, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 17.5.18 Fine & warm. Musketry & training.

**Sat, May 18, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 18.5.18 Fine & warm. Battalion marches to LINGHEM area to ???????? demonstration by 3rd Div. special platoon. Open warfare training.

**Sun, May 19, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 19.5.18 Fine & warm. Church parades & Company training.

**Mon, May 20, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 20.5.18 Fine & warm. Divisional manoeuvres in LOZINGHEM area the brigade being on this occasion in defence. 3 O.R. off strength.

**Tue, May 21, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 21.5.18 Fine. The Battalion training at LINGHEM area. 19 O.R. taken on strength. LIEUT. B. W. FRANKLIN joins from C.C.R.C.

**Wed, May 22, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 22.5.18 Fine & warm. Company parades & gas training. LIEUTS. C.F.H. BIDDULPH [487328] & J.L. McKINNON [*I.L. McKinnon*] taken on & LIEUT. G.C. ALDRIDGE [751] struck off strength

**Thu, May 23, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 23.5.18 Cloudy & windy. Musketry & baths. 5 O.R. struck off strength (to England) & 45 O.R. to Can. M.G. Reinf. Depot. 2 O.R. died of wounds - previously reported wounded.

**Fri, May 24, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 24.5.18 Heavy rain.

**Sat, May 25, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 25.5.18 Fine & warm. Company training & sports.

**Sun, May 26, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 26.5.18 Fine. Church parades & sports. CAPT. L.V. DRUMMOND-HAY appointed T/MAJOR. (22.5.18). 1 O.R. struck off strength

**Mon, May 27, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 27.5.18 Fine. Divisional manoeuvres at BOMY all day.

**Tue, May 28, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 28.5.18 Fine. Battalion sports in LINGHEM area. Capt. J. THOMSON taken on strength (17.5.18). & ??????? on command. LIEUT. R.L. DANIEL & 1 O.R. taken on strength - 2 O.R. struck off

**Wed, May 29, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 29.5.18 Fine. Company training. LIEUTS. H.E. ROWLAND [[H.E. Rowlands 411120](#) or A11120] & J.E. KEELER join from C.C.R.C.

**Thu, May 30, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 30.5.18 Fine. Musketry & training at LINGHEM area.

**Fri, May 31, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 31.5.18 Fine & warm. Training at LINGHEM Area & musketry

*[Note transcriber: During May, 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel C.J.T. Stewart]*

**Sat, Jun 1, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 1.6.18 Fine & warm. Brigade rifle meet. The Battalion wins Team match (O.R.) & officers match and 2nd in Distance Judging competition as well 3 first places 2 second and one 3rd in the other 4 events - carrying off the greater part of the prizes. Sports with 42nd in afternoon. LIEUT J.W. JEAKINS [*McG 230*] appointed Ass. Adj. and LIEUT A.J. KELLY Scout officer

**Sun, Jun 2, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 2.6.18 Fine church parade after which the G.O.C. Division presents the prizes for rifle meet. In the afternoon - sports with R.C.R. 4 O.R. struck off strength

**Mon, Jun 3, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 3.6.18 Fine. Divisional manoeuvres in BOMY area.

**Tue, Jun 4, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 4.6.18 Fine. Battn Company training

**Wed, Jun 5, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 5.6.18 Fine. Musketry LIEUT. G.C. ROBINSON [[C.C. Robinson](#)] appointed Signal Officer.

**Thu, Jun 6, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 6.6.18 Fine. Battalion goes to LINGHEM area for training.

**Fri, Jun 7, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 7.6.18 Fine – clouding up in afternoon. Battalion training at LINGHEM in morning. In the evening the Battalion carries out night operations. MAJOR L. V. DRUMMOND-HAY awarded The MILITARY Cross. CAPT. L.M. JOHNSTONE (C.A.P.C.) transferred to Battalion as Quartermaster. 3 O.R. struck off. LIEUT. J.T. LOWNSBROUGH M.C. [475924] taken on strength. 3 O.R. struck off strength.

**Sat, Jun 8, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 8.6.18 Fine. Company Training. The D.C.M. awarded to A/C.S.M. NOVIS ( C ) [1684].

**Sun, Jun 9, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 9.6.18 Fair with some rain. Sports with 49th. (10/6)

**Mon, Jun 10, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 10.6.18 Heavy rain in morning clearing in afternoon. Divisional manoeuvres.

**Tue, Jun 11, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 11.6.18 Cloudy in morning - clearing in p.m. Musketry at AUCHY-au-bois & Company training. Brigade elimination games in afternoon  
Musketry at AUCHY-AU-BOIS & Company training. Brigade elimination games in afternoon.

**Wed, Jun 12, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 12.6.18 Fine. Company in tactical schemes. Demonstration of German Light Machine gun. 1 O.R. taken on strength

**Thu, Jun 13, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 13.6.18 Fine. Drill & musketry in morning. Attack scheme with tanks in afternoon near ENGUINEGATTE.

**Fri, Jun 14, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 14.6.18 Cloudy with strong winds in p.m. Open warfare platoon training - new formation.

**Sat, Jun 15, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 15.6.18 Fine with some rain in morning. Brigade Sports on 42 Batt. grounds St HILAIRE.

**Sun, Jun 16, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 16.6.18 Some rain in morning turning fine later. Drill & Church parades

**Mon, Jun 17, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 17.6.18 Fine. Divisional operations in BOMY area – 7th Brigade attacking.

**Tue, Jun 18, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 18.6.18 Cloudy. Battalion night operations

**Wed, Jun 19, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 19.6.18 Rain in early morning - fine in afternoon. 9 O.R join. Battalion attends lecture on kite balloons.

**Thu, Jun 20, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 20.6.18 Cloudy in morning & rain in afternoon. Company training.

**Fri, Jun 21, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 21.6.18 Overcast. Musketry at FERFAY.

**Sat, Jun 22, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 22.6.18 Cloudy & windy in morning turning fine in afternoon. The Battalion marches to LINGHEM- practising Company training in attack. A/R.Q.M.S. WHITE E.L. [51493] promoted Warrant Officer (No. 2) and confirmed as R.Q.M.S.

**Sun, Jun 23, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 23.6.18 Cold & cloudy – Turning fine. Battalion marches to LINGHEM for Divisional sports. Meritorious Service Medal awarded Sgt. Brice J.A. [445016] Sgt. Wylie W.T. [159671] Pte. Philpott W. [1033246]

**Mon, Jun 24, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 24.6.18 Rain. 3 O R. struck off strength

**Tue, Jun 25, 1918 COTTES, FRANCE**

COTTES 25.6.18 Fine. The Battalion moves by train from AIRE [inserted: 5 p.m.] to AUBIGNY marching to HAUTEVILLE (5.1.c.) area from AUBIGNY & arriving at destination after midnight.

Owing to the number of men suffering from the epidemic of influenza and other conditions this & subsequent move was not very satisfactory.

**Wed, Jun 26, 1918 HAUTEVILLE, FRANCE**

HAUTEVILLE 26.6.18 Cold & overcast in morning - fine in afternoon. A number of fresh cases of influenza developed - about 100 men being affected. The Transport which proceeded by road via St POL join battalion here at midday.

**Thu, Jun 27, 1918 HAUTEVILLE, FRANCE**

WAILLY HUTS 27.6.18 Fine – warmer. The Battalion leaves billets 7 a.m. marching to WAILLY WOOD. - Transport to MONCHIET.

**Fri, Jun 28, 1918 TRENCHES EAST OF BEAURAINS, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 28.6.18 Fine. The Battalion takes over from 28th Battalion in front line - in the night - with R.C.R. on the right - 49th supporting P.P.C.L.I. and 42nd the R.C.R. The Battalion is now attached to 6th Corps - 3rd Army - and is holding the left of the Corps front - 56th Division on left of battalion - which is holding the left subsector in the NEUVILLE VITASSE Section. B.H.Q. near BEAURAINS SWITCH M.16.d.95.58.

Trench strength 659 O.R. & 27 officers 99 sick officers & men having to be left out of the line - and proceeding to BEAUMETZ billets. Two men of No 1 Co'y were killed by Trench mortar during the night of 28th

**Sat, Jun 29, 1918 TRENCHES EAST OF BEAURAINS, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 29.6.18 Fine. 25 O.R. evacuated to hospital from BEAUMETZ.

**Sun, Jun 30, 1918 TRENCHES EAST OF BEAURAINS, FRANCE**

TRENCHES 30.6.18 Fine & hot. Situation quiet.

*[Note transcriber: During June, 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel C.J.T. Stewart]*

**Mon, Jul 1, 1918 TRENCHES EAST OF BEAURAINS, FRANCE**

Trenches 1.7.18 Fine - hot. LT. E.W. DUVAL killed in night while on patrol

**Tue, Jul 2, 1918 TRENCHES EAST OF BEAURAINS, FRANCE**

Trenches 2.7.18 Fine & hot with strong wind in afternoon. In the night 2/3 No.1 & 3 Co'ys go back to support - being relieved in the line by 2 & 4 Coys.

**Wed, Jul 3, 1918 TRENCHES EAST OF BEAURAINS, FRANCE**

Trenches 3.7.18 Cool & cloudy in morning clearing in afternoon. Lt. P 1 O.R. struck off (29.6) Killed in action & 2 O.R. wounded & struck off (29/6) 2 O.R. wounded at duty 29/6 & 1/7 5 O.R. struck off unfit & 1 died

**Thu, Jul 4, 1918 TRENCHES EAST OF BEAURAINS, FRANCE**

Trenches 4.7.18 Cloudy in a.m. clearing to fine in afternoon

**Fri, Jul 5, 1918 TRENCHES EAST OF BEAURAINS, FRANCE**

Trenches 5.7.18 fine & warm

**Sat, Jul 6, 1918 TRENCHES EAST OF BEAURAINS, FRANCE**

Trenches 6.7.18 Fair & windy -f warm

### **Sun, Jul 7, 1918 TRENCHES EAST OF BEURAINS, FRANCE**

Trenches 7.7.18 fine. The Battalion is relieved on night (7/8) by 116th Battalion moving to WAILLY Wood Camp at 3.30 a.m. 8th (a long relief) going into Divisional reserve

In the tour just ended the Battalion held 1600 yards from TELEGRAPH HILL to the BEURAINS-NEUVILLE VITASSE road inclusive. The LONDON SCOTTISH were holding on left & were relieved by KENSINGTON Regiment. The Companies were disposed in depth – 2 platoons of each front line Company being in line of observation - the other two platoons being in line of resistance along TELEGRAPH HILL SWITCH. 2 Companies were in line of observation and 2 in line of resistance 2 platoons of support Companies being in the intermediate line about 800 yards in front of TELEGRAPH HILL Switch 9 machine guns in observation & 8 in resistance line. Each Co. supplied defensive patrols 1 Off 12 O.R with Lewis Gun every night which patrolled in front of the observation line during the hours of darkness.

On 29/6 a daylight patrol of 2 scouts reconnoitred hostile saps & wire meeting no enemy. On 3/7 4 O.R. in early morning reconnoitred Enemy trench and made a thorough examination of an enemy pill box at TAGESFONTEIN and discovered further on an enemy post at N19a.78.58 occupied by 4 men. Shots were exchanged with no known casualties. On 5th July LT [S] LOPTSON [McG 227] and 3 scouts left our line at 5 p.m. entered Enemy trenches N.19 b 19.71 and proceeded for some distance in 2 directions discovered a bombing post and afterwards a light Machine gun post occupied by 2 men. Both men were jumped by 3 of the party and immediately put up their hands but refused to remain quiet and made so much noise that it was found necessary to shoot them. The noise attracted attention of Enemy in other parts of the trench and rifle fire was opened up. Our party then made their way back ~~ret~~ under fire returning to our line at 7 p.m. without suffering any casualties. Other daylight patrols were sent out during this tour but no incident occurred. The situation during the whole of the time was quiet with the hostile artillery not very active - ours more so. Our F.A. [*Field Artillery*] shrapnelled hedges day & night but the liaison with them was bad - retaliation when asked for being frequently delayed.

No enemy patrols were encountered - but once 2 Bosches came within 200 yards of our line 9 a.m. but left at once. The enemy positions very ill defined and their posts constantly changed their location. At times the enemy trench mortars were active but not much damage done. Our total casualties were 1 Off 2 O.R. killed 6 O.R. wounded (3 at duty)

CAPT. J.R. MACPHERSON D.S.O. [411064] rejoined 2.7.18 Capt. G. [G.] REYNOLDS struck off effective strength to 3 Div Wing CCRC. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*] 3 O.R. taken on 3 struck off strength

### **Mon, Jul 8, 1918 WAILLY, FRANCE**

WAILLY WOOD 8.7.16 Cloudy with a little thunder & rain in evening.

13 O.R. taken on strength. LIEUT. J.M. CHRISTIE M.C. [1576] struck off unfit for service in France.

### **Tue, Jul 9, 1918 WAILLY, FRANCE**

WAILLY WOOD 9.7.16 Wind & some showers. Specialist training carried out 2 O.R. struck off 1 died in hospital pneumonia & t

**Wed, Jul 10, 1918 WAILLY, FRANCE**

WAILLY WOOD 10.7.16 Heavy showers. Specialist training. 10 O.R. struck off & 1 died of wounds.

**Thu, Jul 11, 1918 WAILLY, FRANCE**

WAILLY WOOD 11.7.16 Heavy showers. Company training - Officers & N.C.O.'s practice skeleton Assembly [inserted: in battle positions] in case of hostile attack ~~in batt~~ 1 O.R. taken on strength.

**Fri, Jul 12, 1918 WAILLY, FRANCE**

WAILLY WOOD 12.7.16 Rain. Company training. MAJOR C.J.T. STEWART D.S.O. rejoins [inserted: from leave] & assumes command.

**Sat, Jul 13, 1918 WAILLY, FRANCE**

WAILLY WOOD 13.7.16 Cloudy with slight showers. Company training & route march

**Sun, Jul 14, 1918 WAILLY, FRANCE**

Wailly Wood 14.7.18 Cloudy & windy in a.m. rain in p.m. In the night the Battalion relieves the 2<sup>nd</sup> C.M.R. in MERCATEL Sector left ~~support~~ subsector right section - in support

**Mon, Jul 15 to Thu, Jul 25, 1918 MERCATEL, FRANCE**

Support Trench 15/7/18 to 25/7/18 During this period there was no incident of any importance. The weather nearly every day was cloudy with frequent thunder storms & rain showers. There was little activity on either side although our artillery was much more in evidence than that of the enemy. The Battalion was engaged in working parties constantly. On 20/7 LIEUT PLANT & 1 O.R. were wounded. & on 19/7 2 O.R. were wounded (at duty)

The Battalion was relieved in the night of 25/26 by 2/6 Durham Light Infantry - a bad relief - and inexperienced troops. The Battalion entrained at BLAIREVILLE Siding R.34.d.05.20 for DAINVILLE billets arriving there at 4.30 a.m.

**Fri, Jul 26, 1918 DAINVILLE, FRANCE**

DAILVILLE [*DAINVILLE*] 26.7.18 Cold & overcast - ~~fine in p.m.~~ Heavy showers. The following Officers mentioned in C. in C. despatches LIEUT-Col. A.H. GAULT D.S.O.

(.Seconded) Capt. G.G. REYNOLDS (7-4-18)

CAPT. W.D. CRUIKSHANK attached as Medical Officer 18-7-18 CAPT. J. THOMPSON [*Thomson*] struck off strength on reporting to Adj. GEN. D.M.F.C. LIEUT. W.G.

JOHNSTON [552] struck off strength to E.O.R.D. [*Eastern Ontario Regiment Depot*] Seaford as B 2 . CAPT. A.G. THOMPSON (C.A.M.C. [*Canadian Army Medical Corps*] ) ~~str~~

ceases to be attached. 3 O.R. rejoin.

**Sat, Jul 27, 1918 DAINVILLE, FRANCE**

DAILVILLE [*DAINVILLE*] 27.7.18 Heavy showers. Clothing & pay parades. LIEUT. H.B.J. OGILVIE [475977] reported for duty from 24 Batt. Royal Fusiliers. 21 O.R. join from C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*]

**Sun, Jul 28, 1918 DAINVILLE, FRANCE**

DAILVILLE [*DAINVILLE*] 28.7.18 Cloudy. Battalion furnishes a working party of 550 O.R. Warning order received to move on 29.7.18 or 30.7.18. LIEUT T.S. HEASLIP joins from C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*] & 2 O.R.

**Mon, Jul 29, 1918 DAINVILLE, FRANCE**

DAINVILLE 29.7.18 Fine. Company training

**Tue, Jul 30, 1918 DAINVILLE, FRANCE**

DAINVILLE 30.7.18 Warm & Fine. The battalion moves by road from DAINVILLE to IVERGNY about 30 kilometres via WARLUS GOUY En ARTOIS & SAULTY arriving in evening. Billets.

**Wed, Jul 31, 1918 IVERGNY, FRANCE**

IVERGNY 31.7.18 Fine & warm. Orders received at 1 a.m. for move. Battalion marches to BOQUEMAISON entraining there to SALEUX (9.30 a.m. to 1.15 p.m. thence to DOURY [*DURY*] by road arriving at latter place in late afternoon. Most of the Battalion were forced to camp in open field ????? owing to the scarcity of billets. The transport remained in IVERGNY (except cooks & L.G. limbers) to proceed by road under Brigade T.O. The cooks & L.G. limbers entrained at DOULLENS in early morning meeting the Battalion in SALEUX

*[Note transcriber: During July, 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel C.J.T. Stewart]*

**Thu, Aug 1, 1918 DURY [SOUTH OF AMIENS], FRANCE**

DURY 1.8.18 Fine. Battalion billeted in DURY for the most part in open fields after entraining at BOQUE MAISON at 9.30 a.m. arriving at SALEUX at 1.15 & marching to DURY

**Fri, Aug 2, 1918 DURY [SOUTH OF AMIENS], FRANCE**

DURY 2.8.18 Heavy rain starting 6 a.m. continuing most of day. Bn. moves at 6 p.m. to very dirty billets at ST FUSCIEN ~~Bn Transport and ?? having marched by road~~

**Sat, Aug 3, 1918 ST FUSCIEN, FRANCE**

ST FUSCIEN 3.8.18 Fine. Bn. moves at 9 p.m. back to HÉBECOURT billets being relieved by 52nd Battn. C.O. goes up to reconnoître line preparatory to attack.

**Sun, Aug 4, 1918 HÉBECOURT, FRANCE**

HÉBECOURT 4.8.18 Fair.

**Mon, Aug 5, 1918 HÉBECOURT, FRANCE**

HÉBECOURT 5.8.18 Rain in Morning - heavy in Evening. Battn. moves at 9 p.m. back to billets in ST FUSCIEN

**Tue, Aug 6, 1918 ST FUSCIEN, FRANCE**

ST FUSCIEN 6.8.18 Rain throughout the day. Instructions for the attack received. The Battn. moves 9 p.m. to GENTELLES Wood bivouacking in open. Transport moves to BOIS de BOVES

Roads blocked with Tanks - infantry - artillery & transport &c - moving up

**Wed, Aug 7, 1918 WEST OF GENTELLES, FRANCE**

GENTELLES Wood 7.8.18 Fine. Bn. moves at 10 p.m. to MEKNES ALLEY in readiness to jump off on 8th the day fixed for surprise attack by Canadians - in conjunction with Australians on left & French on right to clear AMIENS PARIS railway

**Thu, Aug 8, 1918 NORTHWEST OF DOMART, FRANCE**

VALLEY Wood 8.8.18 The morning of the attack opened with a dense mist making it impossible to see more than a few yards – clearing later but remaining over cast all day. The offensive opened at 4.20. The 9th Brigade with 2 battalions of the 8th were to jump off and capture the enemy's positions up to the Green line (approx DEMUIN to road near Valley Wood) and the 7th C.I.B. were to pass through the 9th at Zero + 260 min (The operation orders having been changed) and capture the Red line (approximately the line of railway running from CAYEUX EN SANTERRE to AMIENS – ROYE Rd. (DEMUIN MAP - 1/20000 - Ed. 1). 1 ½ Co'ys of Tanks were assigned to operate with the 9th - ½ Coy. with the 8th and 1 Coy. with the 7th Brigades - all available tanks to advance with the latter from the Green line. Supply tanks were also allotted to carry S.A.A., bombs, water, tools, sandbags &c. The disposition of 7th Brigade was - R.C.R. on right - 42nd in centre - 49th on left with P.P.C.L.I. in Support following 800 yards behind the 42nd Battn.

There was no preliminary bombardment, but the action commenced with a short but very heavy barrage and the attacking battalions going over at Zero hour advanced to their objective, apparently taking the enemy completely by surprise. At 4.40 a.m. the Battalion left MEKNES Trench by Companies and ~~and~~ advanced to the Bridge crossing the river LUCE at DOMART at 6.15. Some shelling was experienced at this point. At 6.45 the Battalion assembled in the trench on the river East of road, behind the 42nd (500 yards) and continued to advance without any check - passing along 85 contour and [inserted: 1 & 2 Coys were] over hill 102 by 8.00 a.m. Bad shelling was experienced after passing HOURGES but not many casualties. At 7.45 we passed the B.H.Q. of the 52 Battn at C 5 c 6 8 and by 8.15 a.m. had reached & taken up the required position in the valley behind Hill 102 and established B.H.Q. at D.7.b.3.1.

1 German Machine gun and 2 Lewis guns - which were being used by the enemy were captured on the way up - together with a considerable quantity of material & documents. No.

3 Coy captured a German Battalion Commander and his staff & their documents - [inserted: who] together with 120 other prisoners taken by the battalion were passed to report centre. Everything appeared to be going well but the French were temporarily held up at VILLERS AUX ERABLES at 10 a.m. The Battalion bivouacked at Valley Wood for the night. Total casualties for the day being 1 O.R. killed , 4 wounded. Lt. JEAKINS was wounded, these casualties occurring while passing through the swamp.

### **Fri, Aug 9, 1918 VALLEY WOOD [WEST OF BEAUCOURT], FRANCE**

9.8.18 This and all the following days of the AMIENS battle were fine & hot, with moonlit nights. The Battalion moved from Valley Wood at 11 a.m. to starting point at B.[inserted: or D?]14 d 6 1 and rendezvoused at just outside BEAUCOURT waiting there until the evening at 9 p.m. when they moved E. along the ROYE ROAD to a field at K 16 d near FOLIES the P.P.C.L.I. leading the main body followed by R.C.R. 42nd and 49th in the order named - 4 Coy forming the flank guard.

The 8th Brigade passed thro' the 4th Division to FOLIES while 1st Division were on the left.

### **Sat, Aug 10, 1918 WEST OF FOLIES, FRANCE**

10.8.18 A very hot day. The Battalion remained in bivouac all day & night. The 8th Brigade reported to have taken QUESNOY after hard fighting. The 32<sup>nd</sup> Imperial Division went through the 8th Brigade to attack PARVILLERR and suffered severe casualties. They were reported not to have advanced. The enemy shelling around FOLIES not very great, but from now on night bombing was abundant around FOLIES and further back owing to the great concentration of troops and bright moonlight.

### **Sun, Aug 11, 1918 WEST OF FOLIES, FRANCE**

FOLIES 11.8.18 The 32nd [inserted: Div.] being still unable to advance the 7th Brigade were ordered up to relieve them, and take over from Royal Scots, Argyll & Sutherland & Lancashire Fusiliers and moved out after dark leaving behind at FOLIE the Transport & rear details.

### **Mon, Aug 12 to Thu, Aug 15, 1918 PARVILLERS, FRANCE**

12/15 Aug The operations 12 – 15<sup>th</sup> are detailed in the narrative in Appendix 1 & the Battalion moved back to FOLIES on the night of the 15th. The casualties incurred 8 - 15 were

Officers: Major L.V. DRUMMOND-HAY M.C. and LIEUT D.A. WRIGHT - killed & died of wounds respectively.; LIEUTS G. GRANT - C.B. REXFORD [[O.B. Rexford](#)] – J.

CHRISTIE and M.L. HANCOCK wounded. LIEUT J.W. JEAKINS wounded at duty

Other Ranks: 23 killed & died of wounds. 113 wounded & 9 missing.

LIEUT D.H. MacCartney joined from C.C.R.C. 29-7-18 acted as Liaison officer with 116th.

2 O.R. struck off 29/7 [18] & 11/7 [18] 4 O.R. struck off 6/7/18

LIEUT C.B. Hick struck off to Can. Mach. Gun Corps 17/7/18

58 O.R. joined 11/8/18

### **Fri, Aug 16, 1918 FOLIES, FRANCE**

VALLEY Wood 16.8.18 Fine & very hot. Battalion marches to Valley Wood - bivouac

**Sat, Aug 17, 1918 VALLEY WOOD [WEST OF BEAUCOURT], FRANCE**

VALLEY Wood 17.8.18 Cloudy & threatening. Battalion resting

**Sun, Aug 18, 1918 VALLEY WOOD [WEST OF BEAUCOURT], FRANCE**

VALLEY Wood 18.8.18 Cloudy. The 7th Brigade is inspected at Valley Wood by Premier CLEMENCEAU Field Marshall Sir Douglas HAIG and Sir HENRY RAWLINSON commanding 4th Army.

A message is received from Brig. Gen. DYER Commanding 7th Brigade in appreciation of the "very gallant work" performed in the PARVILLERS battle and from the Commanding Officer of the 42nd Battalion to same effect.

51 O.R. join on 13th & 46 on 17th & 18th.

LIEUTS R. CUMMING & H.G. ROBB [[M.J. Robb](#)] join the 19<sup>th</sup> & LIEUT H.S.

PARTRIDGE on 11.8.18.

**Mon, Aug 19 & Tue, Aug 20, 1918 VALLEY WOOD [WEST OF BEAUCOURT], FRANCE**

On the 19th at 8 p.m. the Battalion left Valley Wood & marched via THENNES to BOVES entraining there about 2 a.m. on 20th for BOQUEMAISON arriving there in morning of 20th - Transport proceeding by road via AMIENS. The battalion marched from to IVERGNY billets.

**Wed, Aug 21, 1918 IVERGNY, FRANCE**

IVERGNY 21.8.18 Fine & hot. Battalion resting

**Thu, Aug 22, 1918 IVERGNY, FRANCE**

IVERGNY 22.8.18 Clear & hot. Transport rejoins at 2 a.m. At 10 p.m. the Battalion marches to billets in GIVENCHY LE NOBLE. The men very tired.

**Fri, Aug 23, 1918 GIVENCHY LE NOBLE, FRANCE**

Y CAMP 23.8.18 Cooler. The Battalion marches off at 6.30 p.m. to Y huts on AUBIGNY ARRAS road junction with road from AGNEZ – LE – DUISANS. Some rain

**Sat, Aug 24, 1918 WEST OF ETRUN, FRANCE**

Y CAMP 25.8.18 Rain in early morning. LIEUT C.F. LALOR taken on strength.

**Sun, Aug 25, 1918 WEST OF ETRUN, FRANCE**

TRENCHES G 25 25/8/18 Fine morning. Heavy thunderstorms in evening. The Battalion moves in morning through ARRAS to positions on CAMBRAI Road preparatory to attack to be made next morning & occupying old British Front line in G35 (Ref. Maps. 51B 1/40000 & 51C 1/40.000

On the morning of the 26th the Battalion went over. A detailed narrative of the following 4 days operations Aug. 26 to 29 will be found in the attached Appendix numbered 2

**Fri, Aug 26 to Wed, Aug 28, 1918 EAST OF MONCHY-LE-PREUX, FRANCE**

[*Note transcriber: there are no entries for these dates*]

**Thu, Aug 29, 1918 JIGSAW WOOD, EAST OF PELVES, FRANCE**

ARRAS 29/8/18 The relief was a very difficult one not being completed till 9 a.m. on the 29th the last Company not reaching ARRAS before till 11 or 12 a.m. Everyone very exhausted.

LIEUTS A.L. DOVE [[A. Le N. Dove](#)] & B.K. SNIDER rejoin Battalion

**Fri, Aug 30, 1918 ARRAS, FRANCE**

ARRAS 30/8/18 Some rain. Men in cellars, officers billeted in cellars of ruined HOTEL DE VILLE.

ARRAS shelled

**Sat, Aug 31, 1918 ARRAS, FRANCE**

ARRAS 31/8/18 Rain in early morning - cloudy all day. Men not getting much benefit from the rest owing to the unsanitary billets

[*Note transcriber: During August, 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel C.J.T. Stewart*]

App. 1 [*Operations near Amiens 11-15 August 1918*]

PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY.  
-----

NARRATIVE OF OPERATIONS – AUGUST 11th/15th 1918.

(Reference Map – France Sheet 66 E.N.E.)

On the evening of August 11th 1918 the Battalion was ordered to move forward to take over front line Trenches occupied by Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders and the Royal Scots of the 32nd Division. The area being the old British Front Line system from approximately L.27.a.70.00 to ROUVROY-PARVILLERS ROAD at L.16.c.95.9 5.

The Relief was extremely difficult on account of the Guides not being familiar with the locality, and it was 6.00 a.m. before all four Companies were in position; with Battalion Headquarters at L.20.d.95.90.

Disposition of the Battalion:- 3 Companies in the front line (No. 2 Coy on the Right, 1 Coy in the Centre and No. 4 Coy on the left) with No. 3 Company in Support in the neighbourhood of Battalion Headquarters.

The 116th Cdn. Battalion on the Right and 42nd Cdn. Battalion on the Left. R.C.R. in Right Brigade Support.

During the night of the 11th/12th and throughout the following day there was a certain amount of German shelling of our trenches. Casualties light.

At Noon on August 12th., an Operation Order was received from the 42nd Battalion concerning an attack which they were going to carry out from FOUQESCOURT [*FOUQUESCOURT*] with the object of driving the Germans out of PARVILLERS. It was decided to attempt an operation from the South, in conjunction with the attack of the 42nd Battalion. Information was received from the Brigade Major that the 9th Cdn. Inf. Bde. held certain Posts South of PARVILLERS (L.28.a.20.55 – L.28.c.80.20 – L.35.a.15.70 – L.34.d.80.85)) which could be used for Jumping Off purposes. In consultation with the Brigade Major, it was decided to send a Company to make an attack from the first three of these positions and the old German Front Line at L.27.d.50.90.; at the same time asking the 116th Cdn. Battalion to co-operate in protecting our Right Flank. The plan of the Company was, to bomb down trenches of the Old German Front Line system and the trenches leading into PARVILLERS, from L.28.c.80.20. to L.35.a.15.70.

When the Company arrived in their Assembly position in the old German Front Line in the neighbourhood of L.27.d.50.50., it was discovered that the four Posts referred to above, had not been occupied by the 9th Brigade and were still in the hands of the Germans. It was decided however, to proceed with operations, capture these jumping off positions and carry on the attack. The Commanding Officer of the 116th Cdn. Battalion co-operated in every possible way and ordered a Company of his Battalion to move forward and protect the right flank of the attack.

The attack was commenced at 8.00 p.m. and met with heavy resistance from the start, particularly on the left flank, where only small progress was made. On the right flank Captain MacBrayne personally led a Bombing Section down the Trench south and east of MIDDLE WOOD and into position L.35.a.15.70. and from there made good the trench westwards towards L.28.c.80.20. During these operations the Company inflicted very heavy casualties on the Germans; at

least thirty dead were counted in the trenches as a result of the bombing attacks. Twenty six German machine Guns were captured and dismantled. Had it not been for a shortage in the supply of bombs, Captain MacBrayne's party would undoubtedly have made a further advance, but they had exhausted all their supply of bombs, including a number that they had borrowed from other Companies before the attack. They used in addition a considerable number of enemy Stick Bombs, which they gathered from his trenches, until these also were exhausted.

At 6.00 a.m. on the following morning, before the Company from the 116th Battalion had come into position on our right flank, the Germans counter-attacked heavily from PARVILLERS and DAMEROY [*DAMERY*] coming out of the Woods in close formation (having been observed marching towards PARVILLERS on the Road through ~~L.a and e.~~, [inserted:L.35.b & d] in column of route with a strength of approximately a Battalion) and attacked across the open. This attack forced the Company to retire to the trenches in the old German Front Line system, which they continued to hold in L.27.d. and L.28.c. Two platoons were cut off in the trench east and North of MIDDLE WOOD, but succeeded, after very heavy fighting, in getting back. During this counter-attack, the Company inflicted extremely heavy casualties on the Germans, as they advanced across the open. All the Company's Lewis Guns were firing point blank at the Germans in column of route, and their casualties could not have been less than 100. One German Officer and 14 other ranks were taken prisoner in the Bombing attack, and turned over to the 116th Cdn. Battalion.

Our casualties during the whole operation; one Officer (Lieut. D.A. Wright) killed, three other ranks killed and twenty one other ranks wounded.

During the 13th instant, it was decided to send No. 1 Company over to reinforce No. 3 Company, for the purpose of continuing the operation. In the evening the Battalion received orders from Brigade to make a joint attack with the 49th Cdn. Battalion, with the purpose of capturing PARVILLERS. The necessary arrangements were made and the Battalion, standing to, awaited instructions from Brigade, which arrived at 12.35 a.m. 14th A limited objective of the old German Front Line system west west of PARVILLERS was given to Battalions.

The Battalion moved across into Assembly Position in trenches in L.27.d. – establishing Battalion Headquarters at L.27.d.40.70. – All in position by 3.00 a.m. - Artillery barrage on objective from 6.15 to 6.30 a.m. – The Battalion jumped off at 6.30 and had gained all objectives by 6.50, joining up with the 49th Battalion.

Company Commanders immediately sent out Patrols into PARVILLERS and proceeded to follow up the success, and received orders from the C.O. to push forward. They succeeded in getting

right through the Village of PARVILLERS, to the orchard in L.29.a. with very few casualties. It was then reported that the Battalion co-operating on the left, which had advanced with us had received orders to retire to their first objective. The Germans, seeing this retirement, immediately took advantage of it and came into PARVILLERS in considerable force on the left, behind our left advanced Company. As this left both flanks in the air, it compelled a retirement which was carried out successfully, but regret to say with considerable casualties, including Major Drummond-Hay, killed, and three Officers wounded. [inserted: and 35 O.R. casualties.] The Battalion then took up position in its first objective. During this operation we took eight unwounded and one wounded prisoner.

During the afternoon the Germans showed considerable force in the Village of PARVILLERS and at one time it looked as if they were preparing to counter-attack; but a very well directed Artillery shoot was placed on PARVILLERS and in front of trenches on the left, which must have inflicted very heavy casualties. On account of the extreme heat of the day and the length of the engagement, we were extremely fatigued and although quite capable of a defensive action, an offensive action was out of the question, for the time being.

at 11.00 p.m. the Royal Canadian Regiment on their most successful operation, passed through the Battalion, which stood to in support during the night, until report was received that the operation had been successful and the line in front of PARVILLERS consolidated.

On the next day, the 15th., enemy shelling became rather heavy in the afternoon and some few casualties were caused. The Battalion had a most successful relief by the 15th Canadian Battalion and moved to the neighbourhood of FOLIES WOOD.

-----  
(Signed) G. C. McDonald  
Major  
for  
Lieut-Colonel,  
Commanding, P.P.C.L.I.  
-----

XX

Copy No...10....PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY SECRET  
Ref. Map:-  
DEMUIN TRENCH MAP

-----

1. (a) The Canadian Corps is taking part in an Operation with the object of driving back and defeating the enemy, and so freeing the Main Line of Railway between AMIENS and PARIS.
- (b) The 3rd Canadian Division is taking part in this Operation, with the French on the right and the 1st Canadian Division on the left.
- (c) The objective of the 7th C.I.B. is as shown on the attached Map.
- (d) The 9th Canadian Infantry Brigade, with two Battalions of the 8th Canadian Infantry Brigade, will capture the enemy's positions up to, and including, the GREEN LINE.  
The 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade will pass through the GREEN LINE at Zero plus 4 hours, and capture the enemy's position up to, and including, the RED LINE. (Approximately the line of the Tramway).
- (e) Disposition of the 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade:-  

R.C.R. - RIGHT  
42nd Bn - CENTRE  
49th Bn - LEFT  
P.P.C.L.I. RESERVE.  
P.P.C.L.I. follow 800 yards behind 42nd Battalion.
- (f) Artillery, Tanks, Machine Guns and Cavalry are co-operating, together with the other branches of the Service.
2. On the night of the 6th/7th August 1918 the Battalion will move from ST.FUSCIEN to GENTILLES [*GENTELLES*] WOOD.
3. On Y/Z night the Battalion will move from GENTILLES [*GENTELLES*] WOOD to MINERS ALLEY. (U.19 a & b.)
4. At Zero plus 150 minutes the Battalion will commence to cross the LUCE RIVER by the Bridges, south of the ROYE-AMIENS ROAD, No. 49, 50, 52, 53 and 54 respectively; and will move into position in Trenches astride the ROYE-AMIENS ROAD in front of KOURGAS.
5. The Battalion will follow 800 yards in rear of the 42nd Battalion, which crosses the GREEN LINE at Zero plus 4 hours

6. The Battalion will take up position in D.7.b.?d.
7. When the RED LINE has been captured, Battalions will consolidate their positions, and organize their defences in depth.  
Defences are to be sited so as to ensure the holding of HILL 102, which is the main tactical feature on the Brigade front. Detailed instructions re consolidation will be issued later.
8. ARTILLERY-  
There will be no preliminary bombardment.  
The advance of the GREEN LINE will have been covered by a shrapnel barrage, and this barrage will lift from in front of the GREEN LINE, at Zero plus 4 hours.  
There will be no barrage forward of the GREEN LINE  
The advance of the Brigade will be covered by Heavy Artillery firing on selected points, and by long range field guns firing H.E.  
Forward Sections of Field Artillery are being detailed to co-operate with the Infantry.  
Further instructions re Artillery will be issued later.
9. TANKS & MACHINE GUNS – Instructions will be issued later.
10. TRENCH MORTARS – Two Stokes Guns from the 7th T.M. Battery will be attached to B.H.Q.
11. COMMUNICATION – Instructions to be issued later.
12. Officers and Other Ranks left out of the Line will remain at SAINS –EN-AMIENOIS.
13. ANTI-AIRCRAFT PROTECTION –  
Every effort must be made to deal with low flying D.A.  
A.A. Lewis Guns must be mounted at every stage of the Advance.  
Special attention should be paid to A-A protection of Transport, both halted and on the move.
14. LIGHT SIGNALS  
The following Light Signals will be employed by:-
- |             | <u>SIGNAL</u>   | <u>MEANING</u>                       |
|-------------|---|--------------------------------------|
| (1) Cavalry | White Star turning to red on a parachute fired from 1 and a half inch Very Pistol | Advanced Troops of Cavalry are here. |

- |                        |   |   |
|------------------------|---|---|
| (ii) Australian Corps  | (1) No. 32 Grenade<br>GREEN over GREEN<br>over GREEN  | S.O.S.  |
|                        | (2) No. 32 Grenade<br>WHITE over WHITE<br>over WHITE  | Success Signal; i.e.,<br>We have reached<br>objective   |
| (iii) Canadian Corps   | (1) No. 32 Grenade<br>RED over RED over<br>RED        | (a) S.O.S.<br>(b) We are held up and<br>cannot advance without<br>help.<br>(c) Enemy is counter-<br>attacking |
|                        | (2) No. 32 Grenade<br>GREEN over GREEN over<br>GREEN  | (a) Lift your fire, we<br>are going to advance.<br>(b) Stop firing  |
|                        | (3) Three WHITE<br>Very lights in<br>quick succession | We are here   |
| (iv) XXXL French Corps |   | To be notified later.   |

15. R. A. F.

(c) Contact Patrols

- (i) No. 5 Squadron will work with the Canadian Corps
- (ii) No. 8 Squadron will work with Tanks
- (iii) No. 6 Squadron will work with Cavalry
- (iv) Those Machines will carry special markings as follows:-
  - (1) Machine working with Tanks – Black Band on middle of right side of tail.
  - (2) Machine working with Cavalry – Two streamers on both inside struts.
  - (3) All contact patrol machines – Rectangular panels 2' x 1' on both lower planes about 3 feet from the fuselage.

(b) Red ground flares will be used.

(c) Bombing and Machine Gun work

- (i) Approximately 5 day bombing Squadrons and 4 night bombing squadrons will be working on the Army front.
- (ii) 22nd Wing, 8 Squadrons of scouts, will be evenly distributed over the Army Front and employed in

engaging ground targets by bombing and machine gunning

These Scouts will operate in two phases – from Z to X plus 4 hours – eastwards of the GREEN LINE and from Z plus 4 hours onwards eastward from the RED LINE

- (iii) In addition, Scout Squadrons of the 9th Brigade will provide high patrols.

-----  
SUPPLY AND ADMINISTRATIVE ARRANGEMENTS

1. BRIGADE RESERVE

Brigade Reserve of S.A.A. will be formed by one S.A.A. Limber from each Battalion reporting to Captain Nicholls Brigade Transport Officer, at T.11.c.9.9. (62 D) – Northern edge of BOIS DE GENTILLES [*GENTELLES*] at 7.00 p.m. 7th instant. 48 hours' rations and forage will be carried.

2. S.A.A. SUPPLY – Requirements will be notified to Battalion Hqrs., stating quantity required in rounds.

3. RATIONS –

- (a) Rations up to the evening of the 7th instant will be carried on the men and Cookers.  
(b) 800 Iron Rations will be delivered by Transport at BOIS DE GENTILLES. [*GENTELLES*]  
(c) Cookers, Machine Gun Limbers and two Water Carts will accompany the Battalion to the BOIS DE GENTILLES. [*GENTELLES*]

DRESS –

- (a) Battle Order with Greatcoats. Greatcoats will be left at BOIS DE GENTILES [*GENTELLES*] with a Guard of one man from each Company.  
(b) Each man will carry two full Water bottles.  
(c) Each man will carry 170 rounds of S.A.A., with the exception of 1s and 2s of Lewis Guns and two Rifle Grenadiers per platoon, who will carry fifty rounds each.

4. BOMBS, VERY LIGHTS, ROCKETS, ETC. Instructions to be issued later.

5. MEDICAL ARRANGEMENTS- Regimental Aid posts will be situated at:-

U.27.c.1.5. )  
U.26.d.1.2 ) Sheet 62 D  
U.23 central )

6. TRANSPORT LINES – at BOIS DE BOYES.

7. LOCATION OF B.H.Q. night of 6th/7th August – BOIS DE GENTILLES. [*GENTELLES*]

8. Officers Trench Kits will be ready outside Company Headquarters at 7.00 p.m. Mess Stores at 8.00 p.m.  
-----

Issued at 6.30 p.m.  
6th August 1918.

(Sgd.) J. W. Jeakins  
Lieut. & Asst. Adjutant  
P.P.C.L.I.

Copy No. 1 – C.O.  
2 – 2nd i/c  
3 – Adjutant  
4 – O.C., 1 Coy.  
5 – O.C., 2 Coy.  
6 – O.C., 3 Coy.  
7 – O.C. 4 Coy.  
8 – O.C., B.H.Q.  
9 – R.S.M.  
10 – Q.M.  
11 – T.O.  
12 – M.O.  
13 – 7th C.I.B.  
14 – War Diary  
15 – File  
16 – R.C.R.  
17 – 42nd Battn  
18 – 49th Battn

P.P.C.L.I.  
6th August 1918.

---

O.C. 1,2,3,4, & B.H.Q.

1. The Battalion will move to GENTELLE WOOD at ~~9.30~~ 9.00 p.m. tonight.
2. Order of march B.H.Q.-1-4-2-3.
3. 200 yards between companies will be maintained until reaching RIVER AVRE. From this point they will proceed by platoons by most direct overland route to wood.
4. Starting point on ST. FUSCIEN – BOVES ROAD south of N in ST.FUSCIEN. B.H.Q. will pass this point at 9.00 p.m.

5. R.S.M. will report to "A" Mess for the Colours at 8.40 p.m
6. Every precaution must be taken to prevent movement of troops outside wood by daylight. There must be no smoke by day, or fires of lights by night. Companies will detail special police to see the above is strictly adhered to.

(Sgd.) A. R. Chipman Lieut. & Adj.

-----

<u>Trench</u>	<u>Strength.</u>	<u>25.</u>
		<u>8.</u>
		18.

	<u>Officers</u>	<u>O.R's</u>	
No 1. Coy.	4	131	
2.	4	127	
3.	4	130	
4.	4	129	
B.H.Q.	7	65	
	<u>23</u>	<u>582</u>	

Includes M.O. & Padre.

582
23
<u>605</u>

-----

(1) Relief complete 5.15 p.m.- Delay due to fact that guide had not the remotest idea of route and got me hopelessly lost which meant I had to wait till day began to break to find my own way in –

(2) Am not sending any reports until called for –

- (3) If we are to be here two or three days I would like trench kits and Officers ????? to come up – also great coats if possible –  
(4) Where will ration dumps be –

12-8-17

[Sgd] L.V. Drummond-Hay  
Major O.C. 4 Coy

[Note transcriber: obviously Major Drummond-Hay was slightly wrong about the date...]

-----  
To Adj.

P.P.C.L.I.  
From:- Lieut. D.H. Macartney.

Have arrived at 116th. Bn. Hq. (about 300 x due East of LE QUESNOY).  
No operations under way. Relief made too late. C.O. & party are presently in front line discovering its location which seems vague – they believe their left post lies in front of Parvillers but are not certain – they, therefore cannot be in touch with our left.  
Will report as soon as possible on return of party.

[Sgd] D.H. Macartney  
Lieut.  
P.P.C.L.I.

-----  
See [Grid Map](#).

-----  
To:- Adj.

P.P.C.L.I.  
From:- Lieut. D.H. Macartney.  
P.P.C.L.I.

(Map. Ref. 66 D E.N.E.)

116th. B.Hq. L 33 a 1. 2.  
Front line left post at L 27 D 5. 8.  
116th. presently pushing out posts  
as shown in Map section (A) –  
object being to strengthen same  
- to push further & even finally  
outflank Demery. [Damery]  
Am proceeding to front line  
to try & establish communication  
between our right & 116th left

posts.

(Sgd.) D.H. Macartney  
9.15 a.m. Lieut  
12.8.18. P.P.C.L.I.  
By runner.

-----

Wire Report 12.8-18.

1 N.C.O. & 2 men left our line at L.27.a.30.20 and proceeded through sap L.27.a.70.28 where we found trench in good condition unoccupied and on through sap L.27 a 80.20 which was blocked with wire. The main German line of wire 10 yds in front of above position was from 8 to 10 yds wide 3 ft high and fairly thick supported by knife rest and steel stays. German Red Cross men were heard talking close to this position. Patrol returned through sap L.21.d.10.30.

(Sgd.) Corpl. M Wernick  
Pte R. Teevan Pte. [A. Teevan]  
Pte H.B. Essery.

-----

Wire Report 12-8-18.

3 O.R's left our line at F.22.a 30.70 at 4.45 a.m. & proceeded along sap to F. 22.a 40.55 going due east for 200 yds where 2 wounded scottish were picked up by us and brought to our lines. Enemy wire could be seen it was very heavy knife rest and concertina, 1 belt 40 to 50 ft wide 3 ft high. There were apparently no breaks in wire. Capt McPherson advised not going out again as enemy snipers were busy. After each shot we could hear bolt action and presume he was in sap at F.22.a 90.40

(Sgd.) Cpl Woodard F  
Pte Russell G  
„ Philpott W.

-----

Observation Report – 12-8-18.

Enemy Defences –

Enemy appears to be holding a strong line along old trenches in 27 b and d. SQUARE WOOD is especially strongly held by M.G. as many as 5 distinct posts being observed along edge facing us

No Anti-tank guns or T.Ms [*Trench Mortars*] could be observed.

Wire –

Enemy line seems to be heavily wired, wire being old. Unable to note condition of wire.

Observation – Good

(Sgd.) Pte C.G. Schmitt  
,, P. MacFarlane.

-----  
Observation Report: 12-8-18.

M.G. Fire - Ours - Limited to firing on aircraft.  
Enemy - Occasional bursts from posts in 27 b.

Enemy Movement:-

Isolated – Sentries on post and M.G. posts could almost at all times be seen along edge of SQUARE WOOD in 27 b.

M.G. posts also observed at approximately 27d 55.90. Man using field glasses could occasionally be observed at left edge of SQUARE WOOD.

Enemy Planes:-

Enemy low flying plane attempted to cross our lines but was driven off by M.G. fire.

(Unsigned)  
-----

Observation Report 12-8-18

Time 10.00 A.M. – 6.00 P.M.

Map Ref: 66E N.E.

O.P. – 2 Coy. Hdqs.

To T.O.

P.P.C.L.I. –

Attitude of Enemy: Quiet but very watchful and alert

Artillery:

Ours – Quite active all day.

Enemy – Fairly quiet. 1.00 PM – 3.00 P.M. – Enemy

shelling 3 of our damaged Tanks in 27.a  
with 4.5's setting 2 on fire.

T.M.'s-Ours - 3.40 P.M. Enemy posts in 27 b fired on by  
our T.Ms.

Enemy – nil

-----

No. 5 Date.12/8/18Time 6.15Place

To Adj. P.P.C.L.I. Place  
Operation I (116th.)

Party of 2 N.C.O's & 12 O.Rs made their way into  
Square Wood about 12 noon encountering large body of  
Germans. Party destroyed Enemy block but had to withdraw  
before superior strength.  
6 Germans killed. 116th. party – 1 slightly wounded  
Identification 63 collar strap.

From D.H. Macartney  
Lieut.  
P.P.C.L.I.

-----

No. 6 Date. 12/8/18 Time 6.20 Place

To Adj. P.P.C.L.I. Place

Operation II (116th.)

Patrol of 1 officer & 6 O.Rs investigated sap to Middle  
Wood. Block was found about 50x from wood – 3 of enemy  
seen & heard digging post on far side of block – block was  
forced – party of 20 Germans sighted who put M.G. in action –  
M.G. party retired – Patrol returned.

2 Germans killed.

116th. party – no casualties.

(Sgd.) D.H. Macartney  
Lieut.

-----

MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

TO K

42nd at 5.30 had taken first objective and were pushing south-west towards town aaa

FROM Cagrant 6.30 PM  
PLACE & TIME

-----  
O.C. P.P.C.L.I.

I am in touch with 42nd Bn – They have advanced along trenches leading S.W. from Fouquescourt and at 5.30 P.M held line of Rouvroy & Parvillers and from L 22 B to L 29 A and are advancing toward town – I am moving two platoons into front line at once but at present can take no further action nor do I think I will be able to from what the 42nd explain they intend to do- Two Coys of 49th are [inserted: expected to] move up on my ~~right~~ left to take over trenches vacated by 42nd Bn-

6.30 p.m. (Sgd.) L.V. Drummond Hay  
By Runner Major OC 4 Coy

-----  
C.O.

116th Bn.

Do you object to me sending a coy to work up your communication trench in order to bomb into PARVILLERS from the SOUTH. We will try to pass your H.Q. at 3.30 P.M.

report (Sgd.) C.J.T. Stewart  
Lt. Col. Commg  
P.P.C.L.I.

12/8/18

O.K. Lead on please  
(Sgd.) THM  
Lieut.

-----  
Aug 12/18.

To Col Stewart.

I should be pleased to co-operate with you in the proposed enterprise. I have already sent a platoon up the communication trench to fight and hold every inch of ground they take. I shall be only too pleased to give you any assistance such as guides etc. that I can.

(Sgd.) G.C. Pearkes  
Lt Col.  
C.O. 116<sup>th</sup> Cdn Inf Bn.

-----  
12/8/18.

To The Adjutant

I have found it impossible to establish a continuous line in forward trench as it is all blocked and the approaches are only open in two places on this Coy front. I have decided to place posts at the heads of C.T's [*Communication Trenches*] that are open through, and also one post on the road [inserted: on right], This in effect provides an observation line forward of present living trench which I now have organized as the battle position. I shall endeavour to have wire obstacles cleared from forward trench but till this is done I shall hold position as herein stated.

I trust this meets with your approval.

Gerald W. Guiou  
Lt. O.C. 2 Coy.

9.45 PM. O.K.

-----  
OC P.P.C.L.I.

42nd show going well – They have run short of bombs and at request of OC 42nd I am turning over my complete supply to them – Please send me up eight boxes to replace them as soon as possible to include a portion of # 36-

42nd Bn is now all forward in vicinity of Parvillers and I am therefore sending a small carrying party with bombs.

(Sgd.) L.V. Drummond Hay  
Major OC 4 Coy  
12-8-18  
7 P.M.-

#### MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

TO Adjutant P.P.C.L.I.

42nd having a rather hard time. Have been counter-attacked twice & had quite a few casualties. The 49th are reinforcing with two Companies. The 42nd present line

to east of Rouvigny [*Rouvroy*] – Parvillers road is from L 22 B 6.4. along trench north-easterly to 17 C 5.2 thence S.E. to ~~23~~ a 23 a 8.9 then north-easterly to 17 b 7.6.

From C.A. Grant Lt.  
Place  
Time 8.15

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix ...S.M.... Code...MRAM Words 52 Received Sent or sent out Office Stamp  
From ...CzQ... Bu  
By .....D??... 13/8/18

Service Instructions

.....C z Q

Received 12.15 AM

TO Go B ?

\* Sender's Number Day of Month. In reply to Number AAA  
G 43 13

Our left Bn reports our line as follows aaa From L18 a 9.9 along trench through L 18 central L 23 Central to main road at L 23 c 5-2 aaa Situation SE of main road andain VARVILLERS [*PARVILLERS*] is uncertain aaa Fighting continues and is now severe aaa Timed 7.30 Pm

(Sgd.) J.W.D.

FROM 7th Cdn Inf Bde

-----  
P.P.C.L.I. Personal.  
The Adjutant  
P.P.C.L.I.

Will be over as soon as possible to let you know of the scrap what looked like a very successful fight has turned out to be right the other way. ??? Wright was wounded and died we have several NCOs here wounded, & dead.

Fuller & Ogilvie all right Would like an Officer over here to assist for the time being ~~would~~ if possible

Fuller collecting 9 & 11 Platoon now

Have collected all wounded.

(Sgd.) E. MacG. MacBrayne

No. 8.

To. Adj.

From:- Lieut D.H. Macartney.

Re. Capt. McBrain's [MacBrayne] re-inforcement chit – O.C. 116th. has [inserted:  
since]  
sufficiently reinforced him to hold out against any counter-attack – though not  
sufficiently to penetrate village any further.

Sent by runner

13/8/18

(Sgd.) D.M. Macartney

Lieut

2.55 a.m.

P.P.C.L.I.

---

No 11

To:- Adj.

P.P.C.L.I.

From:- Lieut. D.H. Macartney.

Please furnish another L.O. [*Liaison Officer*] to enable me to go forward & take  
Wright's place.

Situation unchanged. (Sgd.) D.H. Macartney

Lieut

13/8/18.

P.P.C.L.I.

9.45 a.m.

Sent by runner.

---

TO

P.P.C.L.I.

\* Sender's Number

Day of Month.

In reply to Number

AAA

???

10

11

Bm [*BM – Brigade Major*] will meet Bn C.O's and their Adjutants ??? ????? H.Q. at  
7.45 p.m. Bn C.O's to  
be prepared to go forward with Bm Adjutants to get instructions re moving  
Battalions tonight.

From

7<sup>th</sup> CIB

---

Abstract from THE CANADIAN GAZETTE pages 511 & 512.

Aug.16.

**"The Capture of Parvillers and Damery.**

The initial attack on Parvillers was opened at a quarter-past six by a hurricane bombardment by specially concentrated artillery, another wonderful show by our magnificent gunners. Fifteen minutes later the men went over the top and captured the village with only five casualties. One unit with a very distinguished record pushed on straight through the village but found that a large enemy force had worked round to their rear. Nothing daunted, our men faced about and, fighting a rearguard action on its former front, fought its way back and out of a critical situation. Reforming behind a line of enemy trenches, it later, with the aid of other troops took the village by a concentric movement. All enemy counter-attacks failed. He made three distinct assaults, coming on four deep from two different directions, leaving several hundred dead before the village. An officer described that as the hardest infantry fighting since Mouquet Farm."

XX

[Operations near Arras 25-29 August 1918]

App. 2

PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY.

NARRATIVE OF OPERATIONS – AUGUST 25th/29th 1918

(Reference Map:- [CAMBRAI ROAD](#) 2nd Ed)  
[inserted: 1/20.000]

On Sunday night, August 25th 1918, the Battalion moved from "Y" Camp to Assembly position in the neighbourhood of BLANGY, to take part in an attack next morning, with the object of clearing ARRAS and the opening up of the ARRAS-ALBERT RAILWAY.

At 3.00 a.m. on the morning of the 26th., the 8th Cdn. Infantry Brigade attacked and advanced through ORANGE HILL to MONCHY.

At 6.45 a.m. the Battalion received orders to attack, and assembled on the Western slope of ORANGE HILL; further orders to

attack were not received until 9.30 a.m. when the Battalion moved forward in the following order:- No. 1 Company on the RIGHT, No. 2 Company on the LEFT, No. 4 Company in SUPPORT and No. 3 Company in RESERVE. The total Trench Strength of the Battalion being, 24 Officers and 582 Other Ranks. On the RIGHT the Royal Canadian Regiment, on the LEFT the 49th Cdn. Battalion, whose Orders were to throw out a protecting screen on our left flank. The 51st Divsn. co-operating on our left to the North of the SCARPE.

The Battalion leap-frogged through the 8th Cdn Inf. Bde. along MILAN TRENCH, and advanced with some opposition and taking a number of prisoners with but slight casualties, as far as FACTION TRENCH, where they were subjected to very heavy Machine Gun fire from the Village of PELVES on the left and in FUEL TRENCH and from Crest of Ridge. The final objective was a line running from JIGSAW WOOD on the North to BOIS DU SART on the South.

Two Tanks were allotted to the Battalion, and when the Advance was held up in FACTION TRENCH, the Tanks were sent forward to overcome the Machine gun posts, but were put out of action on the way up and were of no further assistance; though the crews of the tanks materially assisted by dismantling their tanks and using their machine guns with our men in the trenches. This check occurred at about 12 Noon, and we advanced no further on that day. All through the afternoon, the front line Companies suffered severe casualties from Machine Gun enfilade fire and snipers.

B.H.Q. was established in MUSKET TRENCH (I.31.c.3.8.) which was subjected to heavy shelling during the afternoon with 5.9 and 8"

During the afternoon, the enemy shelled MONCHY and the SUPPORT LINE heavily. Thus SUPPORT Company took up their position in DEVILS TRENCH. As the Front Line Companies had suffered severe casualties, all four Platoons of the Support Company were sent up to reinforce the front line: this was early in the afternoon and as No. 1 Company had lost all of its Officers, Lieut WHITE assumed command of the Right Front Line Company, Captain TENBROCKE [*Tenbroeke*] being still in command of the Left.

At this time, the Right Front Line Company consisted of what was left of No.1 Company and 2 platoons of No. 4 Company.

Later in the afternoon, a platoon of No. 3 Company under Lieut MACKAY was sent up as a further reinforcement to the Right Front Line Company. Up to this time connection had been continuous with the Battalion on the right, but the whole Brigade advance was met with strong opposition and was held up. Our left flank continued in the air during the whole of the day and was subjected to heavy machine gun fire. An interval of 1,000 yards existed between the

left flank and the river, and the enemy held a position to the immediate left and somewhat to the Rear, directing not only machine gun fire, but also artillery fire from (2) 5.9 guns in PELVES. These remained firing until our artillery came up to co-operate and neutralized their fire about 3.00 p.m.

In the course of the opening attack, the 51st Division on their side of the SCARPE made a demonstration with Artillery but did not advance with the 3rd Division. At 7.00 p.m. on that day the 51st Division made an attack and advanced as far as ROEUX.

At 7.00 p.m. the Boche massed Troops in JIGSAW VALLEY for a counter-attack which was broken up by our artillery fire. During the course of the night, the enemy made at least five unsuccessful bombing attacks, in force, on our Left Company, especially along a trench in which a stranded tank served as a good block. These attacks were all successfully repulsed with large casualties to the Boche, at one period only the Tank being between the attacking party and our men, bombs being thrown over the Tank. For a considerable part of the time, the enemy's party occupied a position on the east side of the Tank, while the left Company held their position on the other side. On one occasion a party of enemy were seen three hundred yards in rear, firing on a stretcher party, they were engaged by Lewis Gun fire and retired, leaving one prisoner in our hands.

At the start of the advance it rained heavily: clearing in the afternoon. Aeroplanes assisted materially in the attack in spite of rain and low clouds. No contact work was possible during the morning.

Next day, the 27th., the same condition obtained, machine gun fire being very heavy particularly on our left flank, which was still in the air.

At about 2.00 o'clock in the afternoon the Battalion received orders to Bomb their way to PELVIS [*PELVES*], along FACTION, FRICTION and CARTRIDGE TRENCHES. Two parties of fourteen men each, one under Lieuts. BARCLAY and OGILVIE and one under Lieut ROBB bombed along these Trenches, Lieut ROBB's party succeeded in advancing along the trench for a distance of 900 yards, meeting with considerable opposition for the greater part of the way. As large numbers of the enemy were met with and as the supply of bombs was very short and machine guns from both flanks were firing on his party, Lieut ROBB was forced to withdraw, which he did with very few casualties. In the meantime, the Party bombing along CARTRIDGE TRENCH under Lieuts. BARCLAY and OGILVIE, who did not advance quite so far, withdrew in order to conform with the other party's withdrawal. Snipers were posted to cut off any Germans who might be retreating overland. So many targets presented themselves, that a Lewis Gun garrisoning the Trench was brought up and put into action, and very severe casualties

were inflicted upon the enemy in this way. During the withdrawal one of the Lewis Guns brought out by the bombing party, was employed to cover their withdrawal.

The party had nine casualties. One prisoner was captured, who stated that there was an inter-machine Gun Company relief at the time of the attack. This accounted for the large number of men who were found to occupy the trench. By this time, No.1 Company had all of its Officers killed and a large number of other rank casualties had occurred in both front line Companies. Lieut OGILVIE was slightly wounded during the raid and remained at duty.

When the Parties returned, the Boche followed up and several of our snipers were posted in a position whence they could enfilade the Trench. After inflicting about eight or ten casualties on the enemy, who were undecided whether they should advance further or not, they retreated further back up the trench. The opposition was still strong and this operation had not improved our position. Up to this time the Battalion had captured large numbers of machine guns and over one hundred prisoners from five different Regiments.

Little shelling except in the SUPPORT area. Day; Fine.

During the night the enemy withdrew from PELVES and on the morning of the 28th at 5.00 a.m. the 49th Cdn. Battalion occupied the village.

At 11.00 a.m. the Battalion was ordered to advance and capture JIGSAW WOOD, with the co-operation of the 42nd Battalion on our RIGHT and the 49th Battalion on our LEFT. Two companies of R.C.R. being now in support, the other two companies of the R.C.R. being attached to the 9th Brigade, further on the Right.

Very little opposition was met with and 175 prisoners taken. On the East side of the Wood, ~~about~~ five fences of wire about fifteen feet apart were encountered and our Right Company under Lieut WHITE met with machine gun fire from a gap in this wire. We pushed through this with covering fire from two Lewis Guns and occupied a Pill box capturing a light gun, , which was turned on the enemy. It was found ~~that~~ on advancing through JIGSAW VALLEY that it was very heavily manned with machine guns, but it was impossible to remove these, so they were left there. Four anti-tank guns were also captured in this valley.

~~On the previous two days, large numbers of machine guns and about 100 to 125 prisoners were captured from five different Regiments.~~

A Sniping Patrol under Lieut LOPTSON had been sent out, about 9.30 a.m. consisting of himself, the Scout Sergeant and two O.R's, who advanced into enemy's position along STOKES TRENCH for a distance

of 500 yards, thence overland to a strong point in HAVERSACK LANE situate on the crest of ridge, with a good field of fire. On reaching this position, a party of ten or twelve enemy were observed advancing to occupy the same strong point. These were engaged and dispersed with casualties, the range being only 100 yards. Word was sent to Captain TENBROCKE, who sent up a Lewis Gun Crew with Gun, who occupied this position. The Patrol then proceeded to TUSK TRENCH and along that Trench to edge of Valley from where large numbers of enemy could be seen, who were fired on. The enemy engaged the Party with an anti-tank gun and they withdrew to a strong point. They located large numbers of the enemy in JIGSAW VALLEY, who were apparently massing for a counter-attack against the 49th Battalion. One of the men was sent back to Captain TENBROCKE with this information and a Lewis Gun was brought up, and again large casualties were inflicted upon the enemy. A large number of dead and wounded Germans were observed during the advance through the Valley and Wood.

A Line was established in shell holes on the eastern and northern outskirts of the WOOD, our right Company being about three or four hundred yards in advance and in touch with the 42nd Battalion, our Left Company at the Northern and North eastern outskirts of the WOOD. The LEFT flank was once more in the air and two platoons of the R.C.R. were brought forward to form a defensive flank in JIGSAW VALLEY.

By this time a good deal of German artillery had been brought into play. Jigsaw Wood and Jigsaw Valley being subjected to intense shell fire, both H.E. and gas. The men were thoroughly exhausted after their strenuous three days fighting, when word was received at 7.00 p.m. that a relief was to be expected.

The Battalion had cleared the WOOD by 12.30, the right Company capturing two medium trench mortars en route.

By dark, the shell fire diminished and the night was quiet. Relief was not complete until [inserted: 9 a.m.] the following day, when the Canadian Composite Corps, consisting of Motor Machine Gun Batteries, Cyclists and Trench Mortars took over the line, and the Battalion marched back to Billets in ARRAS.

The Battalion's casualties in the three day's action were:-

Officers . . . . .	5 Killed
	1 Died of wounds
	8 wounded
	1 wounded at duty.
Other Ranks. . . . .	43 killed
	129 wounded
	4 Missing
	6 wounded at duty

-0-0-0-0-O-0-0-0-0-

(Signed) CJT Stewart Lt Col  
PPCLI

O.C. P.P.C.L.I.

7TH CANADIAN INFANTRY BRIGADE

SECRET

OPERATION ORDER NO. 167

“T” Instructions. No.1

Ref. Map:-

CAMBRAI RD. 1/20,000

1. (a) The 3rd Canadian Division in co-operation with the 2nd Canadian Division on the right and the 51st Highland Division on the left will attack the enemy's positions EAST OF ARRAS on the 26th August at a time to be notified later.  
  
(b) The 51st Highland Division will have no definitive objectives, but will be ready to exploit any success South of the SCARPE by pushing Patrols out along the North Bank with a view to gaining MOUNT PLEASANT.

2. The Right Boundary of the Division will be as follows:-

ARRAS-CAMBRAI ROAD (inclusive to 3rd Canadian Division) as far as N.3.b.0.4., thence along track, (inclusive to 3rd Canadian Division), to junction with DAGGER TRENCH N.4.a.6.5. – N.5.c.6.7. – N.6.c.8.1. – VINE TRENCH and VINE AVENUE (both inclusive to 3rd Canadian Division), to 0.3.c.0.0 and thence due EAST.

The Left Boundary

The River SCARPE.

3. The 8th Canadian Infantry Brigade will capture the FIRST OBJECTIVE (THE GREEN LINE), and the SECOND OBJECTIVE (RED DOTTED LINE), and will then exploit eastward and capture MONCHY, (Objectives shown on SECRET MAP “A” issued to all concerned.)

4. The 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade will advance through the 8th Canadian Infantry Brigade and exploit EASTWARDS as far as a line from BOIRY NOTRE DAME, Northwards to River SCARPE, refusing the left bank in so doing.

5. RESERVES:- The 9th Canadian Infantry Brigade will be in Divisional Reserve.

6. DISPOSITION - 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade

The Brigadx will attack on a two Battalion frontage with special force detailed to protect the left flank.

Tasks & Boundaries as follows:-

(a) The R.C.R.

- (I) Will in turn make good –
  - (a) the Trench system in O.2.
  - (b) B du SART
  - (c) BOIRY NOTRE DAME.

(II). Boundaries -

Right – Divisional South Boundary.

Left - Grid Line running east and West between O & I

(B). The P.P.C.L.I.

- (I) Will in turn make good -
  - (a) the Trench System in I.32.
  - (b) North side of B. du SART
  - (c) JIGSAW WOOD.

(II)

- (a) RIGHT Boundary GRID LINE, running EAST-WEST between
- (b) LEFT Boundary GRID LINE, running "T" & "O"  
EAST-WEST between I.31 & I.25

(C). The 49th Canadian Battalion (E.R.)

Will detail two Companies to act in conjunction with the P.P.C.L.I. and refuse the left flank of the Brigade. The Battalion, less two Companies. will be in Brigade Reserve.

(D). The 42nd Canadian Infantry Battalion (R.H.C.): - Will be in Brigade Reserve.

7. ACTION OF THE 7TH CANADIAN INFANTRY BRIGADE

(A). Night 25th/26th August:-

The Brigade will move from ETRUN – ANZIN SR AUBIN Area, Units marching independently to the Area EAST of ARRAS. Dispositions in this Area in accordance with sketch already forwarded.

Brigade Headquarters will be at CHATHAM CAVE, G.29.a.8.0.

(B). On “Z” date the Brigade will be prepared to move forward after Zero hour to a position of readiness WEST of ORANGE HILL, preparatory to attacking through the 8th Canadian Infantry Brigade.

8. ACTION OF BRIGADE RESERVES :-

(A). The 42nd Canadian Battalion (R.H.C.) will maintain a distance approximately 800 yards in rear of R.C.R.

(B). The 49th Battalion (E.R.). less two Companies, will move approximately 800 yards in rear of P.P.C.L.I.

9. ARTILLERY.

There will be no barrage to cover the advance of the Brigade. The attack will be supported by Heavy Artillery firing on selected points, and by the 5th Canadian Divsn'l Artillery with directed fire.

The C.R.A, 5th C.D.A., is detailing a forward section to operate with the R.C.R., and one to operate with the P.P.C.L.I.

Liaison Officers will report before Zero hour.

10. MACHINE GUNS

The O.C, No. 2 Company, 3rd Bn., C.M.G.C. will detail:-

1 Battery to come under the orders of the O.C. 49th Canadian Battalion for use with the Special Party of two Companies operating along the left flank of the Brigade.

No. 2 Company, 3rd Bn., C.M.G.C. less one battery will be in Brigade Reserve and will move in the rear of the 42nd Canadian Battalion.

11. STOKES MORTARS

The 7th Canadian T.M. Battery will be in Brigade Reserve and will move under Orders from Brigade H.Q.

12. TANKS .

It is not expected that Tanks will co-operate.

13. LIGHT SIGNALS

HELP WANTED - S.O.S. ---RED over RED over RED.

O.K. ---GREEN over GREEN over GREEN.

WE ARE HERE --- Three WHITE Very Lights.

14. CONTACT PLANES

Contact Planes will call for flares under Orders from Corps Headquarters.

Contact Planes will carry a black rectangular panel on the rear edge of each lower wing, and a black band on the under side of each lower wing.

15. Trench exemptions in accordance with Section XXX - S.S.135.

16. LIAISON

Units will be responsible for maintaining touch with these Units on their flanks.

17. ACKNOWLEDGE.

(Sgd) A.G. Styles

Major,

Brigade Major

7th Canadian Infantry Brigade.

25-8-18

s

Issued through Signals at 6.30 p.m.

Issued To:-

1. 3rd Canadian Division "G"
2. G.O.C.
3. Brigade Major
4. Staff Captain "A" and "Q"
- 5½ Staff Captain "I"

6. Bde. Orderly Officer
7. Brigade Signal Officer
8. Brigade Bomb Officer
9. Brigade Transport Officer
10. The R.C.R.
11. P.P.C.L.I.
- 12 42nd Canadian Battalion (R.H.C.)
- 13 49th Canadian Battalion (E.R.)
- 14 7th Cdn. T.M. Battery
- 15 No. 2 Coy., 3rd Bn. C.M.G.C.
- 16 O.C. 3rd Bn. C.M.G.C.
- 17 C.R.A. 3rd Cdn. Divsn'l Artly
- 18 C.R.A½ 5th Cdn. DivsnII Arty
- 19 Right Flank Brigade
- 20 Left Flank Brigade
- 21 8th Canadian Infantry Bde.
- 22 9th Canadian Infantry Bde.
- 23 A.D.M.S. - 3rd Cdn. Division.
- 24-27 Brigade (attached)
- 28-31 Spare
- 32-34 War Diary

---

SECRET

NOTE:-

Reference Above "I" INSTRUCTIONS

Zero hour will be at 4.50 a.m. on August 26th.

(Sgd) A.G. Styles  
Major  
Brigade Major,  
7th Cdn Inf. Bde.

---

P.P.C.L.I.

7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B.

The battalion reached its assembly position in G.30.b., G 34.b and d.  
at 10.00 p.m.

B.H.Q. at approx. G.24.a.9.3.

25-8-18 (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
10.30 p.m. Lt & Adj

-----  
No.3  
P.P.C.L.I.

7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B.

The battalion has arrived at ORANGE HILL and is in position.

8.30 a.m. (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
by runner Lt & Adj

-----  
P.P.C.L.I. No.4

7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B.

B.H.Q. is now established on grid line approx H.3.6.B.6.0.  
Col. Stewart has gone forward- Maj. McDonald in charge

(Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
Lt & Adj

-----  
2 & 4. P.P.C.L.I. No.4  
All Coys

B.H.Q. is established in dugout in MUSKAT TRENCH I.31.c.3.8.  
Pls send in full reports of your advance and whatever information  
you have, casualties ???.  
Notify location of Coy HQ as soon as objective is reached.

3 & 4  
Notify us of present position, [inserted: and] time.

11.30 a.m. (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
By runner Lt & Adj



Lt. & Adj

-----

No.11

P.P.C.L.I.

26-8-18

7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B.

Our 2 tanks are knocked out – Left flank held up  
by heavy machine gun fire Our left Coy on  
80 Contour I.33.a. and b.

1.20 pm

(Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
Lt

-----

No.12

P.P.C.L.I.

7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B.

Our right Coy at 12.15 pm was on the 85 contour 32 D – Advance  
on this flank continuing. Casualties heavy. Strong resistance.  
(Sgd.)

1.35 pm

-----

No.12

P.P.C.L.I.

O.C. 2 Coy

2 platoons of 4 Coy are on the way up to you, as reinforcements.  
Capt. Edgar still has 2 platoons in reserve, for your Coy – Let us  
know if you can, how you are getting on. Heavy & field artillery  
are now in Jigsaw wood –

26-8-18

(Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
Lt.

-----

No.13

O.C. 2 Coy

The C.O is much pleased with the way you are handling a very

difficult situation. Robb & Cummings of 2 Coy are reinforcing you with their platoons. – 49th are working up as far as they can, and we are getting all artillery we can on the Wood – try to get in touch with us by visual and advise us if artillery is alright.

3.10 pm (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman

-----  
No14

O.C. 2 Coy.

In case my runners don't get to you with a message, this will advise you that an S.O.S. line has been established 300x in front of the following line:- Cartridge Trench to Fuel – along Fuel to Fraction, thence along Fraction to Grid Line at Cigar Copse - All troops are to be withdrawn to this line at dusk.

Don't quite understand remark about 49th – thought 1 or 2 Coys of the 49th had taken up at positions on your left.

(Sgd.) A.R. Chipman

Hold on tight laddie & don't take any chances.

-----  
No.15

O.C. 3 Coy

We have asked Bde to send another Coy to DEVILS TRENCH tonight to reinforce you – Pls be on the lookout for them – Probably will be one from 42nd.

26-8-18 (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
Lt & Adj

-----  
No.16

O.C. 2 Coy.

26-8-18

Can you send us a situation report - a report came to us from the 49<sup>th</sup> that you had flashed an SO.S. to Bde [inserted: Adv.] report centre. Is this so – Am sending you by 49th Carrying party ?? ~~Bombs~~ 112.000 rds S.A.A.-51st Divn attacked on your left at 7.00 pm tonight.

9.15 pm. by runner (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
Lt & Adj

No.17

New white  
O.C. 4 Coy

We are sending up to you 10000 rds S.A.A. and some S.O.S. rockets.  
by a carrying party from 49<sup>th</sup>. It will be late in arriving. The 51st Divn  
attacked at 7.00 p.m. tonight on left of No.2 Coy & this will relieve  
situation somewhat.

26-8-18

(sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
Lt. Adjt

-----  
(4<sup>th</sup> CMR  
H.30.d 4.4)  
58<sup>th</sup> O.I.D.8.8  
-----

Rations R.C.R. – H.36. central  
PPCLI – I.31.c.3.8

~~S.A.A. dump wrong~~

Rations H.36.c.6.3

1-I.32.d.10.35  
2- I.32.a.90.30  
3-I.32.a.05.15  
(no more water)

Aug 28/18

Adjt

2 Coy are progressing fairly well on left – and have crossed Sunken Road  
are going along low ground by STOKES TRENCH.

1 Coy are meeting opposition from approx B des Auberines in O 2 b but  
are making progress – very stiff opposition Several M.G.s.

I have just spoken to two tanks and they are now going forward to deal with  
it – Time 11.55.

My platoons are all involved with 1 & 2 Coys and I wont be able to disentangle  
them till we reach objective.

Will report again

I am in 132 central approx. Do not know whereabouts 3 Coy Hdqrs

(Sgd.) A.C. White  
Lt  
O.C. 4 Coy

Time 12-1 pm  
By McClarty

-----  
O.C. P.P.C.L.I.

My line approximately I.32.b.1.0: 5.7. My right flank seems to be O.K. – the left coming up. Strong machine gun and rifle fire from spur in I.32.d. about FUEL TRENCH. Enemy reinforcing down ~~valley in I.28~~ slope from QUARRY WOOD.

Progress very slow. In my opinion FUEL TRENCH should be attacked from right flank after a barrage is laid on it.

My Support platoon in. Company very scattered so cannot estimate casualties. These are not very heavy I think.

GAMMELL reported killed

11.30 a.m.

26.8.18

By runner

(Sgd.) J.R. MacPherson Capt  
O.C. 1 Co.

-----  
To Adj.

Casualties Severe. Capt Macpherson & Lt Gammell both killed.

Men about 20 – Position 85. Contour 32. D.

Advance going alright on right We are moving ahead.

12.15 P.M.

(Sgd.) C F H Biddulph  
O.C. 1 Coy

-----  
26.8.18

The Adj

P.P.C.L.I.

My Coy frontage at present runs approx from R. to L. from T.33.Cent. to the U in TUSK TRENCH & then to I 27 c.00.00.

We are held up by MG fire from the L. also reinforcements have been seen coming up the Jigsaw Valley. My L flank if I continue to advance is right up in the air. Two batteries also firing up the valley from direction of PLEVIS & from Jigsaw Wood.

No signs of 49th Bn & the two tanks. The Coy on my R have been seen as far as ARTILLERY LANE I 34 cL.8.

By Runner (Sgd.) M. Tenbroeke  
1.45 P.M. O.C. No 2. Coy.

-----  
26.8.18.  
No 3 Coy.

Adjutant.

Coy dispositions and location are as follows.

No. 9. Platoon from I 32.a 0.6 to L 32.a.1.5.

,, 11 ,, L 32.a.1.5 to L 32.a.2.0.

,, 12 ,, L 32.a.2.0 to L 32.c.2.6.

,, 10 ,, L 32.a.0.8 to L 32.d.15.40.

(Approx)

Company H.Q. L 32.a.05.25.

[ Sgd] J N Edgar Capt  
O.C. 3 Coy.

-----  
Aug 26/18.

C.O.

Have found remnants of 1-3-4 Coys on right, Very confused.

We hold lightly crest in ~~I.32.d. (Contour 85~~ O.2.b (Contour 90-)

B des Aubepines)- with Lt Partridge & some men of 3 Coy.

Lt McKinnon [inserted: 2 Coy] is here-now having come over to get in touch.

Lt McCartney is the only remaining officer of 1 Coy

Lt Biddulph – killed.

We are getting steady hostile M.G. fire from low ground about CARTRIDGE TRENCH in I.32 b & d.

Apparently 2 Coy have not made the progress which was understood.

It would seem as though we have an opportunity to work to left & flank enemy parties.

R.C.R. are reported in touch by Lt McCartney. I do not know where they are

Have sent Lt McCartney up to top of crest to size up the situation – So far I can only find about 70men – distributed around trenches on W side of crest – There are some more forward but do not know number.

3 Tanks are knocked out. To make any further determined advance – new troops would be necessary. As long as the Bosche holds our left flank we cannot make very by headway.

Will report again as soon as I can get further information.

Our Artillery could keep B du Sart under fire in order to prevent any concentration which might threaten our hold on crest. Lt Barclay is not forward with his platoon.

Time (Sgd.) A.C. White Lt  
2.55 p.m. O.C. Right flank party  
By runner

-----  
No hope of getting objectives Fully expect big casualties  
[Unsigned]

-----  
26.8.18.

The Adj.  
P.P.C.L.I.

Large parties of the enemy are advancing & entering trenches on the left of us. Looks as if they are assembling for a counter attack. I am looking after my flank. Should like 100 Bombs & 10000 Rds S.A.A.

(Sgd.) M. Tenbroeke  
O.C. 2. Coy. Capt.

-----  
The Adjutant

O.C. 2 Coy

Withdraw your line to N.c.00.45.  
[Unsigned]

-----  
3.14 pm Aug26/18

C.O.

Lt McCartney has just come back from crest and reports enemy trekking up on our front. – Lt McKinnon is now returning to 2 Coy to take charge as it is reported. – the other officers are casualties. I am forming defensive flank to the N & pushing up any available men to hold crest.

(Sgd.) A.C. White Lt

-----  
Aug 26/18

C.O.

Situation a little clearer now. My former report stating we held crest in

O.2.b is slightly incorrect

As far as I can gather we hold line as follows

Cartridge Trench  
Fuel Trench thence along  
Faction Trench to right to  
Cigar Copse where we are in  
touch with R.C.R.

All these trenches are in I 32 b & d.

Have established a post at I 32 d 5065 and also at junction at I 32 d 4070  
Since the last report I have seen the Officer i/c party of R.C.R. on our right.

He stated he had his right flank in the air and wanted to know what I intended to do. At that time we had Lt Partridge & about 25 men at KEELING COPSE I told the R.C.R. to hang on as we were doing so. While telling him about this I saw our men coming back who stated that the R.C.R. were falling back I gave instructions to Lt McCartney & Partridge to hang on to the position Viz Saps at I 32 d 5065 – I 32 d 4070 ~~with~~ and to push out patrols to get on crest again.

I came back to junction Faction & Fuel trenches where I told Cpl Weir to hold on to Faction Trench & grab all the RCRs that came back & establish the line of Faction Trench to right.

Lt Barclay then reported that 13 & 14 platoons were in Cartridge Trench touching with 2 Coy on left & almost in touch with my post at I 32 d 4070

Some of our men were coming back too far so sent him to make sure of posts already detailed & link up with 13 & 14 platoons

It will not be possible to carry on the advance – as the casualties have been severe. No 1 Coy seems to be practically nil – I have only found about 25 at the most, No 3 Coy are about 35 – 13 & 14 platoons are fairly well up.

Sgt Fox is killed

There are some men of 1 Coy outside the trench in shell holes which I hope to get in soon. I have not yet found out what is behind us but nothing to my knowledge yet. – except wounded & an odd detail or two. Cannot find any signallers but will do so if possible & get in touch with you

I am under the crest of the ridge and do not see what I can do yet to improve our position.

We need another defense line in rear.

Time 4.22 pm

By runner  
Coy Hqrs I 32 d 1040

(Sgd.) A.C. White Lt  
O.C. Right flank party

-----  
26.8.18

The Adj.  
P.P.C.L.I.

Am in touch with Coy on my R. We occupy Cartridge & Stokes Trenches and I am being fired on from my left rear. Enemy holds position with a number of MGs in Haverlock Lane, about 250 yds in front of our position. Lt Robb 4 Coy

has supported me with a few men. No signs of Lt. Cummings of 49th Bn on my left  
Awaiting orders.

Should like a barrage laid down on Haverlock Lane & continued to the Wood.

Casualties about 50%

Lt Lalor & Benson wounded. Act C.S.M. wounded & three platoon sgts. killed.

By Runner.  
5.30 P.M.

(Sgd.) M. Tenbroeke  
O.C. 2 Coy Capt.C

C.W. 4  
C.O.

Aug 26/18.

Have organized defence on lines as reported in last message.  
Enemy reported to be on crest immediately to our front.

It will not be possible to advance patrols at present, so suggest  
barrage line be made to cover our front.

Enemy M.G's from Havelock enfilade fire & have caused  
casualties. Lt McCartney killed. Lt Partridge wounded. I have only  
Lt Barclay with me now.

I am afraid that a counter attack may develop & we have no  
reserve of S.A.A.

5.30 p.m.

(Sgd.) A.C. White

P.P.C.L.I.

26-8-18

To O.C.-R.C.R.

1-Our line from latest report is now as follows CARTRIDGE TRENCH  
in D.32.b. and d. to FUEL-Thence along FUEL to FRACTION, along  
FRACTION to grid line on CIGAR COPSE.

2-We have had an S.O.S. line established, 300 yds in front of the above  
and all troops in advance of line in PARA 1, will be withdrawn at dusk.

6.05 p.m.

(Sgd.) A. R. Chipman  
Lt & Adjt

C.O  
P.P.C.L.I.

Enemy preparing counter-attack – AAA. No S.O.S. signal –  
Short of S.A.A.

White

(Sgd.) A.C. White Lt

7.35 pm

C.W. 5

Aug 26/18

C.O. P.P.C.L.I.

-----  
Your message acknowledged – S.O.S. line as described quite satisfactory. But I have no S.O.S. signal Aft Also if we are attacked we shall be seriously short of SAA & bombs & Lewis Gun magazines. Situation hasn't changed since last report except of our posts have been withdrawn a little. Tenbroeke reports his left in the air & R.C.R. the same on their right. Enemy is concentrating in fields about 300 yds E of PELVES. We have no observation on our front and anticipate his counter move will take place on our front as well.

Did you receive all my messages this afternoon If not copies herewith. Can you arrange S.A.A. supply. Our signallers have been working for an hour or more. We have 1<sup>st</sup> CMR – an Artillery Group – and the RCR but can get no answer from BHQ.

Can you send those runners of mine back

(Sgd.) A.C. White Lt

Time

7.40 pm

O.C. Right flank

By runner

-----  
26.6.8.18.

Adjutant

Coy has one platoon located in DEVILS TRENCH at approx. I.32.a and c. Casualties light.

O.C. RIGHT FRONT LINE reports enemy presence on Crest at I 34 Central. Arranged with O.C. LEFT LINE and have already sent him two Support platoons.

Enemy Artillery increasing in violence.

(Sgd.) J.N. Edgar Capt

O.C. Supports.

Coy H.Q. at

I 32. a 05.35

By Runner.

-----  
The men & especially N.C.Os are all in – absolutely played out. 26.8.18.  
Adjutant P.P.C.L.I.

I have taken over No 1 Coy, Lieut. White being in charge of the right half of the front line which is made up of No 1 Coy & parts of 2,3 & 4 Coys.

I find there are 57 O.Rs left in No 1 Coy which came in with 4 Officers and 124 O.Rs. I am reorganizing the Company into two platoons placing Sergt. Schell in charge of one 7 Sergt Bredin in charge of the other. They & Sergt Green who came in as Coy S.M. are the only sergeants left.

I have a listening post out about 50 yards & also a M.G. post.

Everything is quiet at present. I am trying to get out a list of Casualties but it will take some time.

Time 11.25 p.m. (Sgd.) C.A. Grant Lt.  
By Runner O.C. no 1. Coy

-----  
26.8.18.

The Adj.  
P.P.C.L.I.

Situation quiet except for enemy bombing parties coming up STOKES TRENCH. MG fire active. Only signs of enemy preparing to retreat is that no ammunitions & no dumps have been found in their trenches.

No S.O.S. was sent by me to Bde R.C.

(Sgd.) M. Tenbroeke Capt  
O.C. 2 Coy.

-----  
26.8.18.

The Adj.  
P.P.C.L.I.

Is there any possible way of sending S.B. up to carry out wounded. Some very serious cases & I have no stretchers with me.

(Sgd.) M. Tenbroeke  
Capt  
O.C. 2 Coy

Ref Map  
CAMBRAI Rd.  
Map location of Coy H.Q. Approx I 32 b.2.6.

in Cartridge Trench.

-----

Time 4.45 pm 26-8-18

[5]1<sup>st</sup> Div on our left have reached I.10.c and still going with light casualties a few Enemy prisoner was taken

?? P.P.C.L.I.

-----

MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix..SM..... Code...HGPM Words 31... Sent, or sent out. Office Stamp.

Received from...F..... By ...Carpenter...

K  
26/8/18

Handed in at....CZG.....

Office.....m.

Received ..9.45 p.m.

TO P.P.C.L.I.

\* Sender's Number.  
G 150

Day of Month  
26

In reply to Number. AAA

It being very important to identify fresh enemy forces bns should wire immediately fresh numerals on shoulder straps example 15 men 235 on shoulder strap

FROM RUPO  
PLACE & TIME 8.30 P.M.

-----

26.8.18.

Adjutant

Will endeavour to get you the information required by Bgde as to identification. Prisoners passing through here today wore numerals – 50 and 362.

The former being Prussian & the latter Saxon.

(Sgd.) J.N.E.

-----  
Sketch of [Coy Hdqrs. I 32 d 3783](#) with message from Lt. A.C. White.

-----  
C.W. 6  
C.O. P.P.C.L.I.

Aug 26/18

This evening about 8 pm I saw enemy movement on our front. Also an enemy party came in on our ~~left rear~~ on right rear- on right of RCR. – Considerable organized movement was observed on left about PELVES. Not having at the time any S.O.S. I flashed the S.O.S. in the hope that Artillery might pick it up. I now have 2 RRR – Signals for S.O.S.

(Sgd.) A.C. White Lt

Time. 11.45  
p.m.

O.C. Right

-----  
No 3 Coy  
27.8.18

To

C.O.-

The Adjutant having phoned me and wishes me to convey the following to you Two Companies of the R.C.R. to relieve the 49<sup>th</sup> are in posit trench in rear of the 49<sup>th</sup> but will be unable to take over before dusk.

2 Four Bgde M.G's have reported at B.H.Q. the Adj wishes to know if you require these on Right or Left flank – or to engage in indirect fire

(Sgd.) J.N. Edgar Capt  
O.C. 3 Coy.

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix...SM...

I am established on line I.34 B 9510 to I. 35. A 2050      aaa  
42<sup>nd</sup> on right in touch    aaa    3 Coy now filtering forward to  
victoria copse    aaa    tenbroeke believed on left edge of  
jigsaw wood    aaa    have got 2 platoons rcr up and they are



O.C. 2 Coy.

2708018

- 1 – 11000 rounds S.A.A. ~~and 100 bombs for tomorrow tonight.~~ Will send 200 bombs tomorrow.
- 2 – 'A' Coy R.C.R. is not to go to you. It was a mistake of Col. Stewart notifying O.C. "A" Coy.
- 3 – The 49<sup>th</sup> have been ordered to take PELVIS [PELVES] tomorrow at dawn, and they will probably operate from your left post. Get in touch with them as soon as you can before and after the attack.

9.30

(Sgd.) A. R. Chipman

-----

C.W. 13 Aug 27/18

C.O.- P.P.C.L.I.

I am re-organizing the line with 1. Coy on right Total 68 O.R. Lt Grant in charge 1½ platoon of 3 Coy in centre – approx 35 men  
13 and 14 platoons – 4 Coy – on left – approx. 45 O.R. under Lt Barclay.  
We have a fairly good supply of S.A.A. – not many bombs – Have some S.O.S. rockets –

We have 4 Lewis guns in 1 Coy  
4 „ „ in 4 „  
(approx) 4 „ „ „ 3 „  
fair number of magazines

Time 9.15 pm

(Sgd.) A.C. White Lt  
O.C. Right

-----

27.8.18

Adjt P.P.C.L.I.

More of my men have shown up during the night and I now have 68 O.Rs. I enclose Casualty list showing 4 Officers and 56 O.R's Total 60.

Mr White is reporting on the situation.

(Sgd.) C.A. Grant Lieut.

Time 9.30 A.M.  
By Runner.

O.C. No 1 Coy

-----  
Aug 27-18

C.O. – P.P.C.L.I.

Runner from 58<sup>th</sup> Bn "A" Coy reports they have gained their objective and that their "B" & "D" also "C" went through and gained their objective. The explanation given by runner indicates that B du Sart is in our hands.

But in front of Tenbroeke the enemy is very busy with M.G.s and is catching us [inserted: with fire] on the flank – He is inflicting a few casualties.

Lt McKay was hit from this cause.

Time 7.15 a.m. (Sgd.) A.C. White  
By runner Lt  
O.C. Right

-----

C.O. P.P.C.L.I.

This message was sent by a new man who could not find any one to deliver it to D

9.15 a.m. (Sgd.) A.C.W.

-----

CW 11

Aug 27/18

C.O. P.P.C.L.I.

Situation far from satisfactory. Enemy are still strong in position on left in front of 2 Coy and my left.

58<sup>th</sup> advanced clear through to SART wood without much trouble but were unaware that their left flank was absolutely open. I have seen their 2 i/c and he has now left to get back to the 58<sup>th</sup> Hdqrs. He states that after arriving at the objective they were fired at heavily from their left rear and he had to withdraw. They lost quite a lot of men in doing so, but he thinks some of the men are still up there The Coy to the right of his left Coy apparently did not withdraw. The 2 i/c got back here but states their left flank exposed and no flank formed. He is now trying to get some one up to cover this flank.

We are being subjected to sniping & M.G. fire from our left front and from our left in front of 2 Coy – This is preventing any movement in the open and any advance by us would mean heavy casualties.

~~He is~~ Enemy is searching around with 5.9s

R.C.R.s state things more satisfactory on right since 58<sup>th</sup> advance.

Time 8 50 am

(Sgd.) A.C. White Lt  
O.C. Right

-----  
Aug 27/18

Chip

We are all blooming tired, so if you don't get very full information tonight it is because ~~it is~~ all the men are getting some sleep.

Do you happen to have a cup of tea to spare?  
Good stuff, the rations coming.

(Sgd.) AC  
-----

Report on Bombing Attack

27.8.18.

Lieut. Robb with party proceeded down trench at 6.00 p.m. No opposition was met for about 200 yds when a few Bosche were encountered. As the attack progressed the opposition was more strenuous especially at I.26.a.60.00 where party was compelled to fall back as enemy was getting into trench from their rear, tho the L. Guns were keeping up a heavy fire  
The enemy had all their packs packed and ready in the trench full marching order.  
Four of our men are missing two were seen to be wounded and believed killed.

One prisoner was taken and party inflicted heavy casualties on enemy.

Capt. Tenbroeke.  
(Signed.) O.C. 2 Coy

Ref. Map  
Cambrai Road  
-----

OPERATION ORDER.

Reference Map. P.P.C.L.I. 27.8.18  
Cambrai Road. No 2. Coy.

(BOMBING ATTACK.)

Information. Enemy occupying FRICTION TRENCH were supposed to be retiring.

Intention. To bomb down FRICTION TRENCH from junction of Faction and FRICTON Trenches, towards PELVES and if successful to occupy FRICTON TRENCH, clear enemy from PELVES, , and establish outpost ????? east of village and southwards towards FACTION TRENCH.

Artillery. To put down 10 minutes intense barrage on FRICTON and GRENADE Trenches and then lift to cover the attack.

Party. Officers 1 Bombers 8  
Carriers 10 L. Guns 2 Crews  
O.R's :- 2 L.G. Crews and 10  
men to garrison in trench and  
consolidate  
Bombing party from No 4 Coy to work in conjunction with 2 Coy & bomb down  
GRENADE TRENCH.

Signed Capt Tenbroeke,

O.C. No 2 Coy.

-----  
"OPERATION ORDER"

Reference Map.  
Cambrai Road

August 27/18

Right flank P.P.C.L.I.

Information. Enemy parties occupy Cartridge-Grenade Trench – Friction Trench on N.W. side of sunken road to PELVES – We occupy Faction Trench.

Intention. To proceed along Friction and Cartridge Trenches and mop up and to take PELVES – to establish line between PELVES and Reeling Cops.

Instructions. No 2 Coy are bombing down FRICTION TRENCH to PELVES and exploiting C.T.'s to Cartridge & Grenade.

Lt. OGILVIE with 1 Section from 14 Platoon – 2 Lewis Guns from 3 Coy. and bombers will proceed up FUEL TRENCH and down

CARTRIDGE Trench and connect up with Lieut BARCLAY.

On Lt. Barclay proceeding down Cartridge Trench - Lt. Ogilvie will follow at a distance of about 100 yds and establish block in STOKES Trench. - Lieut C.A.GRANT with 1 Coy will be prepared to establish the lines of CARTRIDGE and GRENADE TRENCH if necessary.

Lt MacPHERSON will act as liaison officer.

Coy. Hdqrs will be at I.32.d.00.50 junction sap and FACTION.

No 2 Coy. will commence operations at 6.00 p.m.

We will co-operate at that time.

(Signed) A.C. White  
Lieut. & O.C. Right Flank Coy.

Copy 7th C.I.B.

-----  
No. 20

28-8-18

O.C. 2 Coy

The 49th have taken PELVES and are moving forward to establish line in HATCH and KIT trench. Bde have ordered us to conform with them. Keep well in touch with 49th and move forward with them so that line will be continuous.

7.30 am -by runner (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
Lt.- Ad.

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix...S.M..... Code..LKAn..

Handed in at..K.B...

TO K

\* Sender's Number Day of Month.

Have received no instructions re advancing but am pushing up

to TRUNK TRENCH now to conform with 42nd and 49th battns  
aaa Will then try JIGSAW WOOD aaa Is this right

FROM Right Flank  
PLACE & TIME

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix...S.M..... Code..MDPM..

Handed in at..K.B...

TO K

\* Sender's Number Day of Month.

Have sent 80 men forward to TRUNK TRENCH under Lts MACPHERSON  
and E. DANIELS aaa will await word from them and then advance with  
remainder if situation satisfactory

FROM OC RIGHT  
PLACE & TIME

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix...S.M..... Code..MDPM..

Handed in at..K.B...

TO K

\* Sender's Number Day of Month.

My observers report Lt MCPHERSON and party in TRUNK  
TRENCH locality aaa

FROM OC RIGHT  
PLACE & TIME

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix...S.M..... Code.....

Handed in at..K.B...

TO K

~~2 Am at~~

Lt Mcpherson is pushing through JIGSAW WOOD on right and 42nd are on our right aaa Edgar is in valley aaa Grant is coming up

FROM OC Right 1.20 PM  
PLACE & TIME

-----  
No. 22

Hqtrs 3 Coy

Send over to the B.H.Q. the fatigue party of 12 men left there by Capt. Edgar. They are to come over at once.

by runner (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
12.50 Lt-Adjt

-----  
No. 23

O.C. 2 Coy.

1. Congratulations-
2. Have been promised by Bde Major that help will be sent you at once for your left flank.
3. Bombs have gone up to you but no S.A.A. available. Get what you can nearby from the casualties.
4. Battn is being relieved tonight C.O and Kelly have gone up to you.
5. Jug of rum herewith, or what is left of it.  
The 42 nd are in touch on our right & are reported to be in I.34.  
Best of luck sorry we have no rations, but here's a tin of water which is all we have.

5.00 A.m. (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman  
Lt-Adjt

28.8.18.

The Adj.

P.P.C.L.I.

I have got thro Jigsaw wood except one little copse 50 yds in front of me. No opposition. I have got a L.G. with 3 men & 2 other men only. My left is absolutely in the air as 49<sup>th</sup> did not come up I am on the extreme L. of wood. watching the flank. Went thro the wood and got in touch with McPherson & 42 Bn. Don't know what strength they are. Mac is rounding up all men in wood & we intend going just thro E end of wood & consolidating only 1 M.G. firing at us from the front, & a two from the L. Must have some men on my left. No opposition would go on if we had the men & felt fit. Enemy just started shelling wood. ~~The Enemy~~ Coy are all mixed up but I guess we can hold out. S.A.A. is very short also. Loptson & CSM Novice have just located me with a few men. But do something about the L flank. Casualties few considering. Map location of my position I29C 00.70 Let me know by return who are coming up on L. & what the situation is on their left. Also any information about the R flank.

2.30 P.M. By Runner.

Ref Map 51b N.W.

(Sgd.) M. Tenbroeke  
Capt

1/20000

O.C. 2 Coy.

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

TO K

\* Sender's Number Day of Month.

My party at JIGSAW WOOD with right flank at I.34.a.95.20 aaa  
We are pushing through wood to EAST side aaa Three Coy on  
our left 42 on our right aaa Do not know whereabouts 2 Coy.  
aaa Enemy holding Trench approx I 34 b 80.80  
FROM Casualties very light.  
PLACE & TIME White O.C. Right.

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix...S.M..... Code..DPM..

Handed in at..K.B...

TO

\* Sender's Number                      Day of Month.

We are through Jigsaw Wood on right aaa 42nd are in I 34 D and are going forward aaa Enemy do not seem to be holding trench on my front and I am going to push forward to it aaa Grant wounded aaa 3 Coy on left not clear of wood but are not meeting any opposition from their front aaa Enemy still holding on extreme left

FROM                                      OC RIGHT  
PLACE & TIME

-----

MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix...S.M..... Code..SPM..

Handed in at..K.B...

TO    K

\* Sender's Number                      Day of Month.

Men very exhausted aaa can we expect relief

FROM                                      OC Right  
PLACE & TIME                      6.15 P.M.

-----

26.8.18.

The Adj.

O.C. A Coy. R C R has just reported to me at saps Col Stewart ordered him to ~~report~~ form a defensive flank on my left.

A. Coy. R C R is at present on the R. of Bn in long Trench. I have two Coys RCR in my rear in Angle trench and am connecting up with them. Has A. Coy to report tome also.

"A" Coy does  
not report

(Sgd.) M. Tenbroeke  
O.C. 2 Coy. Capt.

-----  
Aug 28/18

K

I am in Trench E of Wood & working to left - AAA. Enemy retiring –  
AAA Can 49<sup>th</sup> come up on left as we a the enemy is not strong.

5-40 pm (Sgd.) WHITE  
O.C. Right

-----

K.

Aug 28/18

We are through JIGSAW WOOD on right AAA. 42nd are  
in trench at in I 34 d and are going forward. AAA Enemy do not  
seem to be holding trench on my front. and I am going to push forward  
to it. AAA. Grant wounded. AAA. 3 Coy on left not clear of wood  
but are not meeting any opposition from the front – AAA. Enemy still  
holdi[ng] on extreme left.

(Sgd.) White  
O.C. Right

-----

Aug 28/18

K.

I am established on line I 34 b 9510 to I 35 a 2050 AAA  
42nd on right in touch AAA. 3 Coy now filtering forward to Victoria  
Copse AAA. Tenbroeke believed on left edge of Jigsaw Wood. AAA.  
Have got 2 platoons R.C.R. up and they are moving to left to fill up gap  
to the 49<sup>th</sup> AAA. Enemy about 1000 yds away on my left - AAA  
Our artillery has been firing short & I had to withdraw to present line.

6.55 p.m. (Sgd.) WHITE  
O.C. Right

-----

28/Aug/18

K.



12.45 pm O.C. Right  
(Sgd.) A.C. White Lt

Sent at 11.05 PM

-----

Aug 28/18

K

I am at  
LT MacPHERSON is pushing through JIGSAW WOOD 49<sup>th</sup> Right and 42<sup>nd</sup> are  
on our right. AAA J EDGAR is in valley. AAA

GRANT is coming up

(Sgd.) O.C. Right.

1.20 pm

-----

Statement of Prisoners & M guns from Coy

2 last night  
1 this morning  
(about 50prisoners)

-----

Capt. MacBrayne!

Let me have total estimated casualties for Bde. They want it  
urgently Give me an approx idea, Off. & O.Rs.

29-8-18 J.W.D.  
Lt & adj

			O	116
O.P. Coys				<u>19</u>
PP				135

Let me have above at once.

	Off. K.	Off. W.	O.R.K.	O.R.W.
1 Coy	1	1	4 ?	20 ?
2 „	1	1	2	32
3 „	1	-	10	25
4 „	(?)	2	3	39
H.Q. „	2			

This is exclusive of 17 missing from No. 3 Coy

(Sgd.) E.M. MacBrayne  
Capt

---

Capt. Mac Brayne

To O C.

List being prepared and will be sent as soon as completed.

(Sgd) H.T.I. Lee  
Lieut  
Act O.C. 3 Coy

---

K  
C.O.

Aug 28/18

Have sent [inserted 80 men] forward to TRUNK TRENCH under LTS MacPHERSON and DANIELS – ~~REMA~~ AAA Will await word from them and then advance if with remainder if situation satisfactory

(Sgd.) A.C. White  
12.20 pm O.C. Right

sent 12.30 P.M.

---

No. 19

Lieut. White

Col. Stewart has just advised me that the 42nd relieve the 58<sup>th</sup> tonight, so keep in touch after the relief. The 49th are (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman taking PELVES in the morning , so maintain Lt - Adj touch on both your flanks – would like narrative of your operation tonight

---

No. 21

Lieut White

28-8-18

The 7<sup>th</sup> Bde have to take JIGSAW WOOD today. The 49th goal is from the left the 42nd on the right and ourselves in the centre.-Edgar has gone to see you to give you details. Keep in touch with the 42nd and advance with them.

After the ???? is breached push out patrols and advance in conformity with Tenbroeke on your left & 42nd on your right – If possible show this to Tenbroeke.

11.45 a.m. (Sgd.) A.R. Chipman

-----  
Warning Order No. 23

To 1 & 2 Coys 28-8-18

- 1 – The battalion will be relieved tonight by Motor Mach. Gun Bde.
- 2 – Lewis guns will be carried out to ration dump, approx H.36.c.6.3.  
Guides from B.H.Q. will lead the Coys to ration dump from B.H.Q. –  
All Coys will come out by way of B.H.Q. to get their guides
- 3 – Coy Commanders horses will be at ration dump.
- 4 – Battn will billet at or near ARRAS for the night.
- 5 – Details later

(Sgd. A.R. Chipman  
Lt & Adjt  
By runner  
3.10 p.m.

-----  
Instructions re relief

- 1 – The battalion is being relieved tonight by the motor machine gun brigade
- 2 – ~~No definitive instructions have yet been received and will move~~  
**Arras**
- 3 – ~~Coys will~~ Lewis gun Limbers & Coy Commanders horses will be at ration dump approx (H.36.c.6.3) at 1.00 a.m. – ~~Lewis Guns Co~~  
Coys should be collected & brought out by way of B.H.Q. and guides from B.H.Q. will lead them to dump and we will then make our way to destination.
- 4 – This is not an ordinary relief There will be no handing over by Coys , as no infantry are coming in.- Bde will advise us, when M. guns are in position, & tell us to move o (?)

On receipt of this information we will flash from our Signal lamp at B.H.Q. the code word "JAKE".- Coys will ~~have runners at the lamp station in Jigsaw SAW WOOD and ?????? of the ??????word they will~~

And all Coys will ~~move~~ then move out independently, via BHQ – the Coy nearest the RCR will advise them, and they are to come out with us.

As the R.C.R. Coys will get no information from its Battalion H.Q.

- Col. Willetts asked us to do this –

Coys will arrange to have runners at [inserted: our] lamp station just this side of JIGSAW WOOD to carry receipt of Code word quickly to Coy H.Q.

Lamp Station must O.K. receipt of Code word.

-----

P.P.C.L.I.

SECRET

Copy No.3.

7<sup>th</sup> Canadian Infantry Brigade  
Operation Order No 169

Ref. Map.

CAMBRAI ROAD  
1/20000

28:8:18.

1. The 7<sup>th</sup> CIB will be relieved night 28<sup>th</sup>/29<sup>th</sup> August by the Canadian Composite Brigade.
2. Method of relief as follows
  - (a) The 42<sup>nd</sup> Bn and the P.P.C.L.I. will be relieved by the 1<sup>st</sup> Group C.C. Brigade
  - (b) The 49<sup>th</sup> Bn will be relieved by the 2<sup>nd</sup> Group C.C. Brigade.
  - (c) The R.C.R. and 7<sup>th</sup> T.M B will not be relieved direct by any unit of the C.C. Brigade. The 3<sup>rd</sup> Group C.C. Brigade are going into support in FACTION TRENCH (I 32 a & I 26 c).
  - (d).The Groups of the C.C. Brig are moving forward and will take up a position on our present front line. When all Groups are in position the units of the 7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B. will be ordered by their headquarters to withdraw. No withdrawal to be made until receipt of Order
  - (E) To facilitate relief 7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B. units will give every assistance to representatives of C C Brigade
  - (F) Units should arrange for communications with Companies etc so that there may be no delay when order to withdraw is received.
3. When order to withdraw has been received units will move independently to ARRAS. If it is considered that troops are unable to make the march direct Commanding [inserted: Officers] may at their discretion make a halt for the balance of the night in the Area H 34 and H 28. If this is done Bgde H.Qs will be so advised.

4. Rear Bgde H.Q.s will arrange for guides on the ARRAS-CAMBRAI ROAD at about G 29 d central to guide units to billets in ARRAS.

-----

**Sun, Sep 1, 1918 ARRAS, FRANCE**

HAUTE AVESNES Sept 1. 1918 Rain showers in morning - fine in p.m. Battalion moves from ARRAS by road to HAUTES AVESNES billets

**Mon, Sep 2, 1918 HAUTE AVESNES, FRANCE**

ARRAS 2.9.18 Rain & cold. The Battalion moves from HAUTE AVESNES to Eastern outskirts of ARRAS. LIEUTS ALDRIDGE & HANCOCK taken on strength. LIEUT A.L. DOVE struck off strength to R.A.F. Capt TENBROEKE M.C. assumes the duties of 2i/c.

**Tue, Sep 3, 1918 ARRAS, FRANCE**

ARRAS 3.9.18 Cold & cloudy. LIEUT C.A. Grant now reported died of wounds.

**Wed, Sep 4, 1918 ARRAS, FRANCE**

VIS EN ARTOIS 4.9.18 Fair & warmer. Battalion moves from ARRAS to just E. of VIS EN ARTOIS bivouacking in open.

**Thu, Sep 5, 1918 EAST OF VIS-EN-ARTOIS, FRANCE**

P.31.& 32 5.9.18 Rain in early morning clearing later. The Battalion moves up to P. 31 & 32 in DROCOURT QUEANT line – in Divisional reserve.

**Fri, Sep 6 to Thu, Sep 19, 1918 WEST OF CAGNICOURT, FRANCE**

P 31. & 32 6.9.18 to 19.9.18 During this period the Battalion remained in the Avion area carrying out such training as was possible under the conditions. The weather was for the most part rainy - with several very heavy thunderstorms. There was considerable intermittent Enemy shelling of all the back areas resulting in 1 O.R. killed - and much night bombing. The Battalion furnished working parties throughout most of this period. On Sept 7<sup>th</sup> 27 O.R. joined & 3 were struck off strength

On Sept 13<sup>th</sup> 22 O.R. joined and the following officers were taken on strength. Capt. F.L. SHOULDICE – LIEUTS J. MACKAY [1683] - H.T.I. LE [[H.T.I. Lee](#), 475916] – G. TRIGGS [1766] – R. PATON [475983] – C. FREDERICKSON [51156] – R.D. MILLYARD [478280] – N. MURRAY [*McG* 55] – G.C. WORKMAN [[E.C. Workman](#), 1311] & A.J. ROBINS [1280].

On Sept 19th the Battalion moved back to bivouacs occupied by 52nd Battalion just W. of VIS EN ARTOIS arriving there in the early morning of the 20th being relieved by the 56th Division - after which they marched to CROISILLES entraining there at 4.30 p.m. - detraining at DAINVILLE and marching to BERNAVILLE huts

**Fri, Sep 20, 1918 WEST OF VIS-EN-ARTOIS, FRANCE**

BERNAVILLE 20.9.18 Heavy showers. ~~The following~~ A letter was received from the G.O.C. 7th Brigade complimenting the Battalion on the salvage salvaged for the past week. The undermentioned decorations were published for services rendered in the AMIENS operations

French CROIX de GUERRE awarded by the 47 French Division

LT. Col. C.J.T. STEWART D.S.O.

LT. J.W. JEAKINS [*McG 230*]

SGT H.C. RICKABY [*McG 126*]

Corp. P.D. EDGAR HAM [*475871*]

Pte. R. FENTON [*769490*]

Pte. J. CARSCADDEN [[\*Garscadden\*](#),*157583*] (Killed in action 10/9/18)

40 O.R. join

C.S.M. Peacock C. [*1116*] (M.C.) appointed a Temporary Lieut. .

**Sat, Sep 21, 1918    BERNAVILLE, FRANCE**

BERNAVILLE 21/9/18 Rain - Coy training

**Sun, Sep 22, 1918    BERNAVILLE, FRANCE**

BERNAVILLE 22/9/18 Rain - Heavy wind - Colour parade in morning

**Mon, Sep 23, 1918    BERNAVILLE, FRANCE**

BERNAVILLE 23/9/18 Unsettled. Drill & training. LIEUT A.R. JONES joins.

**Tue, Sep 24, 1918    BERNAVILLE, FRANCE**

BERNAVILLE 24/9/18 Cloudy. Daylight bombing in morning - 1 O.R. killed and 5 O.R. wounded - 2 d. of w.

**Wed, Sep 25, 1918    BERNAVILLE, FRANCE**

Bernaville 25/9/18 Clear & cold. LT. J.E. KEELER struck off strength on being attached to 7 C.T.M. Battery.

**Thu, Sep 26, 1918    BERNAVILLE, FRANCE**

BERNAVILLE 26/9/18 Fair rain at night. Battalion moves forward by bus in evening to N of QUEANT

**Fri, Sep 27 to Mon, Sep 30, 1918    BATTLE OF CANAL DU NORD, FRANCE**

BERNAVILLE 27/9/18 to 30/9/18 The narrative marked C. attached to this Diary contains an account of the operations during this period.

*[Note transcriber: During September, 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Captain George W. Little.]*

## APPENDICES SEPTEMBER 1918.

### Appendix "C"

#### PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY

Ref. Maps:-

Sheets 51A S.E.

„ 51A S.W OPERATIONS OF THE P.P.C.L.I. FROM.

„ 57C N.W. SEPTEMBER 27TH UNTIL OCTOBER 1ST

„ 57B N.W. 1918, INCLUSIVE.

-----

#### 1. PRELIMINARY INCLUDING SEPTEMBER 27TH, 1918.

The Battalion moved from the DAINVILLE Area, where it had been resting, on the night of September 26th 1918, embussing at DAINVILLE for the move to the Assembly Position in the forward area, the Transport moving independently.

Each Company had five Officers with seven Officers attached to Battalion Headquarters, Lieut-Col. C. J. T. Stewart, D.S.O., being in Command with Company Commanders as follows:-

No. 1 Coy. - Capt. R. MacG. MacBrayne.

No. 2 Coy. - Capt. G. W. Guiou M.C.

No. 3 Coy. - Capt. J. N. Edgar.

No. 4 Coy. - Capt. F. L. Shouldice.

Company strengths averaged about 115 with sixty Other Ranks attached to Battalion Hqrs.

Debussing at BULLECOURT in the early hours of the morning of September 27th, the Battalion marched to the preliminary Assembly Area, slightly to the North of QUEANT, where they remained until 8-20 a.m. They again moved forward through INCHY and crossed the Canal, taking up a position near QUARRY WOOD, where they remained until 6 o'clock in the evening. From this point they worked their way forward, until at about 3-30 on the morning of September 28th, the Battalion was assembled in the rear of the 85th Battalion of the 4th Division.

#### 2. NARRATIVE COVERING SEPTEMBER 28TH, 29TH, 30TH AND OCTOBER 1ST.

September 28th:-

The R.C.R. having attacked at MARCOING System in F.5 and 11, and being temporarily checked, the P.P.C.L.I. was diverted slightly to the left and ordered to assist in clearing up the situation of the left of the Divisional Boundary, about the villages of RAILLENCOURT and SAILLY.

This situation offered no great difficulty and was soon put right by Nos. 1 and 4 Coys assisting the Right Battalion of the 4th Division.

During the morning, while the R.C.R. was engaging the MARCOING System, the Commanding Officer Lieut-Col. C. J. T. Stewart D.S.O., was killed and Captain G. W. Guiou M.C. in Command of No. 2 Coy and Lieut. A. P. Linnell were wounded. Lieut. A. J. Knowling was also killed. Captain J. N. Edgar of No. 3 Coy, took command of the Battalion.

During the afternoon preparations were made for an assault by the P.P.C.L.I. on the Left, the 49th Battalion on the Right co-operating with the Battalion of the 4th Division on the Left of the Brigade, for an attack across the CAMBRAI-DOUAI Road, the Railway Cutting and Embankment, towards the Final Objective of the Division.

The attack was launched at 7-00 p.m. under a most effective barrage with Nos. 2 and 3 Coys in the Front line, the attack being immediately successful as far as the heavy wire on the South-West side of the CAMBRAI-DOUAI Road. This wire, which was an unforeseen obstacle, proved insurmountable, and eventually orders were given that the Battalion should withdraw to the Railway running through X.30 slightly to the North-East of SAILLY. This withdrawal was carried out during the night of September 28th to 29th.

In this attack Lieuts. Triggs, Robins and Ramsay were killed and Lieuts. Robb, Workman and Loptson were wounded, the latter dying during the day of the 29th.

#### September 29th:-

The Battalion spent the day in the Area of X.30., no attempt being made to push forward.

Capt. G. W. LITTLE assumed Command on the afternoon of September 29th with instructions to at once prepare for an attack on the Railway Embankment in S.20 and the village of TILLOY in S.21 and 27.

#### September 30th:-

Orders were issued in the early morning of September 30th for the Battalion to move to an Assembly Area in S.19 and prepare to jump off at 6-00 a.m. The plan was that the P.P.C.L.I. , having crossed the Railway, should swing to the East and South-East and make good the Railway Cutting, the Village of TILLOY as far forward as the main TILLOY-BLECOURT Road, from the fork roads in S.21.b to the Railway Embankment, to gain the high ground in S.22. and push forward patrols with a view to seizing the bridgehead-PONT D' AWE, being decided upon.

At 6-00 a.m. the attack was made with Nos. 1, 2 and 4 Coys front line and No. 3 Coy in Support. Rapid progress was made as far as the road running from S.21.b.60.80. to S.27.a.40.60. From this point the advance was still continued on the right by No. 4 Coy, who reached their Objective at the juncture of the main TILLOY-BLECOURT Road and Embankment. Nos. 1 and 2 Coys on the Left and No. 3 Coy in Support were suffering very heavy casualties from Machine Gun fire

from the village and from the high ground to the North, and we were eventually forced to withdraw to the Railway. By this time most of the Officers and N.C.O.s had been knocked out and the Coys were badly disorganized. Capt. J. N. Edgar and Lieut. A. J. Kelly reorganized as far as possible, again pushed forward, this time being successful in investing the greater part of the village. Attempts were twice made to push forward through the village as far as the left portion of our Objective. These were unsuccessful in spite of material assistance supplied by one Coy of the 49th Battalion (E.R.), owing to the continued violent Machine Gun fire from the North.

By evening a line of posts had been established running from the juncture of the railway and the TILLOY-BLECOURT Road straight North about 500 yards along the road, thence bending North-West and West, so as to include TILLOY Farm within our lines.

This line was maintained during the night.

On this day Capt. MACBRAYNE, Lieuts. JONES, LEE, MACKAY and PATON were wounded and Lieut. MILLYARD missing.

#### October 1st:-

On the morning of October 1st, Units of the 9th Canadian Infantry Brigade jumped off from a line slightly within our system of posts, our personnel being withdrawn behind the jumping-off position two hours before Zero. After the attack had gone forward the morning was spent in re-organization and searching for casualties until about 2-00 p.m. when the Battalion was withdrawn to bivouacs west and North-West of BOURLON WOOD.

### 3. REMARKS.

#### ARTILLERY:-

Barrage work was most effective in all cases. Barrage did not prove satisfactory in the case of the wire in front of the CAMBRAI-DOUAI Road, nor the Machine Gun Nests in and to the North of TILLOY. The concentration of several minutes such as was employed on the Railway on the morning of September 30th appears to be absolutely necessary in such a case.

#### TANKS:-

Tanks did not figure largely but the three in use on the morning of September 30th proved of little value as they went out of commission early in the attack. The Machine Gun nests which held up our Left would undoubtedly have been effectively dealt with had they remained in commission.

#### MACHINE GUNS:-

Various numbers of heavy machine guns were assigned to the Battalion during the different phases of the attack. Although quite willing to assist the Infantry, it seems that the Infantry have not sufficient understanding of the use that can be made of this weapon, and as the commanders of these machine gun groups usually depend on

the Infantry commander to take the initiative in offensive operations, many good opportunities for their employment were lost.

#### LEWIS GUNS:-

Lewis Guns proved very effective but in themselves did not give a superiority of fire over a nest of heavy enemy machine guns.

#### STOKES MORTARS:-

Stokes Mortars did a large amount of damage on the railway on the morning of September 30th where they placed a heavy barrage. This weapon seems to be very accurate and effective in dealing with such places as sunken roads and cuttings.

RIFLE GRENADES:-           NIL.

BOMBS:-                        NIL.

#### RIFLE AND BAYONET:-

Too great reliance is placed on the fire of the Lewis Gun Sections. Men are not sufficiently trained to understand the value of covering fire, and as a Platoon Commander in the stress of the attack is unable to co-ordinate the work of all his sections, Lewis Guns are usually found to be acting on their own. The fact that great rifle power is in their own hands is overlooked – sections look to the Lewis Gun to supply the whole of it.

#### 4. CAPTURES ETC.:-

(a) Large numbers of the enemy were captured, but no attempt was made to escort them. They were immediately passed through our lines, becoming available for stretcher-bearing duty, or passing straight through to the rear. On this account no numbers are available nor the identifications.

(b) Guns, howitzers and machine guns, where encountered, were immediately over-run, and no notes of their numbers or positions were taken. A very large number of Machine Guns were over-run in this way in the railway and in TILLOY, but no attempt was made to record their number.

#### 5. CASUALTIES.

Officers:-       6 killed,       9 Wounded,   1 Wounded at duty.  
                          1 Missing Believed killed.

Other Ranks:-

Approximately 375 killed, wounded and missing.

The proportions of these being not now available but the proportion of wounded is believed to be high.

#### 6. LESSONS LEARNED FROM OPERATIONS:-

(a) It is not sufficient to rely alone on aerial photographs for the locating of wire etc. Personal reconnaissance seems to be absolutely necessary. An extremely formidable belt of wire on the CAMBRAI-DOUAI Road

appeared on none of the maps in use, although it had apparently been in position for a considerable length of time. It is recognized, however, that a personal reconnaissance is not now always possible.

(b) The closest possible liaison between Battalions is of great value. Battalion HQrs of all Units were close together, and necessary information from participating Units was readily at hand. In this way, communications with Report Centres and Rear HQrs are much more easily kept up½

((c) Orders written or verbal to Units should be as simple as possible. Headquarters of Coys or even Battalions are usually established where lights are not available and great difficulty is met with in the study of maps, orders etc.

3rd October 1918

(Sgd.) George W. Little Captain

.....

Commanding P.P.C.L.I.

-----

See the following Aerial Photographs and the Barrage Map.

1. [Photo 20 9 18 5 pm of the Arras-Cambrai Road.](#)
2. [Ditto.](#)
3. [Ditto.](#)
4. [Photo 15 9 18 of Bournon and surroundings.](#)
5. [Ditto.](#)
6. [Barrage Map 7th CIB 30-9-18](#)

-----

7TH CANADIAN INFANTRY BRIGADE SECRET.

INSTRUCTIONS – NO. BM.100/3.

Copy no. 3.  
29-9-18.

1. The Canadian Corps will continue the advance on 29th September on the BROWN LINE.

The attack of the 3rd Canadian Division will be made by 8th Canadian Infantry Brigade on the Right and 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade on the Left.

The main attack of the 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade will be made by the 49th Canadian Battalion on the Right, and the 42nd Canadian Battalion on the Left.

2. (a) The 42nd Canadian Battalion will assemble in the Area, S.25.b. prior to Zero hour, and will attack in a North Easterly direction, and make good the high ground in S.16 and S.17, and seize a bridge head across the L'ESCAUT CANAL in S.24.
  - (b) The 49th Canadian Battalion will capture TILLOY, (Triangle), making good the high ground in S.22 Central, and seizing a bridge head over the L'ESCAUT CANAL East of CAMBRAI.
  - (c) The P.P.C.L.I. will be prepared to support the advance upon receipt of orders to do so.
  - (d) The R.C.R. will be in Reserve, and will await further orders.
3. When the high ground in S.16. ~~S.17, S.18~~ and S.22 has been taken, Battalions will feel their way down the Canal by means of patrols with the object of seizing bridge heads.
  4. The Attack will be carried out under a barrage moving as below ~~at the rate of 100 yards in (4) minutes.~~ The barrage will dwell on the first line for 20 minutes.

First Line of barrage will be :-

A.1.d.70.50. – S.26.a.50.50, to S.20.c.30.90.

5. ZERO HOUR will be 8.00 a.m. 29th September.
6. Two batteries, 3rd Bn. C.M.G.C. will come under orders of O.C. 42nd Canadian Battalion for the attack, and will report to him forthwith.
7. ACKNOWLEDGE.

(signed) ?????????

Major,  
Brigade Major,  
7th Canadian Infantry Brigade.

Copies to -

1. 3rd Canadian Division "G".
2. R. C. R.
3. P. P. C. L. I.
4. 42nd Canadian Battalion.

5. 49th Canadian Battalion.
6. 8th Cdn. Inf. Bde.
7. 9th Cdn. Inf. Bde.
8. 10th Cdn. Inf. Bde.
9. L. O. 3rd Cdn. Divl. Arty.
10. No. 2 Coy, 3rd Bn., C.M.G.C.

-----

x O + 20 – 64' – 100 yards in 4 minutes.

64' - 100' -	do	3	„	.
100' Onwards.	do	2	„	.

-----

### 7TH CANADIAN INFANTRY BRIGADE INSTRUCTIONS. SECRET.

Reference B.W. Secret Map No. 1.

Copy No. 3

1. The Canadian Corps will continue the advance tomorrow. The 3rd Canadian Division will take over frontage as indicated from the 4th Canadian Division on the BLUE LINE.
2. The Attack of the 3rd Canadian Division will be carried out by the 9th Canadian Infantry Brigade on the Right, and the 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade on the Left.  
Inter Brigade Boundary – F.9.central, Church Tower ST. ALIE, A.1.c.4.4. – S.27.c.9.0. – Canal at A.4.b.2.3, thence along L'ESCAUT CANAL.
3. The following are objectives of 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade:-
  - (a) MARCOING LINE.
  - (b) Road from A.2.c.4.9. to X.30.a.2.3.
  - (c) Railway from Right Boundary – S.28.c – S.20.b.
  - (d) The BROWN LINE and the exploitation of country beyond.
4. (a) The R. C. R. attacking on a two company front will be XXXXX responsible for Objectives (a) and (b) above.
  - (b) The P.P.C.L.I. will advance in close support to the R. C. R. on their attacking on Objectives (a) and (b).  
On objectives (b) being taken the P.P.C.L.I. will pass through the R. C. R., and make good Objectives (c) and (d).

- (c) The 49th Canadian Battalion will follow in the rear of the P.P.C.L.I. and take over a one company/ of approximately XXXXXXXX. frontage  
400 yards to the left of the Right Brigade Boundary on Objective (b), and will advance in line with the P.P.C.L.I. on Objectives "C" and "D"

The main object of the 49th Canadian Battalion being, in addition to making good their portion of Objectives (c) and (d), the denial of the Right Flank of the Brigade to the enemy, and the seizing of the bridge heads over L'ESCAUT Canal in our area.

5. The 42nd Canadian Battalion will move from preliminary assembly area in E.6.a. at ZERO plus 1 hour to BLUE line. When Objective (b) has been taken the Battalion will move forward to the Marcoing Line, but will not advance beyond this position without further orders.

#### 6. ACTION PRIOR TO ZERO HOUR.

The Brigade will be concentrated in the Area, E.6.a. and b, night 27th/28th September.

The R. C. R. will move prior to Zero to positions of assembly in immediate rear of the BLUE LINE.

The 49th Canadian Battalion will move from Preliminary Assembly Area in E.6 at Zero hour.

#### 7. ARTILLERY.

The attack up to Objective (c) will be carried out under a creeping barrage, moving 100 yards in (4) minutes; the barrage will commence on a line 200 yards East of BLUE LINE. Special arrangements will be made for artillery support beyond Objective (c).

#### 8. MACHINE GUNS.

One battery of No. 2 Coy., 3rd Bn., C.M.G.C. has been allotted to each battalion.

#### 9. STOKES MORTARS.

Two guns each will be allotted to the R. C. R. – P.P.C.L.I.-49th Canadian Battalion.

#### 10. TANKS.

4 Tanks are allotted to the Brigade for operation from the BLUE LINE.

The R. C. R. will make their own arrangements for obtaining two tanks that are kept in reserve to assist them in reaching

their final objective.

11. REPORTS.

All reports will be forwarded to Brigade H.Q. until Zero plus 90 minutes, when they will be sent to Report Centre approximately F.5.c.6.3.

12. MOVEMENT OF BRIGADE HEADQUARTERS.

Brigade Battle Headquarters will be established at F.1.b.0.8. prior to Zero hour, and will move from this point at a time to be notified later to the MARCOING LINE approximately F.5.c.6.3.

13. ACKNOWLEDGE.

(B.M. 100).

(signed) A. G?????

Major,

Brigade Major,

7th Canadian Infantry Brigade.

28-9-18.

Copies to –

1. 3rd Canadian Division.
2. R. C. R.
3. P.P.C.L.I.
4. 42nd Canadian Bn.
5. 49th Canadian Bn.
6. 7th Canadian T. M. Bty.
7. 9th Canadian Inf. Bde.
8. 10th Canadian Inf. Bde.
9. L. C. 3rd Cdn. Divl. Arty.

-----  
SECRET.  
-----

7th Canadian Infantry Brigade.  
-----

B.M.R. 100/5.

3rd Canadian Division "G"

R.C.R.  
P.P.C.L.I.  
42nd Canadian Bn.  
49th Canadian Bn.

-----

Reference 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade Instructions - B.M.R. 100/4 dated 29-9-18.

At ZERO plus 90 minutes the 42nd Canadian Battalion will move forward from present position, and will send two companies into the Railway Cutting on their immediate front, and two companies will go forward in support of the R.C.R. to the Sunken Road in S.15 b and d, from which position they will be prepared to support the R.C.R.

The P.P.C.L.I. after capturing TILLOY will be responsible for holding the Right Flank of the Brigade.

The 49th Canadian Battalion will be in Brigade Reserve, and will re-organize and await further orders in their present area.

ACKNOWLEDGE.

(Sgd.) ????????

Major,  
Brigade Major,  
7th Canadian Infantry Brigade.

29-9-18.

s

-----

7TH CANADIAN INFANTRY BRIGADE.

SECRET.

INSTRUCTIONS No. B.M. 100/4.

Copy No. 3  
29-9-18.....

Ref. Map –  
SAILLY, 1/20,000.

1. INFORMATION.

(a) Our line now runs approximately – A.2.a. central S.27.c.1.8. – S.26.b.1.3, gap – ~~XXXXXX~~ S. 20.c.7.6. – S.20.c. 2.9. – S.13.d central – SAINCOURT inclusive.

(b) The 4th Canadian Division and the 3rd Canadian Division are continuing the advance on the morning 30th September.

(c) The enemy is holding the Railway Cutting in S.20.d, and S.27.a, and NEUVILLE ST. REMY.

2. (a) The Attack of the 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade will be carried out by the P.P.C.L.I. , and R.C.R. ; the 42nd Canadian Battalion, and the 49th Canadian Battalion will stand fast in present positions, and will be prepared to support the attack if required.

(b) The P.P.C.L.I. will be responsible for capturing the high ground up to S.22 Central including the Hamlet of TILLOY, and will secure bridge head at PONT D'AWÉ.

(c) The R.C.R. will be responsible for making good the remainder of the spur to the North East to approximately S.17.b., and will move forward into RAMILLIES, and secure a bridge head at this point.

### 3. ASSEMBLY.

(a) The P.P.C.L.I. will assemble prior to Zero hour in S.19.a and b, as close to the DOUAI-CAMBRAI ROAD as possible.

(b) The R.C.R. will assemble ~~behind the 49th Canadian Battalion and the 42nd Canadian Battalion in the Area,~~ approximately S.16.a and d. [inserted: in rear of P.P.C.L.I.]

### 4. ACTION OF ARTILLERY.

The Attack will be carried out under a rolling barrage, which will operate in accordance with barrage map issued to those concerned.

### 5. ACTION OF ATTACKING BATTALIONS.

(a) The P.P.C.L.I. will make good their objective on the Spur under protection of the first phase of the barrage.

(b) The R.C.R. will move forward to their assembly position in sufficient time to get in position behind the barrage on the line – S.22.d.5.0. – S.15 Central; they will then advance under the second phase of the barrage to make good their Objective.

### 6. MACHINE GUNS.

The O.C. No. 2 Coy. 3rd Bn. C.M.G.C. is arranging co-operation of machine guns.

### 7. STOKES MORTARS.

The O.C. 7th Cdn. T.M. Bty. will arrange to bring all available Stokes Trench Mortar fire on the Railway Cutting.

### 8. ZERO HOUR.

ZERO HOUR will be 6.00 a.m. September 30th.

### 9. TANKS.

Three Mark IV Tanks will co-operate, and will be formed up prior to Zero Hour about S.19.d.

Two tanks will move at once to the Mill and Chapel in S.15, and after dealing with this point will move South along the line of the road to TILLOY.

The 3rd tank will move South East along the line of the normal gauge railroad in S.20.B and D. – S.27.a.

10. The 42nd, 49th and 2nd C.M.R. Battalions will withdraw any forward troops to a line 200 yards South West of the DOUAI-CAMBRAI Road by one hour before Zero.

11. ACKNOWLEDGE.

(Sgd.) ??????????  
Major,  
Brigade Major,  
7th Canadian Infantry Brigade.

-----  
Issued to –

1. 3rd Canadian Division "G".
2. R.C.R.
3. P.P.C.L.I.
4. 42nd Canadian Bn.
5. 49th Canadian Bn.
6. 7th Canadian T.M. Bty.
7. 8th Canadian Inf. Bde.
8. 9th Canadian Inf. Bde.
9. No. 2 Coy. 3rd Bn. C.M.G.C.
10. 11th Cdn. Inf. Bde.
11. L.O. – 3rd Cdn. Divl. Arty.

-----  
VERY SECRET.

3rd Canadian Division.

G. 8

7th Canadian Inf. Bde.....5  
8th Canadian Inf. Bde.....5  
9th Canadian Inf. Bde.....5  
C.R.A.....20  
C.R.E.....5

D.M.G.C.....	7
A.P.M.....	10
Signals.....	2
A.D.M.S.....	4
O.C., "B" Coy., 7th Bn. Tanks.	2

-----

CANAL CROSSINGS

-----

1. On Z day Canal Crossings will be allotted to 3rd Canadian Division as under :-

Crossing "A" at E.15.a.0.1.  
 ,, "B" at E.8.d.7.1.

2. The 4th Canadian division will use crossing :-

"A" until Z plus 5½ hours.  
 "B" until Crossing "C" and "D" can be used by  
 4th Canadian Division.

3. After Crossings "C" and "D" are taken over by 4th Canadian Division, the Crossings "A" and "B" will be allotted exclusively to 3rd Canadian Division.

4. "A" and "B" Crossings will be used by Units as laid down in Time Tables given below:-

"A" Crossing Time Table.

Zero plus 5½ to Zero plus 6 -	Field Artillery
,, ,, 6 ,, ,, ,, 7 -	1 Coy., 3rd Bn., C.M.G.C. "A" Echelon 7th C.I. Bde.
,, ,, 7 ,, ,, ,, 8½ -	Field Artillery.
,, ,, 8½ ,, ,, ,, 9 -	8th Heavy Arty. Bde.
,, ,, 9 ,, ,, ,, 9½ -	1 Coy., 3rd Bn., C.M.G.C. "A" Echelon 9th C.I. Bde.
,, ,, 9½ ,, ,, ,, 10½-	Field Artillery
,, ,, 10½ ,, ,, ,, 11 -	1 Coy., 3rd Bn., C.M.G.C. "A" Echelon 8th C.I. Bde.
,, ,, 11 ,, ,, ,, 11½-	"B" Echelon, 7th C.I. Bde.

” ” 9th C.I. Bde.  
” ” 8th C.I. Bde.

After plus 10 hours “B” Crossing will be used for EASTBOUND traffic only.

“B” Crossing Time Table.

- (a) From time when Crossing comes available for 3rd Canadian Divn. until plus 10 hours. – Artillery.
  - (b) After 10 hours. - West bound Traffic only.
5. Transport will only move in time to reach Crossings at appointed hours, but should be ready to move off earlier if ordered.

Arrangements will be made so that Officer i/c Transport is at all times in closest touch with Infantry Brigade H.Q.

(signed) ?????????????  
Major G.S.  
for  
Lieut-Col.,  
General Staff,  
3rd Canadian Division

26-9-18.

-----

CONFIDENTIAL.

3rd Canadian Division.  
I. G. 488/1.

26th Sepr. 1918.

APPRECIATION

- of -

## THE ENEMY'S FORCES ON THIS FRONT.

### A. LINE DISPOSITIONS.

1. Between PALLUEL and SAUCHY CAUCHY, the 58th Division, a partially rested Division, is holding the front of the CANAL DU NORD hitherto held by two exhausted Divisions, the 39th and 3rd Reserve Divisions (both identified by us, while holding the front.).
  
2. Between SAUCHY CAUCHY and the CAMBRAI - BAPAUME Road, the line is now held from North to South by the 12th, 187th and 7th, Cavalry Divisions. The first of these has been in the line about three weeks, the second about two weeks. The 7th Cavalry Division, now on our own Divisional Front, relieved on the night 21/22 September the 1st Guard Reserve Division, which has probably been withdrawn into Reserve. This latter is a comparatively weak and much tried Division, and its reappearance in the fighting would not appear likely to form a serious obstacle. The 7th Cavalry Division left the ARMENTIERES Area at the end of August and was extensively engaged in the retirement to the CANAL DU NORD from September 2nd onwards, having lost prisoners from all three Regiments of all three Brigades ("SCHEUTZEN KOMMANDO"). After an intense Artillery bombardment the 7th Cavalry Division, accustomed to the quiet fronts near the SWISS Frontier, will be expected to offer but small resistance.

-----

### B. RESERVE DISPOSITIONS.

#### 1. FRESH RESERVES.

The fresh Divisions in Reserve available for employment on this Front would appear to be from North to South :-

18th Reserve Division – LA BASSEE Area.  
5th Bavarian Reserve Div.- DOUAI Area.  
30th Division - CAMBRAI Area.

Our most probable opponents of the above would seem to be the 30th Division, an Assault Division, which has generally fought well. The Division has been engaged in some heavy fighting this year, but it is not considered that its losses have been severe.

The 30th Division has been resting for over six weeks (August 10th) and is considered as the best

Division in Reserve on this front and of good fighting quality.

## 2. TIRED DIVISIONS.

Of many tired Divisions now resting in back areas, the following are considered possible reinforcements for this front :-

2nd Guard Reserve Division	relieved in line	3-9-18.
22nd Division	relieved in line about	7-9-18.
183rd Division	„ „ „	10-9-18.
3rd Reserve Division (exhausted)	„ „	16-9-18.
39th Division	relieved in line about	18-9-18.

## IMPORTANT.

The NUMERALS on Prisoners' shoulder straps will be WIRED AT ONCE to Division (Intelligence).

This is most essential, in view of the importance of quickly appreciating the enemy's situation and dispositions on our front and of identifying his Reserves, IMMEDIATELY they appear in the Line.

(Sgd) ??????????????  
Lieut.  
for Lieut-Col.,  
General Staff,  
3rd Canadian Division.

26-9-18.

Copies to :-

7th Canadian Inf. Bde.  
8th Canadian Inf. Bde.  
9th Canadian Inf. Bde.  
C.R.A.  
C.R.E.  
D.M.G.C.  
A.P.M.  
"A" Branch  
Canadian Corps Intelligence.)  
Canadian Corps Cage. ) For informayion.

---

## **FIELD MESSAGES**

P.P.C.L.I. BATTALION STRENGTH AND NAMES PER COY. SEPTEMBER 1918:

P.P.C.L.I.

Strength

Off. O. R. s

1 14

1 13

- 23

2 23

73 (signed) J Crawford CSM

-----

*[Most likely Replacements/Left Out of Battle of the various Companies]*

1 Coy

E. Kene....y [Kennery D. [1042328](#)? or [4025005](#) Kenny J. ?]

J. Larue [La Rue J. [246765](#) ]

Pte. Higgison [Higginson G. [123350](#)?]

„ Buchanan [Buchanan J. [228210](#)]

„ Saunders [Saunders S.A. [639178](#)]

„ Barlow [Barlow H. [270377](#)]

„ Snennon [Shannon A.G. [4021503](#)]

„ Burns [Burns A. [513271](#)]

„ Woodacre [Woodacre H. [412326](#)]

„ Meyers [Meyers T. [124402](#)]

„ Colbureson [Colborsen A.L. [2193338](#)?]

„ Nedon [Nedon J. [3320394](#)]

„ Hortsburgh [Horsburgh J.B. [787437](#) ]

„ Tyrell [Terrell A. [678433](#)]

-----  
[Note transcriber: *Mystery: [German prisoners](#)???*]  
-----

**No. 2 Coy**

Sgt. Mjr. Crawford ( *J. 1765*)

Pte. Mc.Master [McMaster, F.M. 818189]

„ Hurlburt [Hurlburt, G. [634001](#)] [*Last Great War Patricia who died in 1998*]

„ Johnston [ ? six different possibilities]

„ Randall [Randall, J. [246691](#)]

„ Riley [Riley, M. [1042609](#)]

„ Fullerton [Fullarton, F.W. [817868](#)]

„ Baxter [Baxter, S.W.F. [475255](#)]

„ Landry [Landry, P. [817404](#)]

„ Nicholis [Nicholas, D. [2595846](#) ?]

Lc. Corpl. Taylor [Taylor, F. [198165](#)]

Pte. Burns J.J [ [513530](#)]

Corpl. Way [?]

-----  
**No. 3 Coy [e001073161](#) & [e001073162](#) & [e001073163](#).**

Lc/p Naylor [L/Cpl Naylor, C. [515794](#)]

Pte. Lahe..... [Lake, G.W. [639943](#)]

„ Bonnell [Bonnell, R.M. [663790](#)]

„ Stean [Stean, C. [3320154](#)]

„ Larkin [Larkin, M. [3320477](#)]

„ Mcgonigle [McGonigle, J. [246378](#)]

„ Gale [Gale, E. [784863](#)]  
 „ Bullard [Bullard, L. [2265964](#)]  
 „ Freeman [Freeman, H.A. [770227](#)]  
 „ Brown [? Five different possibilities]  
 „ Lane [Lane, A.W. [3056157](#)]  
 „ Sauriol [Sauriol, H.J. [769449](#)]  
 „ Gammond [Gammond, H.G. [2265797](#)]  
 L.Cop. McLaren [L/Cpl McLaren, J.W. [475329](#)]  
 Cop. Ham [Cpl Ham, P.D. [475871](#)]  
 Corp. Keith [Cpl Keith, two possibilities]  
 Pt Chubb [Chubb, R.K. [1294](#)]  
 „ McIntire [McIntyre, two possibilities]  
 „ Fhenton [Fenton, A.E. [2265601](#)]  
 „ Freed [Freed, E. [552721](#)]  
 „ Baker [Baker, A.J.S. [2265637](#)]  
 „ Rothon [? Rochon, A. [3320020](#)]

-----

**No 4 Coy [e001073164](#) & [e001073165](#).**

Corpl Foster [Cpl Foster, D.E. [817991](#)]  
 Pte. Hobovery [? Woolven, C.E. [654858](#)]  
 Pte. Batte..y [Battersay, W. [240052](#)]  
 „ Smith H.R. [Smith, H.R. [631](#)]  
 „ Pallotta [Pallotta, N. [514183](#)]  
 „ Mc. court [McCourt W.E. [2004578](#)]  
 „ Elms [Elms, W.G. [240241](#)]

„ Deschamps [*Deschamps, two possibilities*]  
 „ Seargent [ ?]  
 „ Plouffe [*Plouffe, J. [1042608](#)*]  
 „ Frun..er [*Fournier, J.E. [1042755](#)*]  
 „ Smith P.A. [[3056329](#)]  
 L:Corp Torrie [*L/Cpl Torrie, G.M. [105482](#)*]  
 Pte Collins [*Collins, two possibilities*]  
 „ Quinlan [*Quinlan, E. [3057652](#)*]  
 „ Steele [*Steele, three possibilities*]  
 L/Corp Nitson [*Wilson, two possibilities*]  
 Pte. ...elly [ ?]  
 „ Denney [*Denny, W.R. [2265944](#)*]  
 Lc Corpl. Saidlaw [*L/Cpl Laidlaw, C.A.B. [2595833](#)*]  
 Pte. Davey [*Davey, M.C. [784856](#)*]  
 „ Shia [*Shea, W. [639803](#)*]  
 „ Taylor [*Taylor, five possibilities*]

-----

The O.C. P.P.C.L.I.

Situation Report:

At 1 p.m. we advanced following a barrage and made good the line 25.b.20.80 to approximately 26 a. with Nos 4,2, & 3 Coys.

No 1 Company got ahead and are somewhere near the line 20.c.10.95 to 20.d.90.40

I have ordered No 1 Company to withdraw to our present line as its present position is untenable.

We are not in touch with the 49 Bn and have just located the 44 Bn about 600x on my left rear, have sent out 1 Officer and 1 O.R. to reconnoitre this line and in all probability I will have to retire to get in touch with 44' Bn.

[Wil] send in report later as to disposition.

Lieut. Lopston badly wounded and am trying to evacuate him, if possible.

Have no stretcher.

Line holding at present nearly dug in and not much of a defensive position.

Require SAA & LG ammunition and Bombs.

The position which No 1 Coy. is at present is alongside the DOUAI –CAMBRAI Road near the dumps.

This line has several (5 reported) lines of wire and has trenches camouflaged, and good fighting position for the Enemy.

Please instruct and try and inform as to flank of 49 Bn.

10.35 p.m. (Sgd.) M. Tenbroeke Capt

-----  
I am enclosing message from C.O. 44<sup>th</sup> Battalion for your information.

(Sgd.) F.L. Shouldice

Capt

not more than 60 men in Company available.

(Sgd.) F.L.S.  
-----

#### MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix.....N7.... Code...10.30 AM Words..90... Office Stamp.

Received from...GZG By..CA Neiss 1/10/18.

K

Received...11.25 A.m.

X -correction

TO TABE

\* Sender's Number. Day of Month. In reply to Number. AAA

BN741 1

The Brigade will reorganize at once aaa tame and tano will be disposed in depth on line of railway cutting and tapi and tabe will withdraw to MARCOING line left and right respectively aaa jaba will remain between railway cutting and DOUAI CAMBRAI road aaa Kitchens have been ordered up units will notify these Hqrs where they are to be sent aaa reconnaissance parties should be sent out to search for casualties aaa dispositions and strength return to be forwarded

as soon as possible.

(Sgd) ???

FROM HUZU  
PLACE & TIME 10.20 AM

-----

Messages and Signals

TO Capt Edgar or Lt Kelly

The Forty Ninth are holding the Eastern edge of TILLOY and we appear to have few men on this side of the village. It is absolutely essential that all our troops who have got over the RAILWAY EMBANKMENT to the western edge of TILLOY should be formed into strong patrols and sent around the village on the west to gain a footing in the main TILLOY ROAD running North and South through S.21.b & d getting into touch on the right with 49<sup>th</sup> at approximately S.21.b 75 85 - and work up road as far as possible towards THE CHAPEL in S.15.b.

Do not attempt to work out onto high grounds in S 22 as Kelly suggests – the road and road only must be made good ~~if in consequence~~

[Sgd] George W. Little

It is essential that I get an estimate of casualties

-----

27-9-18

To Commanding Officer  
P.P.C.L.I.

1. The next assembly position will be in E.5 b. and d. The Battalion will be prepared to move to this area on short notice.
2. Situation at the present time is approx. as follows. 4th Div. hold BLUE LINE. 1st Div. appear to be held up along Railway ~~Line~~ Line running through W.20 a. and c. and W. 24.a. and c.
3. At 2.10 p.m. a barrage will be laid down on MARCOING system of trenches, and the 4th Div. will attempt to occupy these trenches. ~~In which~~ If the latter are successful, the P.P.C.L.I. will leap frog through the 4th Div. and advance as far as possible with scout patrols and battle patrols, moving in advance of the companies.
4. Brigade now located in pill box at E.10.b 3.9.
5. Brigade will probably move up at [inserted: at] later hour to vicinity

of ZUARRY at E.5.d.1.1.

6. A Battalion of Tanks will be at the disposal of the 7th C.I.B.

12.55 p.m. (sgd) Albert J Kelly  
Lieut.

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix.....	Code...	Words.....	Sent or sent out. Text	Office Stamp.
Received from...	By..			

TO Bn's.

Sender's Number.	Day of Month.	In reply to Number.	AAA
B M. 30	27		

The situation now appears to be. ~~DM~~ The 4<sup>th</sup> Cdn. Div. are on the BLUE LINE on their front [inserted: (EAST of BOURLON WOOD.) ]. AAA.

The 63<sup>rd</sup> Div on the Right have reached the GREEN LINE ~~Ann~~ ANNEUX and GRAINCOURT are in the hands of the enemy and Huns have been seen in Factory in E29A.

~~AM~~ On the left the 4<sup>th</sup> Cdn. Div. have reached F.1.A. ~~AM~~ Report that they are now getting onto the BLUE LINE.

FROM 7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B.  
TIME 2.?? pm (Sgd) A ?????? Major

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix.....	Code...	Words.....	Sent or sent out. Text	Office Stamp.
Received from...	By..			

TO Bn's. PPCLI

Sender's Number.	Day of Month.	In reply to Number.	AAA
B M. 34	27		

The Brigade is to be prepared to take over the BLUE LINE from the 11<sup>th</sup> CIB

~~AAA~~ The P.P.C.L.I. and R.C.R. will move forthwith to E 11 A and be ready to take over its new frontage ~~AAA~~ On arrival in E11A O's C will report to Brigade H.Q. for instructions ~~AAA~~ H.Q. will be E 11 A 3 – 5.

FROM 7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B.  
TIME 3.50 PM

-----

### MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

TO{ 7<sup>th</sup> C.I. Bde.

Sender's Number.	Day of month.	In reply to Number.
<i>BM 78.</i>	<i>28</i>	<i>G. 69</i>

*1 German officer of 213 RIR.  
taken over from private of PPCLI  
and being sent to Div Cage*

From *9<sup>th</sup> CIBde*  
Place  
Time *1-35 AM*

(Z) ???????

---

28/9/18

Intelligence Officer

RCR PPCLI 42nd & 49<sup>th</sup>.

Report Centre and a/Staff Capt Intelligence will be located before Zero at advanced Bde HQ F 1.a 80.80 and during early part of operations ~~aaa~~ The next move approx Zero + 2 hours will be MARQUION LINE approx F 5c 10.30 .

Every effort will be made to advise you of subsequent moves. O/C prisoners will move from F 1 a 80.80 with the R.C. and will remain at Marquion line

[Sgd] JB Milne Capt  
A/Staff Capt 7<sup>th</sup> CIB

-----  
Adjutant

8 a.m.

Runner from Hqters (Headquarters) just arrived. Casey head up at 7 p.m. last evening found us gone. Please notify point at which you want the rations delivered to-day & time. ~~Could~~ They will go forward on hearing from you & on ????? water carts.

(Sgd.) ?????  
-----

To:-  
O.C. K.

28/9/18

Sheet 57c NE

I have command of two platoons of No 1 Coy, AAA  
Have taken up commanding position at F.4.b.5.3.

A counterattack is developing from the direction  
of the DOUAI ROAD.

Time 4,20 P.M.

[Sgd] C. Frederickson Lieut.

By runner

i/c 1 & 2 platoons  
-----

7th Canadian Infantry Brigade.  
-----

The R?C.R.  
P.P.C.L.I.  
42nd Battalion.  
49th Battalion.  
-----

B.M. 100/2

The initial bombardment for to-day's operation  
will be 10 minutes on protected line 200 yards in advance of  
BLUE LINE, thereafter at the rate of 100 yards every 4 minutes.

[Sgd] J.B. Milne Capt

28th-9-18.

for Brigade Major.  
7th Canadian Infantry Brigade.

X - correct

H.Q. – P.P.C.L.I.

I am in Village RAILLENCOURT approximate location ~~X-25-15.95~~  
F.4-90.90

As attacking Bn. were held up on our front by MARCOING trench  
only taking a small portion in F.-5.a 4 Coy of which I was acting O.C.  
under my orders entered the village and endeavoured to assist in outflanking  
trench on right but without avail owing to heavy artillery fire and particularly  
severe machine gun fire not part of village being free of it.  
With present forces and supplies would be impossible to bomb down trench  
which is strongly held.

Propose to establish line

[Sgd] FL Shouldice  
Capt

Statement of prisoners  
& M guns from Coy

2 last night  
1 this morning  
(About 50 prisoners)

Capt. MacBrayne!

Let me have total estimated casualties for Bde.. They want it  
urgently.  
Give me an approx idea, Off & O.Rs.

29-9-18 [Sgd] J.W. J Lt & adj

	116
O.P. Coys	<u>17</u>
P P	135

Let me have above at once.

Off. K. Off. W. O.R.K. O.R.W.

1 Coy	1	1	4?	20?
2 „	1	2	2	32
3 „	1	-	10	25
4 „	3	2	3	39
H.Q. „	2			

This is exclusive of 17 missing from No. 3 Coy

[Sgd] E M MacBrayne

Capt

Capt MacBrayne

To O.C.

List being prepared and will be sent as soon as completed

[Sgd] H T I Lee

Lieut

Act O.C. 3 Coy

-----

MEMORANDUM

From

T.O.

Date..Sept 29<sup>th</sup>....1918

To

Adj

P.P.C.L.I.

The SAA limber with 20,000 rds ordered by Brigade to move forward is now at the junction of road & railway F 8 b 75.75 where it will remain. In case you do not know you are in this report to brigade when this runner reaches you

Rations will be at B.H.Q. on Bourlon Road about 8.00 pm

[ Sgd] Kenneth ??????

Map Ref

France 57c NE.

-----

SITUATION-Report.

B.H.Q. -

P.P.C.L.I. 29-9-18

Position of Company - still occupying position taken about 2.P.M. this morning ??? along east bank of slightly sunken double track light railway x.3.a.70.80

Artillery – normal –

M.Gs – continual bursts of fire from right flank apparently from some building or prominent place in ~~SAINY~~ St. OLLE.

Trench supplies required.

S.A.A.- complete with salvaged

Bombs „ „ „

Carriers „ „ „

Very lights }

S.O.S. „ } required

[Sgd] F L Shouldice  
O.C. 4 Coy Capt

-----  
29-9-18

The Adjutant

P.P.C.L.I.

Received Order re Defensive flank  
timed 10.55 A.M.

Received Order (written) cancelling  
above Defensive flank timed 11.15 A.M.

[Sgd] E. M. MacBrayne Capt.

C.O. 30-9-18  
P.P.C.L.I.

- (1) We are now holding a line approx as follows –  
Railway at S.27 b.5.2 N.E. to  
S.27.b.8.5 thence N.E. S.21.d.9.0 West to X  
roads at S.21.d.0.2. thence N.W. to 21 c.8.6  
to fork roads at 21.c.25.45 thence S along  
road to Railway
- (2) There are no R.C.R. 42<sup>nd</sup> or others further  
advanced than the Railway Cutting on our LEFT.
- (3) Battalion strength at present time about 150 all  
told. Many of the men are mixed up with the  
R.C.R. and other units.

- (4) The 49<sup>th</sup> have about 40 men ~~with~~ and are on the right, along road running N. & S. through S.27.b.
- (5) It looks as if it would be impossible for us to do anything further than hold the village, with nobody on either flank.
- (6) Casualties are rather heavy, but am unable to make an estimate as there are ~~so many~~ some men with other units, not in touch with us.
- (7) Our present intention is to shove out outposts as far as we can, and hold the village.
- ~~(8) — Once we hold the village patrols will set out along main TILLOY road as per your instructions.~~
- (8) We have just taken about ten prisoners who are being sent back through B.H.Q.

1.30 p.m.

By Runner

[Sgd] Albert J Kelly Lt.

MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix.....S.M.....	Code...ELPM Words..14...	Sent or sent out. Text	Office Stamp.
Received from...F	By..Cunningham		K
			<hr/> 30/9/18

Handed in at .....CZGR.....Office..5.33 p.m.      Received..7.52 p.m.

TO                    K

* Sender's Number.	Day of Month.	In reply to Number.	AAA
Q. 97	30		

Battle straggled posts as follows F 1 C 3.3    F 8 B 6.6  
F 1.5 O 1.3    Sheet 57 C

FROM                HUZUQ

-----  
30 9.18

O.C.

P.P.C.L.I.

Lt Heaslip reported to me with 11 O.R. whether this all the outstanding men or not I can't really say

But I sincerely hope not

[Sgd] J N Edgar Capt  
O/c 3 Coy.

-----

30.9.18

O.C.

P.P.C.L.I. :-

Attached herewith rough role & estimate of strength of Bn at present doing duty under my command.

We have attached from 49<sup>th</sup> Bn about 40 O.R. which comprises the whole garrison.

Please endeavour to warn me of any barrage which I might expect in the morning, to enable me to have the men under cover.

[Sgd] J N Edgar Capt  
O/c 3 Coy

Time 9.42  
By Runner

-----

Disposition Report

O.C.

30.9.18

P.P.C.L.I.:-

The remnants of the Bn might be considered organized as a Coy and holding a line of outposts through village of TILLOY. A Coy of the 49<sup>th</sup> Bn on our right are also holding a system of posts on main TILLOY Rd extending from S.27.b.90.50 to S.21.d.75.40. Listening posts are at S.21.d.5.10. and fork road at S.21.c.3.5 Lewis Gun posts are established at S.21.c.65.25. – S.21.c.95.35 and three in Supports at Sunken Rd at S.27.a.35.65 to S.27.a. 25.90.

Capt Haslam and Lieut Mortimer reported for duty . Lieut Cumming returned also, Lts Heaslip & Frederickson.

Time 9.40

[Sgd] J N Edgar Capt  
O/c 3Coy

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix.....S.M.....	Code...ECPM	Words..21...	Sent or sent out. At..2/a.m.	Office Stamp.
Received from...M	By..Cunningham			K
				<hr/> 30/9/18

Handed in at .....M.....Office..... p.m.      Received..5.15 p.m.

TO            PPCLI

\* Sender's Number.    Day of Month.            In reply to Number.            AAA  
M.44                            30

I have with drawn Lieut SKEEL liaison officer  
I require him on duty

FROM                            49<sup>th</sup> Can Bn  
PLACE & TIME                            5.15 PM

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix.....S.M.....	Code...DDPM	Words..29...	Sent or sent out. Sent	Office Stamp.
Received from...F	By..Cunningham			K
				<hr/> 30/9/18

Handed in at .....CZG.....Office..... p.m.      Received..... p.m.

TO K

\* Sender's Number. Day of Month. In reply to Number. AAA  
BM27 30

stick where you are and as far as possible organize your  
commands aaa  
Send in a disposition sketch soon as possible aaa important

[Sgd] ???

FROM HUZU  
PLACE & TIME 4.10 PM

-----  
OC PPCLI 30/9/18

Village of TILLOY clear except one MG position in S.21 d 50 80.  
Capt Taylor 49<sup>th</sup> is here in village with 60 men in support of Capt  
Shouldice, PPCLI

They are establishing posts and ???ing on show of resistance.  
???? are endeavouring to push beyond village which is now clear.  
Enemy has started at 10.30 am to shell north side., Bridges on  
Railway into CAMBRAI in S 27 B 25.25 and S.27 B 90.00.  
It XXXXXX all blown up RCR are reported back at Railway  
embankment.

Casualties light so far Apparently no enemy in REMY enemy  
morale bad.

10.30 am [Sgd] FL Shouldice  
Tilloy Capt Malone  
by Runner was here at  
10.15 am.

-----  
[??] Bn. H.Q.  
P.P.C.L.I. - through 7<sup>th</sup> Bde. - 9.30 A.M.  
Map Ref. ??? for show. 30-9-18  
Sir-

4 Coy advanced along its front & secured road through centre village  
Tilloy.

I cant say whether Farm at cross roads S-21-c-3.5 has been secured  
but with reinforcements of 75 men from C Coy 49<sup>th</sup> we have pushed out  
scouts and secured main road through Tilloy to cross roads S-27-6 down to  
forks S-27-b.8.3.

Heavy machine gun fire from buildings at forks in road S-21-D-8.5 also from houses along road S-21-4.2 near X marked on map otherwise boche have vacated village

Have no information as to success on my left. Establishing line of outposts and line of resistance Further report to follow

[ Sgd] Capt F.L. Shouldice  
P.P.C.L.I.

PPCLI

Sept 30<sup>th</sup> 1918  
4.30 pm

To Adjutant PPCLI

The MO with Medical Orderly has moved forward to the RCRs RAP at S 20.C1.9 & has left me at our own RAP on Arras-Cambrai Road to await his instructions.

We were unable to locate BHQ ~~before, to~~ until the Storeman came here with rations.

[Sgd] R Wood  
Med. Sgt

P.P.C.L.I.  
30.9.18.

Adjutant.

The remnants of the 49<sup>th</sup> and ourselves are working in conjunction with each other

They hold two posts east of the village, we the remainder, evidently we have the same H.Q. Shouldice is out at present but shall deliver your message when he returns.

Should he return to B.H.Q. this will mean I'm alone as the only available officer as Lee who is slightly wounded and must return. Can't imagine how you figure I have eight officers here. Shouldice, Lee & myself are here alone. So if we can have some assistance right away it would be jolly welcome. The news from Bulgaria is very encouraging isn't it?

As I instructed Kelly to report we have established posts through the village and hope to make the road later.

Let me have S.A.A. & bombs as soon as you can as we are right out, and with very blunt teeth, also some rations.

[ Sgd] J N Edgar Capt  
O/c 3 Coy.

H.Q here established at Chateau in S.27.b.50.60.

-----

30.9.18.

P.P.C.L.I.

Patrols are being sent out, keeping touch with right & left flanks.

Everything O.K. here.

[ Sgd] J.N. Edgar Capt  
O/c 3 Coy

T.O.

We have advanced to TILLOY and our Bn H.Q. is now at A1 C 90.95  
The R.C.R. transport have already arrived with rations. Find out from them how  
they came up and send up ammunition with rations. You can come right up to B.H.Q.  
without difficulty.

[ Sgd] J W Jeakins  
Lt & Adj

30-9-18

11.25 A.M.

-----

MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix.....S.B.....Code...CH??AA      Words..39...      Sent or sent out.      Office Stamp.  
At..2/a.m.

Received from...CZG      By..      30/9/18

Service Instructions  
.....priority.....

TO      PPCLI

\* Sender's Number.      Day of Month.      In reply to Number.      AAA  
G 56      30

reference artillery trace accompanying BM 100/4 of 29<sup>th</sup>  
inst aaa Barrage will rest twenty minutes on line 30-136  
aaa 139 therefore Becomes 159 and so on aaa units will

conform to Barrage accordingly aaa Acknowledge.

FROM (Sgd)???

7<sup>th</sup> Canadian Inf. Bde  
Instructions No. 100/6

Secret.  
Copy No.1

30/9/18

1. The Canadian Corps is continuing the advance on October 1<sup>st</sup>.  
The advance of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Canadian Division will be made by 9<sup>th</sup> Cdn. Inf. Bde. who will pass through the 7<sup>th</sup> Cdn. Inf. Bde. at a time to be notified later.
- 2/ The attack will be made under a barrage which will come down on the line S.28.a.7.0. – S.15.c.0.3 This Jumping Off Line will run from S.28.a.0.1. to S.14.d.7.0.  
In order to cover the Assembly of the 9<sup>th</sup> Cdn. Inf. Bde. and for the protection of our position the 7<sup>th</sup> Cdn. Inf. Bde. will remain in present position until Zero minus (1) hour. At this time all detachments of the 7<sup>th</sup> Cdn. Inf. Bde. ahead of the Jumping Off Line will be withdrawn to the rear of the Jumping Off Line to allow the barrage to come down.
- 3/ The withdrawal will on no account be made before the above time, and when it is being made every precaution will be taken to prevent the enemy learning of our action.
- 4/ Steps will be taken as soon as possible after Zero hour to re-organize units.  
Dispositions to be made will be ~~made~~ notified later.
- 5/ Zero hour 7.00 AM. 1<sup>st</sup> October.
- 6/ Acknowledge.

[Sgd] A.G. S?????  
Major  
Brigade Major  
7<sup>th</sup> Canadian Inf. Bde.

Copies to –

1. 3<sup>rd</sup> Cdn. Divn
2. The RCR
3. P.P.C.L.I.
4. 42<sup>nd</sup> Cdn. Bn.
5. 49<sup>th</sup> Cdn. Bn.
6. 7<sup>th</sup> Cdn. T.M. Bty.
7. No. 2 Coy 3<sup>rd</sup> Bn. C.M.G.C.
8. 8<sup>th</sup> Cdn. Inf. Bde.
9. 9<sup>th</sup> „ „ „
10. Office Copy.

O.C. Coy's

Zero hour will be 6 00 am Sept 30<sup>th</sup>.

Lt Kelly has 1 copy of Barrage table and will show and explain thoroughly to each Coy Cmd'r-

As barrage goes well over fortified area in S 22 c & d strong patrols ~~should~~ will push on immediately after main objective is reached.

The bridgehead to be seized is PONT D'AIRE in S30.

Stokes Guns and M.G's are cooperating

TANKS- Three Mark iv tanks will cooperate and will be formed up prior to Zero hour about S19d. ~~The~~ Two tanks will move at once the Chapel in S15 and after dealing with these points move South along line of TILLOY ROAD.

The third tank will move S.E. along the line of normal gauge railroad in S20b and d and S27a.

[Sgd] George W. Little  
Capt

-----

By Lt. Kelly.

You will go forward from assembly position and ~~keep~~ work close up to battalion in S 19 b & d.

[Sgd] George W Little Capt

By Lt Kelly  
Sept 30/18.

-----

P.P.C.L.I.

O.O. NO 2.

Sept 30/18

Ref Map:- Saily -

Intention: It is intended to resume the advance of Can Corps on the morning Oct 1<sup>st</sup>.

General - The 9<sup>th</sup> Brigade will attack on 3<sup>rd</sup> Can. Div. frontage.

Barrage - The barrage will fall from S 28 a 7.0 to S 15c 0.3.

Jump-off - The jumping off line will run from S 28 a 1.0 to S14d.70.

Action of - In order to protect assembly of 9<sup>th</sup> C.I.B. the 7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B. will  
7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B. remain position until Zero one hour.

Action of P.P.C.L.I. At Zero minus one hour all details forward of the jumping off line will be withdrawn behind it men being sent out in small parties s[o] that enemy will not learn of the withdrawal. Absolute quietness will be maintained and no smoking allowed. It would be advisable to remain in present shelter where behind jump off line bringing back any forward details into this shelter also as no cover is available forward of railway cutting. Otherwise where the enemy barrage will probably fall.

Reorganization: Companies will be thoroughly sorted out and brought to Railway Cutting as soon as enemy shelling becomes quiet in this locality

Disposition - Disposition of the 7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B. on completion of reorganization will be notified later.

Zero Hour Zero hour will be 7.00 am.

[Sgd] George W Little  
Capt.

By Runner  
11.30 p.m. Acknowledge

-----  
P.P.C.L.I.

29-9-18

The O.C.  
P.P.C.L.I.

Re Lieut. Frederickson s position

Have seen Lieut. Jones and he advises that present position of Lieut. Frederickson's platoon much better than position on right of No.1. Coys present location owing to inflade by Machine Guns & rifles (heavy).

He is about 5 minutes walk from his Coy, and I would suggest he stay there in close support to No 1 Coy unless the exigencies of the

section demand otherwise.

[Sgd] M. Tenbroeke Capt

-----  
MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix.....Code...KC..... Words..13... Sent or sent out. Office Stamp.

Service Instructions  
.....CZG.....

TO RCR PPCLI

\* Sender's Number. Day of Month. In reply to Number. AAA  
Q30 29

Wire total estimated casualties urgent

12 noon – 29<sup>th</sup>  
Approx 200 O.R's

V ? ? ?

11. officers

FROM 7<sup>th</sup> C.I.B.

P.P.C.L.I.

OPERATION ORDER No1 Sept 29/18

Ref Maps. SAILLY.

INTENTION. It is intended that the R.C.R. and P.P.C.L.I. will attack the RAILWAY EMBANKMENT in S.20 and S 27 and make good the village of TILLOY and the high ground to the north-east of it in S.22. This phase to be carried out by the P.P.C.L.I. the R.C.R. passing through and making good the area S.16 and S.17.

ASSEMBLY AREA. The P.P.C.L.I. will move into the area X 24 a and c on the night of Sept 29th/30th and take up their positions by 3.00

a.m. facing East along a line approximately from X24.c.90.90 to X24.a.90.50

DISTRIBUTION - From right to left the Coy's will take position No 4 on the right – No 1 Coy & No 2 Coy No 3 Coy on the left giving the order of disposition from north to south No 3 Coy- No 2 Coy- No 1 Coy No 4 Coy.

Coy Disposition. No's 4,1 and 2 Coy's will form the front of attacking line and No 3 will advance in close support in the rear of No's 1 and 2 Coy's

General Idea. No's 4.1.3 Coy's will cross the CAMBRAY – DOUAI ROAD in a north Easterly direction and cross the railway embankment with the right flank resting approximately at S.20.b.30.20 when the left flank will swing to an easterly direction. – The advance from this point being carried on due East and South East in the general direction of the main road running north from the RAILWAY EMBANKMENT at S.27.b.80.05 to fork road at S.21.b.60.80. The support company will follow thro behind No's 1 and 2 Coy and make good high ground in S.22. A. & B.

SPECIAL IDEA. No 4 Coy after crossing RLY EMBANKMENT will (Detailed by Coy's) swing south east and clear the Eastern edge of the EMBANKMENT and road running from S.20.b.50.75 thro TILLOY FARM to TILLOY VILLAGE to road junction at S.27.b.80.20. They will be responsible for roads and other features between these boundaries, which are both inclusive to No 4 Coy and will consolidate a line from S.27.b.80.65 south along main road to RL'Y EMBANKMENT

No 1 Coy keeping close touch with No 4 Coy on their right will work in a southeasterly direction and clear out TILLOY FARM and northern portion of TILLOY VILLAGE and occupy a position on main TILLOY ROAD running north and south from S.27.b.80.65 to fork roads at S.21.d.55.75

No 2 Coy will work east and gain sufficient frontage to occupy main TILLOY ROAD from fork road at S.21.d.55.75 to fork road at S.21.b.60.80.

No 3 Coy. will leap frog No 2 Coy and occupy a position on high ground in S.22 a & b

SPECIAL LANDMARKS. There is a small clump of trees on high ground at fork roads in S.21.d. This will indicate flanks for No's 1 & 2 Coy's.

PATROLS.- Should be pushed out as far as possible east of TILLOY ROAD with a view to securing a bridge head on the Canal. These patrols will be pushed forward as soon as main objective on TILLOY ROAD is gained and made good.

ARTILLERY.- A heavy barrage and concentrated artillery fire will be brought to bear on all points.

REPORTS. All companies will report their completion of dispositions in assembly area to B.H.Q. in F.4.d.30.30. not later than 4.15 a.m. Sept 30<sup>th</sup>

B.H.Q. Headquarters will close at this point F.4.d.30.30 at 5.30 a.m. and will be situated after that hour at S.25.d.90.10.

R.A.P. Regimental Aid Post will be at F.5.a.50.75

ZERO HOUR. Zero hour will be notified later

BARRAGE TABLE – Barrage table will be notified later

Issued at 10.40. P.M.  
29-9-18.

ACKNOWLEDGE.

[Sgd] Capt. Commanding  
P.P.C.L.I.

O.C. PPCLI

30/9/18

- (1) Capt Shouldice with a small party of our men and the 49<sup>th</sup> is holding a position in TILLOY, shown roughly by attached tracing.
- (2) 2<sup>nd</sup> C.M.R.'s are sending forward a platoon to help him.
- (3) Capt. Edgar and myself are going back to assemble our scattered troops ~~and~~ to put them under SHOULDICE'S command, so that he may clear the village and occupy the high ground in S.22.a.
- (4) The maze of trenches at S.28.a.1.4 has been cleared of the enemy.
- (5) Situation N.E. of Railway ~~between~~ through S.20 b and 21.c. obscure. Can not see any of our men. The Hun observed coming across ridge in parties of 3 to 6 in S.16 c and d. I have seen him as close up as S.21.b. central.
- (6) Will report situation in ground adjacent to 4<sup>th</sup> Division in a later message.
- (7) Have asked artillery F.O.O. to shoot up high embankment in S.28.c., which the Hun is manning with M.G. s.

11 a.m.

[Sgd] Albert J. Kelley Lt  
PPCLI

---

**MAPS September 1918 – Hyperlinks:**

[e001073378](#)

[Guemappe](#)

[Scarpe Valley](#)

[Goyencourt](#)

[Resting Battalion Govy, Bellone, Ravine, Etaing & Dury](#)

[Intelligence Log Target Map](#)

**Tue, Oct 1, 1918 BOURLON, FRANCE**

BOURLON 1.10.18 Rain in early morning - clearing in afternoon. Battalion moves back to MARCOING line - the 9th Brigade going through - and at 8 p.m. are relieved by 8th Brigade - moving back to just W. of BOURLON Wood in bivouacking in open. The Battalion now reduced to approximately 350 all ranks. Capt. G.W. LITTLE having rejoined from C.C.R.C. is now in Command of the Battalion. 31 O.R. join - and Lieuts. C. ISMAY and E.R. DONALDSON. 20 Military Medals awarded.

**Wed, Oct 2, 1918 BOURLON, FRANCE**

BOURLON 2.10.18 Fair. The Army Commander (1st Army) sends a message of condolence to the Battalion on the death of Lt. Col. STEWART "The Army Commander hears with great regret that LT Col. C.J.T. STEWART D.S.O. has been killed in action. He sympathizes with the CANADIAN Corps and especially with the Officers N.C.O.s & men of the P.P.C.L.I. in the loss of their gallant commander." A similar message was received from 6th Reserve Battalion at Seaford.

**Thu, Oct 3, 1918 BOURLON, FRANCE**

BOURLON 3.10.18 Cloudy. Battalion resting. ~~Hes~~ [inserted: Baths.] LTs. G.H. BEESTON [475344] & W.J. POPEY [1716] taken on strength. 1 O.R. struck off

**Fri, Oct 4, 1918 BOURLON, FRANCE**

BOURLON 4.10.18 Fine. Training. The following message received from H.R.H. Princess PATRICIA "Am more deeply grieved than I can say over Colonel Stewart's death during

your magnificent fighting. My deepest sympathy is with the Battalion in his loss and your other sad casualties. Am following your progress with keenest appreciation.”

The Brigadier also sent a message as follows “I wish to express my appreciation of the fighting qualities displayed by all units of the Brigade during the recent operations. The cheerful manner in which Commanding officers accepted new tasks and the untiring efforts of all ranks to accomplish them was most gratifying. In four attacks the Brigade defeated eleven enemy regiments and succeeded in taking many strong positions against overwhelming odds. My one conclusion is that no Officer has ever had finer troops to command.”

Capt. SHOULDICE struck off strength to C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*] in exchange.

Officers casualties in fighting 27 Sept. - 1 Oct as follows:-

Killed & died of wounds LT. Col. C.J.T. STEWART D.S.O. LIEUTS. [A.J.] KNOWLING [475414] [A.J.] ROBINS [1280] – [G.] TRIGGS [1766] – [W.T.] RAMSEY [487369] – [S.] LOPTSON [McG227]– [R.D.] MILLYARD [478280] – [J.] MACKAY. [1683] (8).

Wounded Capt. [E.M.] MACBRAYNE - LIEUTS. [A.P.] LINNELL [475919] – [G.W.] GUIOU M.C. [475868] – [E.C.] WORKMAN [1311] – [H.E.] ROWLANDS [411120] – [A.R.] JONES [410954] – [H.T.I.] LEE [475916] – [R.] PATON [475983] – [M.J.] ROBB [261134] (at duty) (9)

Other ranks - killed & died of wounds - 38 Wounded

Missing - 20 Wounded & gassed 284

### **Sat, Oct 5, 1918 BOURLON, FRANCE**

BOURLON 5.10.18 Light shelling - Heavy night bombing. Training 10 O.R. taken on - 2 struck off strength

### **Sun, Oct 6 to Wed, Oct 9, 1918 BOURLON, FRANCE**

BOURLON 6.10.18 to 9.10.18 Battalion training & re-organizing.

LIEUT. J.T. LOWNSBROUGH M.C. struck off strength (17.10.18)

The following decorations awarded - LT Col. C.J.T. STEWART D.S.O. bar to D.S.O. and Military Cross to [inserted: Capt. G. MacG. MacBrayne [[Eion Macgregor Macbrayne](#)] Capt. K.C. BURNES [McG144] LIEUTS. J. CHRISTIE [475260] & J.C. FULLER [475304]

SGT. T.T. SHIELDS [1042233] Distinguished Conduct Medal all for services rendered in the AMIENS show. Message received on 8th from 1st Army Commander congratulating Canadian Corps upon its ‘determined fighting during ~~last~~ five days and stating that in ~~the~~ two days no less than 12 hostile divisions had been employed by the enemy in endeavouring to stem the Corps advance.

LIEUT. C. F. LALOR awarded Military Cross

### **Thu, Oct 10, 1918 BOURLON, FRANCE**

QUEANT 10.10.18 The Battalion moves back to area W. of QUEANT bivouacking in Hindenburg line.

### **Fri, Oct 11, 1918 WEST OF QUEANT, FRANCE**

QUEANT 11.10.18 Training reorganization. Bar to Military Cross awarded to Major M. TENBROCKE [*Ten Broeke* 51456] M.C. & Capt. A.C. WHITE M.C. [51266] Military Cross to LIEUTS A.J. KELLY & M.J. ROBB [261134] and Dist. Conduct Medal LIEUT. C.

Peacock M.C. [1116] Sgt. G.M. McKIEL 445387 and Sgt. M.D. SCHOLL 487282 (deceased) [[M.D. Schell](#)] for gallant conduct in the MONCHY battle. 18 O.R. taken on & 1 struck off strength.

**Sat, Oct 12, 1918 to Mon, Oct 14, 1918 WEST OF QUEANT, FRANCE**

QUEANT 12.10.18 to 14.10.18 Training Route marches.

LIEUT. B. FRANKLIN struck off effective strength on reporting to O.C. Labour Group Hqrs. 2 O.R. reported missing now 'killed.'

**Tue, Oct 15, 1918 WEST OF QUEANT, FRANCE**

QUEANT 15.10.18 All officers & 100 O.R. attended funeral of Major General LIPSETT late Divisional Commander

T/Capt. M. TENBROCKE (M.C.) [51456] to be Temp. Major 15.8.18

A/ „ K.C. BURNES (M.C.) [*McG 144*] to be Temp. Captain 15.8.18

LIEUT J.A. HASLAM to be Temp. Capt. 27.8.18

„ G.W. GUIOU (M.C.) [475868] „ „ 26.8.18

„ A.C. WHITE (M.C.) [51266] „ „ 7.9.18

Capt. G. [E.]MacG MacBrayne (M.C.) absorbed into the establishment (15-8-18)

**Wed, Oct 16, 1918 WEST OF QUEANT, FRANCE**

QUEANT 16.10.18 7th Brigade inspected by Corps Commander who expressed his opinion that the Battalion was the best on parade.

Capt. A.G. Pearson joins and assumes Command from this date. 31 O.R. join.

**Thu, Oct 17, 1918 WEST OF QUEANT, FRANCE**

QUEANT 17.10.18 Training.

**Fri, Oct 18, 1918 WEST OF QUEANT, FRANCE**

QUEANT 18.10.18 Training. H.R.H. The Prince of Wales visits the Battalion . The following officers rejoin U Major E.S. McDUGALL – Lieuts E.M. JACQUES – J. [G.] DONALD [43] – C.K. McRORIE [21867] – J.H. CARVOSSO (M.C.) [51116] – E.C. PLANT – J. CHRISTIE [475260].

**Sat, Oct 19, 1918 WEST OF QUEANT, FRANCE**

QUEANT 19.10.18 Heavy rain

**Sun, Oct 20, 1918 WEST OF QUEANT, FRANCE**

AMETTE 20.10.18 Battalion moves in heavy rain to AUBERCHICOURT - AMETTE by bus - arriving 5 p.m. & billeting in deserted houses in AMETTE.

**Mon, Oct 21, 1918 AMETTE, FRANCE**

WANDIGNIES 21.10.18 Battalion marches to WANDIGNIES - billets.

**Tue, Oct 22, 1918 WANDIGNIES, FRANCE**

CATAINE 22.10.18 March to CATAINE in a.m. Moving forward in p.m. through the FORÊT de VICOIGNE to Fosse du PRUSSIEN billeting in deserted houses. The Battalion now in Brigade reserve - 49th in support - 42nd & R.C.R. in front line.

**Wed, Oct 23, 1918 FOSSE DU PRUSSIEN, FRANCE**

Fosse du Prussien 23.10.18 Training. Military Cross awarded to LIEUT H.B.J. OGILVIE for gallant behaviour in Monchy battle.

LIEUTS P.C. KLAEHN [489828] – T.B. STEVENS [1298] – W.C. McFARLANE [N.C. McFarlane [410959](#)] join & 18 O.R.s 8 N.C.O.s struck off for Commission.

**Thu, Oct 24, 1918 FOSSE DU PRUSSIEN, FRANCE**

Fosse du Prussien 24.10.18 Training. LIEUT W.J. POPEY [1716] wounded (at duty) 4 O.R. previously 'missing' now 'killed'. 3 O.R. join.

The VICTORIA CROSS awarded to 275212 Sergt. [Robert SPALL](#) (killed in action 13-8-18) D.R.O. 3625 dated 25/10/18 for gallant behaviour before PARVILLERS in the AMIENS battle on Aug 12/13 (night) when his platoon was cut off during a severe enemy counter attack - he got upon the parapet and held off the enemy with a Lewis gun - inflicting heavy casualties. He then came down into the trench and directed his platoon into a place of greater safety 75 yards away from the enemy - and then picking up ~~his Lew~~ another Lewis gun he again jumped up on the parapet and directed his fire on the advancing enemy, and held them off thereby enabling his men to extricate themselves. It was while doing this that he was killed. Sergt Spall deliberately sacrificed his own life but by so doing saved his men who would otherwise have been cut off.

**Fri, Oct 25, 1918 FOSSE DU PRUSSIEN, FRANCE**

Fosse du Prussien 25.10.18 Training.

**Sat, Oct 26, 1918 FOSSE DU PRUSSIEN, FRANCE**

ARENBERG 26.10.18 Training.

**Sun, Oct 27, 1918 ARENBERG, FRANCE**

ARENBERG 27.10.18 Rain. The Battalion moves after dark to billets at ARENBERG.

**Mon, Oct 28, 1918 ARENBERG, FRANCE**

ARENBERG 28.10.18 Fine. 1 O.R. rejoins.

**Tue, Oct 29, 1918 ARENBERG, FRANCE**

ARENBERG 29.10.18 Fair. Training. 16 O.R. join.

**Wed, Oct 30, 1918 ARENBERG, FRANCE**

VICOIGNE 30.10.18 Fine & bright. Battalion moves to VICOIGNE in divisional support.

**Thu, Oct 31, 1918 VICOIGNE & RAISMES, FRANCE**

VICOIGNE 31.10.18 Cloudy with rain in afternoon. Battalion on working party. LIEUT C.W. ISMAY [489788] & 1 O.R. wounded.

[Note transcriber: During October, 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Captain G.W. Little.]

---

MESSAGES AND SIGNALS

Prefix.....N7.....	Code...10.30 A.M. Words..90...	Sent or sent out.	Office Stamp.
		Sent	1/10/18
Received from...CZG	By..C A Neiss		K

Handed in at .....Office..... p.m.                      Received...11.25 A.m..

TO                      TABE

* Sender's Number.	Day of Month.	In reply to Number.	AAA
BN741	1st		

The Brigade will reorganize at once aaa tanie and tano will be disposed in depth on line of railway cutting and tapi and tabe will withdraw to MARCOING line left and right respectively aaa jaba will remain between railway cutting and DOUAI CAMBRAI road aaa Kitchens have been ordered up units will notify Hqrs where they are to be sent aaa reconnaissance parties should be sent out to search for casualties aaa dispositions and strength return to be forwarded as soon as possible.

[Sgd] ???

FROM	HUZU
PLACE & TIME	10.24 AM

---

**Fri, Nov 1, 1918 VICOIGNE & RAISMES, FRANCE**

RAISMES 1/11/18 Training. Brigade in divisional support.

**Sat, Nov 2, 1918 VICOIGNE & RAISMES, FRANCE**

RAISMES 2.11.18 ~~Training~~. Church parades. Major McDougal [[E.S. McDougall](#)] struck off strength, despatched to C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*]

**Sun, Nov 3, 1918 VICOIGNE & RAISMES, FRANCE**

RAISMES 3.11.18 Training Ranges. 16 O.R.'s join.

**Mon, Nov 4, 1918 VICOIGNE & RAISMES, FRANCE**

RAISMES 4.11.18 Bn. moved to ANZIN. Brigade in divisional support. Strength decrease 2 O.R.'s

**Tue, Nov 5, 1918 ANZIN, FRANCE**

ANZIN 5.11.18 Training.

**Wed, Nov 6, 1918 ANZIN, FRANCE**

ANZIN 6.11.18 Battalion marched to ONNAING.

**Thu, Nov 7, 1918 ONNAING, FRANCE**

QUIEVRAIN 7.11.18 Battalion marched to QUIEVRAIN. Relieved 4<sup>th</sup> C.M.R. (8<sup>th</sup> Bde) Nos. 1 & 4 Coys. in front line No 3 in Support No 2. in Reserve.

**Fri, Nov 8, 1918 QUIEVRAIN, BELGIUM**

QUIEVRAIN 8.11.18 Shortly after midnight Nos 1 & 4 Coys entered THULIN, and established outpost line on EAST side. No 4 Coy on left & No 1 Coy on right. At 6.30 a.m. Headquarters, Nos 2 & 3 Coys moved to THULIN. No 2 Coy took up position on the right of No 1 Coy. About 0800 hours Nos 1 & 2 Coys pressed on and captured HAININ, meeting strong opposition on Eastern side. No 4 Coy, with 1 platoon of 3 Coy formed a defensive flank along MONS CONDÉ canal. Lieut. [B.] STEVENS [1298] wounded. & prisoner. Headquarters moved to HAININ. Coys occupied BOUSSU about 2300 hours.

**Sat, Nov 9, 1918 BOUSSU, BELGIUM**

HAININ 9.11.18 The 49<sup>th</sup> Bn. to look after left flank. Battalion pushed on with 4 coy on left, No 1 coy in centre, and No 2 on right. No 3 Coy in support. Battalion captured villages of HORNU ST. GHISLAIN, WASMUEL, QUAREGNON, JEMAPPES and QUESMES  
Battalion H.Q. moved to JEMAPPES. Companies held up on outskirts of MONS.

**Sun, Nov 10, 1918 WESTERN OUTSKIRTS OF MONS, BELGIUM**

JEMAPPES 10.11.18 Battalion, all but No 4 Coy, relieved by R.C.R. billets in JEMAPPES.

**Mon, Nov 11, 1918 MONS & JEMAPPES, BELGIUM**

JEMAPPES 11.11.18 0200 hours No 4 Coy entered MONS. Parade of 7<sup>th</sup> Bde in MONS, GRANDE PLACE at 1000 hours. Armistice came into effect from 1100 hours. Parade of units of 3rd Div. 1500 hours - Gen. CURRIE [*Commander Canadian Corps*]  
Casualties during operations 5. O.R.'s Killed 43 O.R.'s wounded

**Tue, Nov 12, 1918 JEMAPPES, BELGIUM**

JEMAPPES 12.11.18 Route March. Lieut C.F. LALOR, M.C. from C.C.R.C. [*Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp*]

**Wed, Nov 13, 1918 JEMAPPES, BELGIUM**

JEMAPPES 13.11.18 Battalion moved to MONS. Strength Increase 5 O.R.'s.

**Thu, Nov 14, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 14.11.18 Route march. Strength increase 15 O.R.'s. Lt. Col. A.G. PEARSON [51383] in command.

**Fri, Nov 15, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 15.11.18 Battalion supplied 150 men under Capt. J.A. HASLAM, for composite guard to to Army Commander, - Genl. HORNE

**Sat, Nov 16, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 16.11.18 Training

**Sun, Nov 17, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 17.11.18 Church parades

**Mon, Nov 18, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 18.11.18 Inspection by commanding Officer.

**Tue, Nov 19, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 19.11.18 Inspection by commanding Officer.

**Wed, Nov 20, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 20.11.18 Training.

**Thu, Nov 21, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 21.11.18 Route March under company arrangements – Awards – 4 bars to MILITARY MEDALS and 10 MILITARY MEDALS.

**Fri, Nov 22, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 22.11.18 Brigade Inspection. Lieut. Col. A. HAMILTON GAULT, D.S.O. joined from C.C.R.C. [ *Canadian Corps reinforcement Camp* ] and assumed command.

**Sat, Nov 23, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 23.11.18 Training.

**Sun, Nov. 24, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 24.11.18 Church parades.

**Mon, Nov 25, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 25.11.18 Commanding Officer's Inspection. Major G.C. MACDONALD [[G.C. McDonald](#)] rejoined.

**Tue, Nov 26, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 26.11.18 Route march.

**Wed, Nov 27, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 27.11.18 Training.

**Thu, Nov 28, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 28.11.18 Route march.

**Fri, Nov 29, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 29.11.18 Training. Officers of battalion held a dance in the HOTEL de VILLE, MONS. Capt. G.G. REYNOLDS, rejoined from Can. Corps School.

**Sat, Nov 30, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 30.11.18 Training. Refresher course for N.C.O.'s in afternoon.

[*Note transcriber: until 22 November 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Major A. G. Pearson, after that date he was succeeded by Lieutenant-Colonel A. Hamilton Gault* ]

**Sun, Dec 1 to Thu, Dec 12, 1918 MONS, BELGIUM**

MONS 1.12.18 TO 12.12.18 During this period the Battalion remained in billets in Mons occupying the time with route marches, training and drill. The Royal Guard for H.M. The King under Command of Capt. Geo. [W.] Little with Lieut R. [S.] MACPHERSON [411046] as Second in Command which went to VALENCIENNES on Nov. 29 returned to the Battalion on Dec. 4th having been relieved by a guard from the A.I.F. The following letter

was received from the Camp Commandant First ARMY: "The guard under the command of Capt. LITTLE is being relieved by the 9th A.I.F. and I wish to let you know that the duties have been most efficiently carried out. The sentries have been smart on their posts and clean. The N C O's have posted the reliefs in such a way as to again show the military spirit of your Regiment, and under CAPTAIN [G.W.] LITTLE and LIEUT [R.S.] MACPHERSON [411046] everything has gone smoothly and correctly and the A.I.F. will have their work cut out to compete. I am glad His Majesty's appreciation has been shown by CAPTAIN [G.W.] LITTLE being decorated with the M.V.O."

The Educational work commenced in NOVEMBER continued to be carried on daily with large attendances, under the direction of Capt. [G.G.] REYNOLDS.

LIEUT A.J. KELLY M.C. awarded a bar to M.C.

The MILITARY Cross was awarded to the following officers:-

CAPT. J.N. EDGAR, Capt. G.W. LITTLE, Capt. F.L. SHOULDICE, LIEUT C.

FREDERICKSON [51156] , LIEUT LEE [475916]

The Distinguished Conduct Medal awarded to:-

447167 Sgt. PRINGLE C.I. [[447187 G.I.](#)]

663272 Pte COONEY J.

475781 Sgt. BONAR A.A.

677 Cpl. MILLER W.

All the above were for gallant conduct in the Cambrai battle at the end of September 1918

On the 11<sup>th</sup> the Battalion marched from MONS to FEZ to GEMAPPES billets

#### **Thu, 12 to Sun, Dec 15, 1918 NIVELLES, BELGIUM**

GENVAL 12/15 Dec On the 12th Dec. the Battalion marched to NIVELLES and on the 15th from NIVELLES to GENVAL – billets.

On 13th Dec. CAPT. G.W. GUIOU M.C. [475868] rejoined from C.B.D.

The following other ranks were decorated for gallant conduct in the field.

BAR to MILITARY MEDAL – C.S.M. J. CRAWFORD [1765]

MILITARY MEDAL – 596 C.Q.M.S. MEACHAM A.G.,

785152 Sgt. W. DICK – 639371, Cpl. G.I. BREWSTER,

552524 Cpl. R. SYMONS – 246057 Cpl. J.G. TAPP

343954 [[343934](#)] Cpl. J. CALLAHAN – 1791 L/Cpl. F. SEALEY

2395855 [[2595855](#)] Pte. C.W. PETERSEN – 124015 Pte. H.B. ESSERY

487307 Pte. D. McG CUNNINGHAM – 105463 – Pte. W.J. Wilson

261685 [[261569](#)] Pte. S.A. CHRISTOFFERSEN – 412326, Pte. H. WOODACRE

105397 Pte. C. COLLINS – 1533 Pte C. [[G.](#)] STEWART

2004505 Pte BOLNEY [[Belney](#)] L.E. – 261685 Pte C. SCHMITT

1752 Pte. A.Y. GRIEVE

#### **Mon, Dec 16, 1918 GENVAL, BELGIUM**

GENVAL 16/12 Capt. Geo. W. LITTLE & MAJ. Geo. McDONALD struck off strength to England

#### **Tue, Dec 17 to Thu, Dec 26, 1918 GENVAL, BELGIUM**

GENVAL 17/12 TO 26/12 During this period the Battalion remained in comfortable billets in GENVAL engaged in training drill and route marches, sports & educational classes. 18 O.R. previously she?? attached taken on strength from 7.12.18

No. 618 C.S.M. (A/R.S.M.) GILLINGHAM F. appointed Regimental Sergeant Major and promoted to Warrant Rank (class 1) vice R.S.M. JORDAN W. [1199] (to Canada) 2-7-18

No 1684 Sergt (A/C.S.M.) NOVIS C. appointed Company Sergt. Major and promoted to Warrant Rank (class 2) vice 618 C.S.M. GILLINGHAM [F.] promoted.

LIEUT J.E. HODGSON died from pneumonia in England while on leave from France - 5-11-18

On 24 Dec. Greetings were ~~received from~~ despatched to H.R.H. The Princess Patricia - LADY Evelyn FARQUHAR - LADY BULLER - LT. COL. [Agar] A.A.ADAMSON - The Divisional Commander and The Brigade Commander

Xmas messages were received from Maj. Gen. McDONNELL LT Col. PALMER (49th) - R.C.R. - 42nd Battalion - The Brigade Commander and The Burgomaster of GENVAL

The following officers taken on strength LIEUT J.C. FULLER [475304] LIEUT G.R. STEVENS [McG85] - R.W. HAMBLETT [487326] - R.G. BARCLAY [487394] - & 57 O.R.

LIEUT FULLER J.C. [475304] M.C. despatched 26-12-18 to Adj. Gen. London for duties with Khaki University & LIEUT A.R. CHIPMAN 24.12.18 for return to Canada

#### **Fri, Dec 27, 1918 GENVAL, BELGIUM**

27/12 Battalion moves to BOISFORT - by road

#### **Sat, Dec 28, 1918 BOISFORT, BELGIUM**

28/12 Battalion moves from BOISFORT to ZUEH by road

#### **Sun, Dec 29, 1918 ZUEH, BELGIUM**

29/12 Battalion moves to DENDERWINDEKE by road

#### **Mon, Dec 30, 1918 DENDERWINDEKE, BELGIUM**

30/12 Battalion moves to NEDERBRAKEL by road

#### **Tue, Dec 31, 1918 NEDERBRAKEL, BELGIUM**

31/12 In billets at NEDERBRAKEL

*[Note transcriber: During December, 1918 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant Colonel A. Hamilton Gault.]*

# PRINCESS PATRICIA'S CANADIAN LIGHT INFANTRY



*(Thierens Family Archives)*

## **WAR DIARIES 1914 -1919**

Transcribed by Michael Thierens, 1914, 1915 and part of 1916 proofread and commented on by Donna Walker & Ross Toms. The complete War Diary was proofread by Stephen K. Newman, who also made valuable suggestions regarding lay-out and provided much additional information on individual soldiers and diligently researched and pin pointed the locations of the Regiment.

[CEFStudies@EeMike.nl](mailto:CEFStudies@EeMike.nl)

© Michael Thierens 2008.

# 1919

**Wed, Jan 1, 1919 NEDERBRAKEL, BELGIUM**

Renaix 1.1.19 Battalion moves from NEDERBRAKEL to RENAIX

**Thu, Jan 2, 191 RENAIX, , BELGIUM**

CELLES 2.1.1919 Battalion moves to CELLES

**Fri, Jan 3, 1919 ST LEGER, BELGIUM**

ST LEGER 3.1.19 Battalion moves to ST LEGER - billets

**Sat, Jan 4, 1919 ST LEGER, BELGIUM**

ST LEGER 4.1.19 Rain. New Year's greetings were received from H.R.H. Princess Patricia and the Corps Commander and a telegram was despatched to H.R.H. The Princess conveying the greet-congratulations of the Battalion on her betrothal, 2 O.R. join and 3 O.R. struck off strength.

**Sun, Jan 5, 1919 ST LEGER, BELGIUM**

ST LEGER 5.1.19 Rain. Parades. LIEUT B.K. SNIDER [1624] struck off strength 3/1/19

**Mon, Jan 6, 1919 ST LEGER, BELGIUM**

ST LEGER 6.1.19 Rain. Company Parades. 3 O.R. struck off strength

**Tue, Jan 7, 1919 ST LEGER, BELGIUM**

ST LEGER 7.1.19 Rain. Capt. J.N. EDGAR M.C. [507] awarded Bar to Military Cross and 792 C.S.M. SPURGEON C. awarded D.C.M. by NEW YEAR'S Honours Gazette

**Wed, Jan 8 to Fri, Jan 17, 1919 ST LEGER, BELGIUM**

ST LEGER 8.1.19 to 17.1.19 During this period the Battalion remained in Billets at St LEGER carrying out daily parades & route marches. On JAN. 9 a message was received from H.R.H. Princess PATRICIA as follows "Greatly touched at your kind congratulations. Please convey my warmest thanks to all. 6 O.R. struck off and 3 O.R. taken on strength during this time.

**Sat, Jan 18 to Mon, Jan 27, 1919 ST LEGER, BELGIUM**

ST LEGER 18.1.19 TO 27.1.19 Battalion still in billets. Sergt. Instructor MAYCOCK attached for the purpose of giving special instruction in [inserted: P.T.] ~~drill to Officers and other R-N.C.O.s~~ and to Companies and Sergeant Major PRATLEY to hold special classes in drill for Officers and N.C.O.s The Belgian CROIX DE GUERRE awarded to 1119 Cpl. DESFORGES [DES FORGES A.] and to 487451 Cpl. BRASNETT T.R.

*Note in right hand margin* Sergt Maycock attached as P.T. Instructor  
CSM Pratley       ,,       ,, Drill       ,,

18 O.R. struck off & 4 taken on strength.

**Tue, Jan 28, 1919 ST LEGER, BELGIUM**

ST LEGER 28.1.19 MERITORIOUS Service Medal awarded to  
596 C.Q.M.S. MEACHAM A.G.

475851 Pte. FRANCIS A.M.

1594 Pte. JOY C. in NEW YEAR'S HONOURS Gazette.

A Battalion Parade was held to-day at which the Regimental Colour which was presented by H.R.H. Princess PATRICIA on the formation of the Battalion in 1914 was consecrated. Major The Rev. T. McCarthy regimental chaplain performed the ceremony which attended by the General Officers Commanding the Division (3rd) [*Major-General F.O. Loomis*] and Brigade (7th) [*Brigadier-General J.A. Clark*]

LIEUT A.N.B. MORTIMER M.C. [51259] carried the Colour. 11 O.R. struck off strength

### **Wed, Jan 29 to Fri, Jan 31, 1919 ST LEGER, BELGIUM**

ST LEGER 29.1.19 to 31.1.19 Snow which fell on the 26th continued on the ground until the end of the month. The usual parades were carried out according to syllabus. 21 O.R. struck off strength to England on 29th and during this period stores were turned in and preparations made for the Battalion to move to LE HAVRE preparatory to demobilization.

*[Note transcriber: during January 1919 the Commanding Officer of the P.P.C.L.I. was Lieutenant-Colonel A. Hamilton Gault.]*

### EPILOGUE

The Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry's War Diary which began on 4 November 1914 in Winchester, England ended on 31 January 1919 in St Leger, Belgium. On 1<sup>st</sup> of February, 1919, the Regiment marched to Baiseux and entrained for Le Havre, France. Late on February 7<sup>th</sup>, they boarded the troopship Dieppe and sailed through the night to Weymouth, England. From there, they entrained to Bramshott Camp where they began preparations for demobilization. On the 21<sup>st</sup> of February 1919, there was a final inspection of the Regiment by the Colonel-in-Chief, H.R.H. Princess-Patricia of Connaught. After this final inspection, she presented and placed upon her Regiment's Colour, the Wreath of Honour, commemorating the officers and men who had served so faithfully during the Great War.

*“To the P.P.C.L.I. from the Colonel-in-Chief,  
PATRICIA, in recognition of their heroic  
Services in the Great War, 1914-1918.”*



*Source: Welcome to 2 PPCLI*

The Great War was over and so was another aspect of the Regiment's history. On 27 February, the Regimental officers and selected N.C.O.'s attended the wedding of the Colonel-in-Chief to Commander A. Ramsay, D.S.O., Royal Navy in Westminster Abbey, London. Princess Patricia relinquished her title and became Lady Ramsey. During the wedding the PPCLI provided a Guard of Honour for His Majesty, King George V.

On the 8<sup>th</sup> of March 1919, the Regiment entrained from Bramshott to Liverpool where they boarded the S.S. Carmania. They landed in Halifax on 17 March. Declining invitations to march through New York City and Montreal, the Patricia's boarded a train for Ottawa. They arrived on the morning of 19 March 1919 and marched into Confederation Square where the City of Ottawa and the Governor General of Canada welcomed them home. They were led by a detachment of their own Veteran's Association. This is the same Square where the National War Memorial was constructed in 1936 and is now under the steely gaze of a statue of the Regiment's Founder, A. Hamilton Gault.



From Confederation Square, the Regiment marched to Lansdowne Park, the birth place of the Regiment on 11 August 1914. Of the Originals, who had left the same Park, there were reportedly 38 still serving with the Regiment. Of the 1,100 officers and men who were deemed "The Originals", 837 were casualties. Of the 5086 who served, 4,076 were casualties. Sixty-three officers and 1,237 men were killed, died of wounds/ disease, or were missing in action. More than half, six hundred and fifty-three had no known grave following the Great War.

The Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry were demobilized 20 March 1919, but unlike the majority of units of the Canadian Expeditionary Force, it did not leave the Order of Battle. It was one of three units selected to form the Canadian Permanent Force Infantry. The other two units were the Royal Canadian Regiment and the French-Canadian 22<sup>nd</sup> Regiment (22eR). A. Hamilton Gault retained command until 20 January 1920 when he became the Honorary Lieutenant-Colonel of the Regiment. From then, until the present day, the Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry have done their duty for Canada – and done it well, always leading. Nothing else would have been acceptable to Hamilton Gault or Francis Farquhar.

Stephen K. Newman (former P.P.C.L.I. Regimental Adjutant)